



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

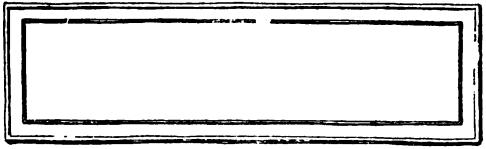
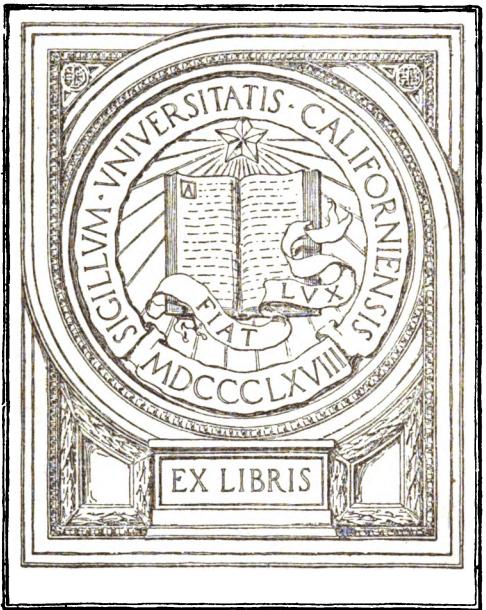
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





Rev J W Horsley



A

# LIBRARY OF FATHERS

OF THE

## HOLY CATHOLIC CHURCH,

ANTERIOR TO THE DIVISION OF THE EAST AND WEST.

TRANSLATED BY MEMBERS OF THE ENGLISH CHURCH.



YET SHALL NOT THY TEACHERS BE REMOVED INTO A CORNER ANY MORE, BUT  
THINE EYES SHALL SEE THY TEACHERS. *Isaiah xxx. 20.*

---

OXFORD,  
JOHN HENRY PARKER;  
J. G. F. AND J. RIVINGTON, LONDON.  
MDCCXLII.



UNIV. OF  
CALIFORNIA  
THE

HOMILIES

OF

S. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM,

ARCHBISHOP OF CONSTANTINOPLE,

ON THE

FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

CORINTHIANS,

TRANSLATED,

WITH NOTES AND INDICES.

---

PART II. HOM. XXV.—XLIV.

---

OXFORD,  
JOHN HENRY PARKER;  
J. G. F. AND J. RIVINGTON, LONDON.  
MDCCXXXIX.

30 MMU  
AMERICAN

BR60  
L5  
V.5

UNIV. OF BR 60  
CALIFORNIA L 5  
V. 5

## H O M I L Y XXV.

1 COR. x. 25.

*Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.*

HAVING said that *they could not drink the cup of the Lord, (1.) and the cup of devils*, and having once for all led them away from those tables, by Jewish examples, by human reasonings, by the tremendous Mysteries, by the rites solemnized among the idols\*; and having filled them with great fear; that he might not by this fear drive them again to another extreme, and they be forced, exercising a greater scrupulosity than was necessary, to feel alarm, lest possibly even without their knowledge there might come in some such thing, either from the market, or from some other quarter; to release them from this strait, he saith, *Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question.* “For,” saith he, “if thou eat in ignorance, and not knowingly, thou art not subject to the punishment: it being thenceforth a matter, not of greediness, but of ignorance.”

Nor doth he free the man only from this anxiety, but also from another, establishing them in thorough security and liberty. For he doth not even suffer them to *question*; i. e. to search and enquire, whether it be an idol-sacrifice, or no such thing: but simply to eat every thing which comes from the market, not even acquainting one’s self with so much as this, what it is that is set before us. So that even he that eateth, if in ignorance, may be rid of anxiety. For such is the nature of those things which are not in their essence evil,

\* Savile conj. *ἱδαῖσις*, “in the idol Temples;” but *ἱδαῖσις* is the actual reading.

THE MIND  
A DICTIONARY

**HOMIL.** but through the man's intention make him unclean. **Where-**  
**XXV.** fore he saith, *asking no question.*

Ver. 26. *For to the Lord belongeth the earth, and the fulness thereof.* Not to the devils. Now if the earth, and the fruits, and the beasts be all His, nothing is unclean: but it becomes unclean otherwise, from our intention and our disobedience. Wherefore he not only gave permission, but also,

Ver. 27. *If any of them that believe not bid you,* saith he, *to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.*

See again his moderation. For he did not command, and make a law, that they should withdraw themselves, yet neither did he forbid it. And again, should they depart, he frees them from all suspicion. Now what may be the account of this? That so great curioseness might not seem to arise from any fear and cowardice. For he who makes scrupulous enquiry, doth so as being in dread: but he who, on hearing the fact, abstains, abstains as out of contempt, and hatred, and aversion. Wherefore Paul, purposing to establish both points, saith, *Whatsoever is set before you, eat.*

Ver. 28. *But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols; eat not, for his sake that shewed it.*

Thus it is not at all for any power that they have, but as accursed, that he bids abstain from them. Neither then, as though they could injure you, fly from them, (for they have no strength;) nor yet, because they have no strength, indifferently partake: for it is the table of beings hostile and degraded. Wherefore he said, *eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. For the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof.*

Seest thou how both when he bids them eat, and when they must abstain, he brings forward the same testimony? "For I do not forbid," saith he, "for this cause, as though they belonged to others: (*for the earth is the Lord's:*) but for the reason I mentioned, for conscience sake; i. e. that it may not be injured." Ought one therefore to inquire scrupulously? "Nay," saith he: "for I said not thy conscience, but his. For I have already said, *for his sake that shewed it.*" And again, v. 29. *Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the others.*

[2.] But perhaps some one may say, “The brethren indeed,<sup>1 Cor. 10. 29.</sup> as is natural, thou sparest, and dost not suffer us to taste for their sakes, lest their conscience being weak, might be drawn in<sup>b</sup> to eat the idol sacrifices. But if it be some heathen, what is this man to thee? Was it not thine own word, *What have I to do to judge them also that are without*<sup>1</sup>? Wherefore then dost thou on the contrary care for them?” “Not for him is my care,” he replies, “but in this case also for thee.” To which effect also he adds,

*For why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience?* meaning by *liberty*, that which is left without caution or prohibition. For this is liberty, freed from Jewish bondage. And what he means is this: “God hath made me free, and above all reach of injury, but the Gentile knoweth not how to judge of this high morality of mine, nor to see into the liberality of my Master, but will condemn and say to himself, ‘Christianity is a fable; they abstain from the idols, they shun dæmons, and yet cleave to the things offered to them: great is their gluttony.’” “And what then?” it may be said. “What harm is it to us, should he judge us unfairly?” But how much better to give him no room to judge at all! For if thou abstain, he will not even say this. “How,” say you, “will he not say it? For when he seeth me not making these enquiries, neither in the shambles, nor in the banquet; what should hinder him from using this language, and condemning me, as one who partakes without discrimination?” It is not so at all. For thou partakest, not as of idol-sacrifices, but as of things clean. And if thou makest no nice enquiry, it is that thou mayest signify, that thou fearest not the things set before thee: this being the reason why, whether thou enterest a house of Gentiles, or goest into the market, I suffer thee not to ask questions; viz. lest thou become a startler at sounds<sup>2</sup>, <sup>ψοφο-</sup> and entangled<sup>3</sup>, <sup>διῆστρ.</sup> and shouldest occasion thyself needless trouble.<sup>3 λαθο-</sup>  
<sup>πλάνης.</sup>

Ver. 30. *If I by grace be a partaker, why am I yet evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?* “Of what art thou *by grace a partaker?* tell me.” Of the gifts of God.

<sup>b</sup> οἰκοδομηθῆναι. qu. οἰκοδομηθῆναι, “might boldened.” cf. e. viii. 10. be edified,” or “instructed,” or “em-

**HOMIL.** For His grace is so great, as to render my soul unstained,  
xxv. and above all pollution. For as the sun sending down his beams upon many spots of pollution, withdraws them again pure; so likewise we, and much more than so, having our conversation in the midst of the world, remain pure, if we will, by how much the power we have is even greater than his.

(2.) "Why then abstain?" say you. Not as though I should become unclean, far from it; but for my brother's sake, and that I may not become a partaker with devils, and that I may not be judged by the unbeliever. For in this case it is no longer now the nature of the thing, but the disobedience, and the friendship with devils, which maketh me unclean, and the purpose of heart worketh the pollution.

But what is, *why am I yet evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?* "I, for my part," saith he, "give thanks to God, that He hath thus set me on high, and above the low estate of the Jews, so that from no quarter am I injured. But the Gentiles, not knowing my high rule of life, will suspect the contrary, and will say, 'Here are Christians indulging a taste for our customs; they are a kind of hypocrites, abusing the dæmons, and loathing them, yet running to their tables; than which what can be more senseless? We conclude, that not for truth's sake, but through ambition and love of power they have betaken themselves to this doctrine.' What folly then would it be, that in respect of those things whereby I have been so benefited, as even to give solemn thanks, in respect of these I should become the cause of evil-speaking?" "But these things, even as it is," say you, "will the Gentile allege, when he seeth me not making enquiry." In no wise. For all things are not full of idol-sacrifices, so that he should suspect this: nor dost thou thyself taste of them as idol-sacrifices. Be not then scrupulous overmuch, nor again, on the other hand, when any remark on its being an idol-sacrifice, do thou partake. For Christ gave thee grace, and set thee on high, and above all injury from that quarter, not that thou mightest be evil spoken of, nor that the circumstance, which hath been such a gain to thee as to be matter of special thanksgiving, should be a mean of thy so injuring others, that they should even blaspheme. "Nay, why," saith he, "do I not say to the Gentile, 'I eat, I am no wise injured, and I do not this as

one in friendship with the daemons?" Because thou canst not <sup>1 COR.</sup> persuade him, even though thou shouldest say it ten thousand <sup>10. 32.</sup> times: weak as he is, and hostile. For if thy brother hath not yet been persuaded by thee, much less the enemy and the Gentile. If he is possessed by his consciousness of the idol-sacrifice, much more the unbeliever. And besides, what occasion have we for so great trouble?

"What then? whereas we have known Christ, and give thanks, while they blaspheme, shall we therefore abandon this custom also?" Far from it. For the thing is not the same. For in the one case, great is our gain from bearing the reproach; but in the other, there will be no advantage. Wherefore also he said before, *for neither if we eat, are we the better; nor if we eat not, are we the worse*<sup>1</sup>. And besides<sup>1 c. 8. 8.</sup> this too, he shewed that the thing was to be avoided, so that even on another ground ought they to be abstained from, not on this account only, but also for the other reasons which he hath assigned.

[3.] Ver. 31. *Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.*

Perceivest thou how from the subject before him, he carried out the exhortation to what was general, giving us one, the most excellent of all rules, that God in all things should be glorified?

Ver. 32. *Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God:* i. e. give no handle to any one: since in the case supposed, both thy brother is offended, and the Jew will the more hate and condemn thee, and the Gentile in like manner deride thee even as a gluttonous man and a hypocrite.

Not only, however, should the brethren receive no hurt from us, but to the utmost of our power, not even those that are without. For if we are *light*, and *leaven*, and *luminaries*, and *salt*, we ought to enlighten, not to darken; to bind, not to loosen; to draw to ourselves the unbelievers, not to drive them away. Why then puttest thou to flight those whom thou oughtest to draw to thee? Since even some Gentiles are hurt, when they see us shaping our course back to such things; for they know not our mind, nor that our soul hath

**HOMIL.** come to be above all pollution of sense. And the Jews too,  
XXV. and the weaker brethren, will have the same feelings.

Seest thou how many reasons he hath assigned, for which we ought to abstain from the idol-sacrifices? Because of their unprofitableness, because of their needlessness, because of the injury to our brother, because of the evil-speaking of the Jew, because of the reviling of the Gentile, because we ought not to be partakers with devils, because the thing is a kind of idolatry.

Further, because he had said, *give none offence*, and he made them responsible for the injury done, both to the Gentiles and to the Jews; and the saying was grievous; see how he renders it acceptable and light, putting himself forward, and saying,

Ver. 33. *Even as I also please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.*

Chap. 11. ver. 1. *Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.*

This is a rule of the most perfect Christianity, this is a landmark exactly laid down, this the point which stands highest of all; viz. the seeking those things which are for the common profit: which also Paul himself declared, by adding, *even as I also am of Christ.* For nothing can so make a man a follower of Christ, as caring for his neighbours. Nay, though thou shouldest fast, though thou shouldest lie upon the ground, and even strangle thyself, but take no thought for thy neighbour; thou hast wrought nothing great; yet far from this Image is thy station, while thou art so doing.

However, in the case before us, even the very thing itself is naturally useful, viz. the abstaining from idol-sacrifices. But "I," saith he, "have done many things among those which were unprofitable also: e. g. when I used circumcision, when I offered sacrifice; for these, were any one to examine them in themselves, rather destroy those that follow after them, and cause them to fall from salvation: nevertheless I submitted even to these, on account of the advantage therefrom: but here is no such thing. For in that case, except there accrue a certain benefit, and except they be done for others'

sake, then the thing becomes injurious: but in this, though <sup>1 Cor.</sup> there be none offended, even so ought one to abstain from the <sup>11. 1.</sup> things forbidden.

But not only to things hurtful have I submitted, but also to things toilsome. For “*I robbed other Churches*, saith he, *taking wages of them*<sup>1</sup>, and when it was lawful to eat, and <sup>12 Cor.</sup> not to work, I sought not this, but chose to perish of hunger, <sup>11. 8.</sup> rather than offend another.” This is why he says, *I please all men in all things.* “Though it be against the law, though it be laborious and hazardous, which is to be done, I endure all for the profit of others. I may say then, that being above all in perfection, I have become<sup>2</sup> beneath all in<sup>3</sup> <sup>\* Sav.</sup> <sup>reads</sup> <sup>γίγησθαι.</sup> <sup>“ he be-</sup> <sup>came.”</sup> condescension.”

[4.] For no virtuous action can be very exalted, when it doth not distribute its benefit to others also: as is shewn by him who brought the one talent safe, and was cut in sunder, because he had not made more of it. And thou then, brother, though thou shouldest remain without food, though thou shouldest sleep upon the ground, though thou shouldest eat ashes, and be ever wailing, and do good to no other; thou wilt do no great work. For so also those great and noble persons who were in the beginning made this their chiefest care: examine accurately their life, and thou wilt see clearly, that none of them ever looked to his own things, but each one to the things of his neighbour, whence also they shone the brighter. For so Moses (to mention him first) wrought many and great wonders and signs; but nothing made him so great, as that blessed voice which he uttered unto God, saying, *If Thou wilt forgive their sin, forgive; but if not, blot me also out*<sup>3</sup>. Such too was David: wherefore also he said,<sup>3 Exod.</sup> *I the shepherd have sinned, and I have done wickedly, but these, the flock, what have they done? Let Thine hand be upon me, and upon my father's house*<sup>4</sup>. So likewise Abraham<sup>4 2 Sam.</sup> sought not his own profit, but the profit of many. Wherefore he both exposed himself to dangers, and besought God for those who in no wise belonged to him.

Well: these indeed so became glorious. But as for those who sought their own, consider what harm too they received. The nephew, for instance, of the last mentioned, because he listened to the saying, *If thou wilt go to the right, I will*

**HOMIL.** *go to the left*<sup>1</sup>; and accepting the choice, sought his own **XXV.** profit, did not even find his own: but this country was  
<sup>1 Gen.</sup> **13. 9.** burned up, while that remained untouched. Jonas again,

not seeking the profit of many, but his own, was in danger even of perishing: and while the city stood fast, he himself was tossed about and overwhelmed in the sea. But when he sought the profit of many, then he also found his own. So likewise Jacob among the flocks, not seeking his own gain, had that exceeding riches for his portion. And Joseph also, seeking the profit of his brethren, found his own. At least,  
<sup>2 Gen.</sup> **37. 14.**

being sent by his father<sup>2</sup>, he said not, “What is this? Hast thou not heard that for a vision and certain dreams they even attempted to tear me in pieces, and I was held guilty of my dreams, and suffer punishment for being beloved of thee? What then will they not do when they get me in the midst of them?” He said none of these things, he thought not of them, but prefers the care of his brethren above all. Therefore he enjoyed also all the good things which followed, which both made him very brilliant, and declared him glorious. Thus also Moses,—for nothing hinders that we should again a second time make mention of him, and behold how he overlooked his own things, and sought the things of others:—I say this Moses, being conversant in a king’s court,

<sup>3 Heb.</sup> **11. 26.** because he *counted the reproach<sup>3</sup> greater riches than the treasures in Egypt*; and having cast them even all out of <sup>ταῦ Χρι.</sup> ~~ταῦ ομ.~~ his hands, became a partaker of the afflictions of the Hebrews;—so far from being himself enslaved, he liberated them also from bondage.

Well: these surely are great things, and worthy of an  
(4.) angelical life. But the conduct of Paul far exceeds this. For all the rest, leaving their own blessings, chose to be partakers in the afflictions of others: but Paul did a thing much greater. For it was not that he consented to be a partaker in others’ misfortunes, but he chose himself to be at all extremities, that other men might enjoy blessing. Now it is not the same for one who lives in luxury, to cast away his luxury and suffer adversity, as for one himself alone suffering adversity, to cause others to be in security and honour. For in the former case, though it be a great thing to exchange prosperity for affliction for your neighbour’s

sake, nevertheless it brings some consolation to have partakers <sup>1 Cor.</sup> 11. 1. in the misfortune. But consenting to be himself alone in the distress, that others may enjoy their good things,—this belongs to a much more energetic soul, and to Paul's own spirit.

And not by this only, but by another and greater excellency, doth he surpass all those before mentioned. That is, Abraham and all the rest exposed themselves to dangers in the present life, and all these were but asking for this kind of death, once for all: but Paul prayed<sup>1</sup> that he might fall from the glory of <sup>1 Rom.</sup> 9. 3. the world to come for the sake of others' salvation.

I may mention also a third point of superiority. And what is this? That some of those, though they interceded for persons who conspired against them, nevertheless it was for those with whose guidance they had been entrusted: and the same thing happened, as if one should stand up for a wild and lawless son, but still a son: whereas Paul wished to be accursed in the stead of those with whose guardianship he was not entrusted. For to the Gentiles was he sent. Dost thou perceive the greatness of his soul, and the loftiness of his spirit, transcending the very heaven? This man do thou emulate: but if thou canst not, at least follow those who shone in the old covenant. For thus only shalt thou find thine own profit, if thou seekest that of thy neighbour. Wherefore, when thou feelest backward to care for thy brother, considering that no otherwise canst thou be saved, at least for thine own sake stand thou up for him and his interests.

[5.] And although what hath been said is sufficient to convince thee, that no otherwise is it possible to secure our own benefit: yet if thou wouldest also assure thyself of it by the examples of common life, conceive a fire happening anywhere to be kindled in a house, and then some of the neighbours, with a view to their own interest, refusing to expose themselves to the risk, but shutting themselves up and remaining at home, in fear lest some one come and find his way in, and purloin some part of the household goods; how great punishment will they endure? Since the fire will come on, and burn down likewise all that is theirs; and because they looked not to the profit of their neighbour, they

**HOMIL.** lose even their own besides. For so God, willing to bind us  
XXV. all to each other, hath imposed upon things such a necessity, that in the profit of one neighbour that of the other is bound up; and the whole world is thus constituted. And therefore in a vessel too, if a storm had come on, and the steersman, leaving the profit of the many, should seek his own only, he will quickly sink both himself and them. And of each several art too we may say, that should it look to its own profit only, life could never stand, nor even the art itself which so seeketh its own. Therefore the husbandman sows not so much corn only, as is sufficient for himself; since he would long ago have famished both himself and others; but seeks the profit of the many: and the soldier takes the field against dangers, not that he may save himself, but that he may also place his cities in security: and the merchant brings not home so much as may be sufficient for himself alone, but for many others also.

Now if any say, “each man doeth this, not looking to my interest, but his own, for he engages in all these things to obtain for himself money, and glory, and security, so that in seeking my profit, he seeks his own:” this also do I say, and long since wished to hear from you, and for this have I framed all my discourse; viz. to signify, that thy neighbour then seeks his own profit, when he looks to thine. For since men would no otherwise make up their mind to seek the things of their neighbour, except they were reduced to this necessity; therefore God hath thus joined things together, and suffers them not to arrive at their own profit, except they first travel through the profit of others.

Well then, this is natural to man, thus to follow after his neighbour's advantage: but one ought to be persuaded not from this reason, but from what pleases God. For it is not possible to be saved, wanting this; but though thou shouldest practise the highest philosophy, and neglect others who are perishing, thou wilt gain no confidence towards God. Whence is this evident? From what the blessed Paul declared. *For if I sell my goods to feed the poor, and give my body to be*

<sup>1</sup> *1 Cor. burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing*<sup>1</sup>, saith 13. 3. he. Seest thou how much Paul requireth of us? And yet he that sold his goods to feed the poor, sought not his own good,

but that of his neighbour. But this alone is not enough, he <sup>1 Cor.</sup> saith. For he would have it done with sincerity and much <sup>11. 1.</sup> sympathy. For therefore also God made it a law, that he might bring us into the bond of love. When therefore He demands so large a measure, and we do not render even that which is less, of what indulgence shall we be worthy?

“ And how,” saith one, “ did God say to Lot by the Angels, *Escape for thy life*<sup>1</sup>? ” Say, when, and why. When the <sup>1 Gen.</sup> punishment was bearing down on them, not when there <sup>19. 17.</sup> was an opportunity of correction, but when they were condemned and incurably diseased, and old and young had rushed into the same passions, and henceforth they must needs be burned up, and in that day when the thunderbolts were about to descend. And besides, this was not spoken of vice and virtue, but of the chastisement inflicted by God. For what was he to do, tell me? Sit still and await the punishment, and without at all profiting them, be burned up? Nay, this were the extremest folly.

For I do not affirm this, that one ought to bring chastisement on one’s self without discrimination, and at random, apart from the will of God. But when a man tarries long in sin, then I bid thee push thyself forward, and correct him: if thou wilt, for thy neighbour’s sake; but if not, at least for thine own profit. It is true, the first is the better course: but if thou reachest not yet unto that height, do it even for this. And let no man seek his own, that he may find his own; and bearing in mind, that neither parting with all, nor martyrdom, nor any other thing, will have power to stand up for us, unless we have the height of love; let us preserve this beyond all the rest, that through it we may also obtain all other, both present and promised blessings; at which may we all arrive, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ; with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now and for ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXVI.

---

### 1 COR. xi. 2.

*Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances<sup>1</sup>, as I delivered them to you.*

<sup>1 παρα-  
δόσις,</sup>  
traditions.  
(1.) HAVING completed the discourse concerning the idol-sacrifices as became him, and having rendered it most perfect in all respects, he proceeds to another thing, which also itself was a crime, but not so great a one. For that which I said before, this do I also now say, that he doth not set down all the heavy accusations continuously, but after disposing them in due order, he inserts among them the lighter matters, mitigating what the readers would else feel offensive in his discourse, on account of his continually reprobating.

Wherefore also he sets the most vehement of all last, that relating to the resurrection. But for the present he goes to another, a lighter thing, saying, *Now I praise you, that ye remember me in all things.* Thus, when the offence is admitted, he both accuses vehemently, and threatens: but when it is questioned, he first proves it, and then rebukes. And what was admitted, he aggravates: but what was likely to be disputed, he shews to be admitted. Their fornication, for instance, was a thing admitted. Wherefore there was no need to shew that there was an offence; but in that case he proved the magnitude of the transgression, and conducted his discourse by way of comparison. Again, their going to law before aliens was an offence, but not so great a one. Wherefore he threw it in likewise by the way, and proved it. The matter of the idol-sacrifices again was questioned. It was, however, a most serious evil. Wherefore he both shews it to be an offence, and aggravates it by his discourse. But when

he doeth this, he not only withdraws them from the several <sup>1 Cor.</sup> crimes, but invites them also to their contraries. Thus he said <sup>11. 2.</sup> not only, that one must not commit fornication, but likewise that one ought to exhibit great holiness. Wherefore he added, *Therefore<sup>1</sup> glorify God in your body, and in your spirit<sup>2</sup>.* And having said again, that one ought not to be <sup>sup. 3.</sup> wise with the wisdom that is without, he is not content with <sup>4</sup> c. 6. 20. this, but bids me also to *become a fool<sup>3</sup>*. And where he advises <sup>c. 3.18.</sup> them not to go to law before them that are without, and to avoid doing wrong ; he goeth further, and takes away even the very going to law, and counsels them not only to do no wrong, but even to suffer wrong<sup>4</sup>.

And discoursing concerning the idol-sacrifices, he said not, that one ought to abstain from things forbidden only, but also from things permitted, when offence is given : and not only not to hurt the brethren, but not even Greeks, nor Jews. Thus, *give none offence*, saith he, *neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God<sup>5</sup>.*

[2.] Having finished therefore all the discourse concerning <sup>5 c. 10.</sup> all these things, after this he next proceeds also to another <sup>32.</sup> accusation. And what was this ? Their women used both to pray and prophesy unveiled, and with their head bare, (for then women also used to prophesy;) but the men went so far as to wear long hair, as having spent their time in philosophy<sup>6</sup>, and covered their heads when praying and prophesying, each of which was a Grecian custom. Since then he had already admonished them concerning these things when present, and some perhaps listened to him, and others disobeyed ; therefore in his letter also again, he foments the place, like a wise physician, by his mode of addressing them, and so corrects the offence. For that he had heretofore admonished them in person, is evident from what he begins with. Why else, having said nothing of this matter anywhere in the Epistle before, but passing on from other accusations, doth he straightway say, *Now I praise you, in that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you ?*

\* To let the hair and beard grow phy, as it is told of Julian the Apostate, was a token of devotion to any study ; that it was part of his affectation to let as Poetry, Hor. A. P. 297 ; Philoso- his hair and beard grow.

**HOMIL.** Thou seest that some obeyed, whom he praises ; and others  
**XXVI.** disobeyed, whom he corrects by what comes afterwards,  
 saying, *Now if any man seem to be contentious, we have no*  
<sup>1 v. 16.</sup> *such custom*<sup>1</sup>. For if after some had done well, but others  
 disobeyed, he had included all in his accusation, he  
 would both have made the one sort bolder, and have caused  
 the others to become more remiss ; whereas now by praising  
 and commanding the one, and rebuking the other, he both  
 freshens up the one more effectually, and causes the other to  
 shrink before him : the accusation, even by itself, being such  
 a thing as might well wound them ; but now that it takes  
 place by contrast with others, who have done well, and are  
 praised, it comes with a sharper sting. However, for the present  
 he begins not with accusation, but with encomiums, and  
 great encomiums, saying, *Now I praise you that ye remember*  
*me in all things.* For such is the character of Paul ; though  
 it be but for small matters, he weaves a web of high praise ;  
 nor is it for flattery that he doth so : far from it ; how could  
 he so act, to whom neither money was desirable, nor glory, nor  
 any other such thing ? but for their salvation he orders all his  
 proceedings. And this is why he amplifies his praise of them,  
 saying, *Now I praise you that ye remember me in all things.*

All what things ? For hitherto his discourse was only  
 concerning their not wearing long hair, and not covering their  
 heads ; but, as I said, he is very bountiful in his praises of  
 them, rendering them more forward. Wherefore he saith,

*That ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances,*  
*as I delivered them to you.* It appears then, that he used at  
 that time to deliver many things also not in writing, which he  
 shews too in many other places. But at that time he only  
 delivered them, whereas now he adds an explanation of their  
 reason : thus both rendering the one sort, the obedient, more  
 stedfast, and pulling down the others' pride, who oppose them-  
 selves. Further, he doth not say, " ye have obeyed, whilst  
 others disobeyed," but in a way of which they would not be  
 jealous, intimates it by his mode of teaching in what follows,  
 where he saith,

*Ver. 3. But I would have you know that the head of every*  
*man is Christ ; and the head of the woman is the man ; and*  
*the head of Christ is God.*

This is his account of the reason of the thing, and he states 1 Cor. 11. 3.  
it to make the weaker more attentive. He indeed that is faithful, as he ought, and stedfast, doth not even require any reason or cause of those things which are commanded him, but is content with the ordinance<sup>1</sup> alone. But he that is weaker, when he also learns the cause, then both retains what is said with more care, and obeys with much readiness.

Wherefore neither did he state the cause, until he saw the commandment transgressed. What then is the cause? *The head of every man is Christ.* Is He then Head of the Gentile also? In no wise. For if we are the Body of Christ, and members in particular<sup>2</sup>, and in c. 12. 27. this way He is our head, He cannot be the head of them who are not in the Body, who rank not among the members. So that when he says, *of every man*, one must understand it of the believer. Perceivest thou how every where he appeals to the hearer's shame by arguing from on high? Thus both when he was discoursing on love, and when on humility, and when on alms-giving, it was from thence that he drew his examples.

[3.] *But the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.* Here the heretics dart in upon us, with a certain declaration of inferiority, which out of these words they contrive against the Son. But they stumble against themselves. For if the man be the head of the woman, and the head be of the same substance with the body, and the head of Christ is God, the Son is of the same substance with the Father. "Nay," say they, "it is not His being of another substance, which we intend to shew from hence, but that He is under subjection." What then are we to say to this? In the first place, when any thing lowly is said, conjoined as He is with the Flesh, there is no disparagement of the God-head in what is said, the Economy admitting the expression. However, tell me how thou intendest to prove this from the passage? "Why, as the man governs the wife," saith he, "so also the Father, Christ." Therefore also as Christ governs the man, so likewise the Father, the Son. *For the head of every man, we read, is Christ.* And who could ever admit this? For if the superiority of the Son compared

352 “*The Head of Christ, is God,*” no Disparagement to the Son.

HOMIL. with us, be the measure of the Father’s, compared with the  
XXVI. Son, consider to what meanness thou wilt bring Him.

<sup>1</sup> ~~litera-~~ So that we must not try<sup>1</sup> all things by like measure in  
~~eris.~~ respect of ourselves and of God, though the language used  
concerning them be similar; but we must assign to God  
a certain appropriate excellency, and so great as belongs to  
God. For should they not grant this, many absurdities will  
follow. As thus; *the head of Christ is God*: and *Christ*  
*is the head of the man, and he of the woman.* Therefore if we  
choose to take the term, *head*, in the like sense in all the clauses,  
the Son will be as far removed from the Father, as we are  
from Him. Nay, and the woman will be as far removed from  
us, as we are from the Word of God. And what the Son is to  
the Father, this both we are to the Son, and the woman  
again to the man. And who will endure this?

<sup>2</sup> ~~et al.~~ But dost thou understand the term *head* differently, in the  
~~ratio.~~ case of the man and the woman, from what thou dost in the  
case of Christ? Therefore in the case of the Father and the  
Son, must we understand it differently also. “How under-  
stand it differently?” saith the objector. According to  
the occasion<sup>2</sup>. For had Paul meant to speak of rule and  
subjection, as thou sayest, he would not have brought forward  
the instance of a wife, but rather of a slave and a master.  
For what if the wife be under subjection to us? it is as a wife,  
as free, as equal in honour. And the Son also, though He did  
become obedient to the Father, it was as the Son of God, it was  
as God. For as the obedience of the Son to the Father is  
greater than we find in men towards the authors of their  
being, so also His liberty is greater. Since it will not of  
course be said, that the circumstances of the Son’s relation to  
the Father are greater and more genuine than among men,  
and of the Father’s to the Son, less. For if we admire the Son,  
that He was obedient, so as to come even unto death, and the  
death of the cross, and reckon this the great wonder concerning  
Him; we ought to admire the Father also, that He begat such  
a Son, not as a slave under command, but as free, yielding  
obedience, and giving counsel. For the counsellor is no slave.

But again, when thou hearest of a counsellor, do not  
understand it as though the Father were in need, but that  
the Son hath the same honour with Him that begat Him.

Do not therefore strain the example of the man and the woman to all particulars.

<sup>1 Cor. 11. 3.</sup>

For with us indeed the woman is reasonably subjected to the man: since equality of honour causeth contention. And not for this cause only, but by reason also of the deceit<sup>1 1 Tim. 2. 14.</sup> which happened in the beginning. Wherefore you see, she was not subjected as soon as she was made; nor, when He brought her to the man, did either she herself hear any such thing of God, nor did the man say any such word to her: he said indeed that she was *bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh*<sup>2</sup>: but of rule or subjection he no where made mention<sup>2 Gen. 2. 23.</sup> upto her. But when she made an ill use of her privilege, and she who had been made a helper was found to be an ensnarer, and ruined all, then she is justly told for the future, *thy turning shall be to thy husband*<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>3 Gen. 3. 16.</sup>

To account for which; it was likely that this sin would have thrown our race into a state of warfare; (for her having been made out of him, would not have contributed any thing to peace, when this had happened, nay, rather this very thing would have made the man even the harsher, that she, made as she was out of him, should not have spared, no, not him who was member of herself:) wherefore God, considering the malice of the Devil, raised up a bulwark, viz. this word; and what enmity was likely to arise from his evil device, He took away by means of this sentence; and by the desire implanted in us: thus pulling down the partition-wall, (if it may be so called); i. e. the resentment caused by that sin of hers. But in God, and in that undefiled Essence, one must not suppose any such thing.

Do not therefore apply the examples to all, since elsewhere also from this source many grievous errors will occur. For so in the beginning of this very Epistle, he said, <sup>4 All are 1 Cor. yours, and ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's.</sup> What then? Are all in like manner ours, as *we are Christ's, and Christ is God's?* In no wise, but even to the very simple the difference is evident, although the same expression is used of God, and Christ, and us. And elsewhere also having called the husband *head of the wife*, he added, <sup>5 Eph. 5. 23.</sup> *Even as Christ is Head and Saviour and Defender of the Church, so also ought the man to be of his own wife.*

**HOMIL.** Are we then to understand in like manner the saying in the XXVI. text, as we do this, and all that after this is written to the Ephesians concerning this subject? Far from it. It is impossible. For although the same words are spoken of God and of men, yet in one way those must be understood, and in another these. Not however on the other hand all things diversely: since contrariwise they will seem to have been introduced at random and in vain, we reaping no benefit from them. But as we must not receive all things alike, so neither must we absolutely reject all.

Now that what I say may become clearer, I will endeavour to make it manifest in an example. Christ is called *the Head of the Church*. If I am to take nothing from what is human in the idea, why, I would know, is the expression used at all? On the other hand, if I understand all in that way, extreme absurdity will result. For the head is of like passions with the body, and liable to the same things. What then ought we to let go, and what to accept? We should let go these particulars which I have mentioned, but accept the notion of a perfect union, and the first principle; and not even these ideas absolutely, but here also we must form a notion, as we may by ourselves, of that which is too high for us, and suitable to the Godhead: as that both the union is surer, and the beginning more honourable.

Again, thou hearest the word *Son*; do not thou in this case either admit all particulars; yet neither oughtest thou to reject all: but admitting whatever is meet for God, e. g. that He is of the same substance, that He is of God; the things which are incongruous, and belong to human weakness, leave thou upon the earth.

Again, God is called *Light*. Shall we then admit all circumstances, which belong to this light? In no wise. For to that region this light is circumscribed by darkness and by space, and is moved by another power, and is overshadowed; none of which it is lawful even to imagine of That Essence. We will not however reject all things on this account, but will reap something useful from the example. The illumination which cometh to us from God, the deliverance from darkness; this will be what we gather from it.

[4.] Thus much in answer to the heretics: but we must also

orderly go over the whole passage. For perhaps some one might here have doubt also, questioning with himself, what sort of crime it was, that the woman should be uncovered, or that the men should be covered? What sort of crime then it is, learn now from hence.

Symbols many and diverse have been given both to man and woman; to him of rule, to her of subjection: and among them this also, that she should be covered, while he hath his head bare. If now these be symbols, you see that both err, when they disturb the order and the disposition of God, and transgress their proper limits, both the man falling into the woman's inferiority, and the woman rising up against the man, by her outward habiliments.

For if exchange of garments be not lawful, so that neither she should be clad with a cloak, nor he with a mantle or a veil: (*for the woman, saith He, shall not wear that which pertaineth to a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment*<sup>1</sup>:) much more is it unseemly for these things to be interchanged. For the former indeed were ordained by men, even although God afterwards ratified them: but this by nature, I mean the being covered, or uncovered. But when I say nature, I mean God. For he it is who created Nature. When therefore thou overturnest these boundaries, see how great injuries ensue.

And tell me not this, that the error is but small. For first, it is great, even of itself: being as it is disobedience. Next, though it were small, it became great, because of the greatness of the things whereof it is a sign. However, that it is a great matter, is evident from its ministering so effectually to good order among mankind, the governor and the governed being regularly kept in their several places by it.

So that he who transgresseth, disturbs all things, and betrays the gifts of God, and casts to the ground the honour bestowed on him from above; not however the man only, but also the woman. For to her also that is the greatest of honours, to preserve her own rank; as indeed of disgraces, the behaviour of a rebel. Wherefore he laid it down concerning both, thus saying,

Ver. 4. *Every man praying or prophesying having his*

**HOMIL.** *head covered, dishonoureth his head. But every woman*  
**XXVI.** *that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dis-*  
*honoureth her head.*

For there were, as I said, both men who prophesied, and women who had this gift at that time, as the daughters of Philip<sup>1</sup>, as others before them and after them: concerning whom also the prophet spake of old: *your sons shall pro-*  
<sup>1</sup> *Acts 21. 9.* *phesy, and your daughters shall see visions*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Joel 2. 28. Acts 2. 17.* Well then: the man he compelleth not to be always un-

covered, but when he prays only. *For every man, saith he, praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.* But the woman he commands to be at all times covered. Wherefore also having said, *Every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head,* he stayed not at this point only, but also proceeded to say, *For that is even all one as if she were shaven.* But if to be shaven is always dishonourable, it is plain too that being (4.) uncovered is always a reproach. And not even with this only was he content, but added again, saying, *The woman ought to have power on her head because of the angels.* He signifies that not at the time of prayer only, but also continually, she ought to be covered. But with regard to the man, it is no longer about covering, but about wearing long hair, that he so forms his discourse. To be covered he then only forbids, when a man is praying; but the wearing long hair he discourages at all times. Wherefore, as touching the woman, he said, *But if she be not covered, let her also be shorn;* so likewise touching the man, *If he have long hair, it is a shame unto him.* He said not, “if he be covered,” but, *if he have long hair.* Wherefore also he said at the beginning, *Every man praying or prophesying, having any thing on his head, dishonoureth his head.* He said not, “covered,” but *having any thing on his head;* signifying that, even though he pray with the head bare, yet if he have long hair, he is like to one covered. *For the hair, saith he, is given for a covering.*

Ver. 6. *But if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.*

Thus, in the beginning he simply requires that the head be not bare: but as he proceeds, he intimates both the con-

tinuance of the rule, saying, *for that is all one as if she were shaven,* and the keeping of it with all care and diligence. <sup>1 Cor. 11. 6.</sup> For he said not merely covered, but *covered over*<sup>1</sup>, meaning <sup>1 σὺν</sup> that she be with all care sheltered from view on every side. <sup>γάπτει</sup> And by reducing it to an absurdity, he appeals to their shame, <sup>σκανδ</sup> saying by way of severe reprimand, *but if she be not covered,* <sup>έλλας</sup> *let her also be shorn.* <sup>καρακα</sup> As if he had said, “ If thou cast away <sup>σκανδ</sup> the covering appointed by the law of God, cast away likewise <sup>λύπη</sup> that appointed by nature.”

But if any say, “ Nay, how can this be a shame to the woman, if she mount up to the glory of the man?” we might make this answer; “ She doth not mount up, but rather falls from her own proper honour.” Since not to abide within our own limits, and the laws ordained of God, but to go beyond, is not an addition, but a diminution. For as he that desireth other men’s goods, and seizeth what is not his own, hath not gained any thing more, but is diminished, having lost even that which he had, (which kind of thing also happened in paradise:) so likewise the woman acquireth not the man’s dignity, but loseth even the woman’s comeliness which she had. And not from hence only is her shame and reproach, but also on account of her covetousness.

Having taken then what was confessedly shameful, and having said, *but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven,* he states in what follows his own conclusion, saying, *let her be covered.* And he said not, “ let her have long hair,” but, *let her be covered,* ordaining both these to be one, and establishing them both ways, from what was customary, and from their contraries: in that he both affirms the covering, and the hair, to be one, and also that she again who is shaven is the same with her whose head is bare. *For that is even all one*, saith he, *as if she were shaven.* But if any say, “ And how is it one, if this woman have the covering of nature, but the other, who is shaven, have not even this?” we answer, that as far as her will goes, she threw that off likewise, by having the head bare. And if it be not bare of tresses, that is nature’s doing, not her own. So then, as she who is shaven hath her head bare, so this woman in like manner. For this cause He left it to nature to provide her with a covering, that even of it she might learn this lesson, and veil herself.

**HOMIL.  
XXVI.** Then he states also a cause, as one discoursing with those who are free: a thing which in many places I have remarked. What then is the cause?

Ver. 7. *For the man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God.*

This is again another cause. "Not only," so he speaks, "because he hath Christ to be his Head, ought he not to cover the head, but because also he rules over the woman." For the ruler, when he comes before the king, ought to have the symbol of his rule. As therefore no Ruler, without military girdle and cloak, would venture to appear before him that hath the diadem: so neither do thou without the symbols of thy rule, (one of which is, the not being covered,) pray before God, lest thou insult both thyself, and Him that hath honoured thee.

And the same thing likewise one may say regarding the woman. For to her also is it a reproach, the not having the symbols of her subjection. *But the woman is the glory of the man.* Therefore the rule of the man is natural.

[5.] Then, having affirmed his point, he states again other reasons and causes also, leading thee to the first creation, and saying thus;

Ver. 8. *For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man.*

But if to be of any one, is a glory to him, of whom one is,  
<sup>1 Reg.</sup> much more the being like him<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>τὸν τίκτοντα</sup> Ver. 9. *For neither was the man created for the woman,*  
<sup>τίκτειν.</sup> *"the but the woman for the man.*

<sup>being an</sup> <sup>image of</sup> This is again a second superiority, nay, rather also a third, and a fourth, the first being, that Christ is the head of us, and we of the woman; a second, that we are the glory of God, but the woman of us; a third, that we are not of the woman, but she of us; a fourth, that we are not for her, but she for us.

Ver. 10. *For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head.*

*For this cause:* what cause, tell me? "For all these which have been mentioned," saith he; or rather not for these only, but also *because of the angels.* "For although thou despise thine husband," saith he, "yet reverence the angels."

It follows, that being covered is a mark of subjection and <sup>1 Cor.</sup> of power. For it induces her to look down, and be ashamed, <sup>11—13.</sup> and preserve entire her proper virtue. For the virtue and honour of the governed is to abide in his obedience. <sup>(5.)</sup>

Again: the man is not compelled to do this; for he is the image of his Lord: but the woman is; and that reasonably. Consider then the excess of the transgression, when being honoured with so high a prerogative, thou puttest thyself to shame, seizing the woman's dress. And thou doest the same, as if having received a diadem, thou shouldest cast the diadem from thy head, and instead of it take a slave's garment.

Ver. 11. *Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.*

Thus, because he had given great superiority to the man, having said that the woman is of him, and for him, and under him; that he might neither lift up the men more than was due, nor depress the women, see how he brings in the correction, saying, *Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.* "Examine not, I pray," saith he, "the first things only, and that creation. Since, if thou enquire into what comes after, each one of the two is the cause of the other; or rather not even thus each of the other, but God of all." Wherefore he saith, *neither the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.*

Ver. 12. *For as the woman is of the man, so also is the man by the woman.*

He said not, *of the woman*, but he repeats the expression<sup>1</sup>, <sup>1 from v. 7.</sup> *of the man*. For still this particular prerogative remains entire with the man. Yet are not these excellencies the property of the man, but of God. Wherefore also he adds, *but all things of God.* If therefore all things belong to God, and he commands these things, do thou obey, and gainsay not.

Ver. 13. *Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?* Again he places them as judges of the things said, which also he did respecting the idol-sacrifices. For as there he saith, *judge ye what I say*<sup>2</sup>: so<sup>1 c. 10.</sup> here, *judge in yourselves*: and he hints something more <sup>15.</sup> awful here. For he says, that the affront here passes on unto God: although thus indeed he doth not express himself,

**HOMIL.** but in something of a milder and more enigmatical form of  
**XXVI.** speech: *is it comely that a woman pray unto God un-*  
*covered?*

Ver. 14. *Doth not even nature itself teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?*

Ver. 15. *But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her; for her hair is given her for a covering.*

His constant practice of stating commonly received reasons, he adopts also in this place, betaking himself to the common custom, and greatly abashing those who waited to be taught these things from him, which even from men's ordinary practice they might have learned. For such things are not unknown even to Barbarians: and see how he every where deals in piercing expressions: *every man praying having his head covered dishonoureth his head;* and again, *but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered:* and here again, *if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him; but if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her, for her hair is given her for a covering.*

"And if it be given her for a covering," say you, "wherefore need she add another covering?" That not nature only, but also her own will may have part in her acknowledgment of subjection. For that thou oughtest to be covered, nature herself by anticipation enacted a law. Add now, I pray, thine own part also, that thou mayest not seem to subvert the very laws of nature: a proof of most insolent

<sup>1</sup> ἵταπός. rashness<sup>1</sup>, to buffet not only with us, but with nature also.

<sup>2</sup> οὐτος.

<sup>2</sup> Ezek. 16. 21, *thy sons and thy daughters: this is beyond all thy abominations*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> βδιλός. And again, Paul rebuking the unclean among the γυματα. Romans, thus aggravates the accusation, saying, that their rec. usage was not only against the law of God, but even against text, προνίας. nature. *For they changed the natural use into that which is*

<sup>4</sup> Rom. 1. 26. *against nature*<sup>4</sup>. For this cause then here also he works on this argument, partly to signify this which hath been said, and partly that he is not enacting any strange law, and that among Gentiles, their inventions would all be reckoned as a kind of novelty against nature<sup>4</sup>. So also Christ, implying the

<sup>2</sup> τὰ τῆς καινοτομίας ἀπαντά τῆς σερπὶ φύσης. Perhaps the text is mutilated.

same, said; *whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, 1 Cor. 11. 16.  
do ye also so to them<sup>1</sup>:* shewing that He is not introducing any <sup>1 S. Mat.</sup> thing new. <sup>7. 12.</sup>

Ver. 16. *But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the Churches of God.*

It is then contentiousness to oppose these things, and not any exercise of reason. Notwithstanding, even thus it is a measured sort of rebuke which he adopts, to fill them the more with self-reproach; which in truth rendered his saying the more severe. *For we, saith he, have no such custom,* so as to contend, and to strive, and to oppose ourselves. And he stopped not even here, but also added, *neither the Churches of God;* signifying that they resist and oppose themselves to the whole world, by not yielding. However, even if the Corinthians were then contentious, yet now the whole world hath both received and kept this law. So great is the power of the Crucified.

[6.] But I fear lest having assumed the dress, yet in their deeds some of our women should be found immodest, and in other ways uncovered. For therefore also writing to Timothy Paul was not content with these things, but added others, saying, *that they adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broidered hair, or gold<sup>2</sup>.* For if one ought not to have the head bare, but every <sup>2</sup> 1 Tim. where to carry about the token of subjection, much more is <sup>2. 9.</sup> it becoming to exhibit the same in our deeds. Thus at any rate the former women also used both to call their husbands lords, and to yield the precedence to them. “Because they for their part, you say, used to love their own wives.” I know that as well as you: I am not ignorant of it. But when we are exhorting thee concerning thine own duties, let not theirs take all thine attention. For so, when we exhort children to be obedient to parents, saying, that it is written, *honour thy father and thy mother,* they reply to us, “mention also what follows, *and ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath<sup>3</sup>.*” And servants when we tell them, that it <sup>3</sup> Eph. 6. is written, that they should *obey their masters, and not serve with eye-service,* they also again demand of us what follows, bidding us also give the same advice to masters. For Paul

HOMIL. bade them also, they say, *to forbear threatening.* But let us  
XXVI. not do thus, nor enquire into the things enjoined on others, when we are charged with regard to our own: for neither will thy obtaining a partner in the charges free thee from the blame: but look to one thing only, how thou mayest rid thyself of those charges which lie against thyself. Since Adam also laid the blame on the woman, and she again on the serpent, but this did in no wise deliver them. Do not thou, therefore, for thy part, say this to me now, but be careful with all cheerfulness to render what thou owest to thy husband: since also when I am discoursing with thy husband, advising him to love and cherish thee, I suffer him not to bring forward the law that is appointed for the woman, but I require of him that which is written for his own use. And do thou therefore busy thyself with those things only which belong to thee, and shew thyself tractable to thy consort. And accordingly, if it be really for God's sake that thou obeyest thy husband, tell me not of the things which ought to be done by him, but for what things thou hast been made responsible by the lawgiver, those do thou perform with exactness. For this is especially to obey God, not to transgress the law even when suffering things contrary to it. And by the same rule, he that being beloved, loves, is not reckoned to do any great thing. But he that waits upon a person who hateth him, this above all is the man to receive a crown. In the same manner then do thou also reckon, that if thy husband give thee disgust, and thou endure it, thou shalt receive a glorious crown: but if he be gentle and mild, what will there be for God to reward in thee? And these things I say, not bidding the husbands be harsh; but persuading the wives to bear even with harshness in their husbands. Since, when each is careful to fulfil his own duty, his neighbours' part also will quickly follow: as when the wife is prepared to bear even with rough behaviour in the husband, and the husband refrains from abusing her in her angry mood; then all is a calm, and a harbour free from waves.

[7.] So also was it with those of old time. Each was employed in fulfilling his own duty, not in exacting that of his

neighbour. Thus, if you mark it, Abraham took his brother's <sup>1 Cor.</sup> son: his wife found no fault with him. He commanded her 11. 16. to travel a long journey; she spake not even against this, but followed. Again, after those many miseries, and labours, and toils, having become lord of all, he yielded the presidency to Lot. And so far from Sarah being offended at this, she did not even open her mouth, nor uttered any such thing, as many of the women of these days utter, when they see their own husbands coming off inferior in such appointments, and especially in dealing with inferiors; reproaching them, and calling them fools, and senseless, and unmanly, and traitors, and stupid. But no such thing did she say, or think, but was pleased with all things that were done by him.

And another thing, and that a greater: after that Lot had the choice put in his power, and had thrown the inferior part upon his uncle, a great danger fell upon him. Whereof the patriarch hearing, armed all his people, and set himself against the whole army of the Persians with his own domestics only, and not even then did she detain him, nor say, as was likely, "O man, whither goest thou, thrusting thyself down precipices, and exposing thyself to so great hazards? for one who wronged thee, and seized on all that was thine, shedding thy blood? Yea, and even if thou make light of thyself, yet have pity on me, which have left house, and country, and friends, and kindred, and have followed thee in so long a pilgrimage; and expose me not to widowhood, and to the miseries of widowhood." None of these things she said: she thought not of them, but bore all in silence.

After this, her womb continuing barren, she herself suffers not the grief of women, nor laments: but he complains, though not to his wife, but to God. And see how each preserves his own appropriate part: for he neither despised Sarah as childless, nor reproached her with any such thing: and she again was anxious to devise some consolation to him for her childlessness by means of the handmaid. For these things had not yet been forbidden then as now. For now neither is it lawful for women to indulge their husbands in such things, nor for the men, with or without the wife's knowledge, to form such connexions, even though the grief of their childlessness

**HOMIL.** should infinitely harass them : since they also shall hear the  
XXVI. sentence, *their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched.* For now it is not permitted, but then it had not been forbidden. Wherefore both his wife commanded this, and he obeyed, yet not even thus for pleasure's sake. But "behold," it will be said, "how he cast Hagar out again at her bidding." Well, this is what I want to point out, that (7.) both he obeyed her in all things, and she him. But do not thou give heed to these things only, but examine, thou who urgest this plea, into what had gone before also, Hagar's insulting her, her boasting herself against her mistress; than which what can be more vexatious to a free and honourable woman?

[8.] Let not then the wife tarry for the virtue of the husband, and then shew her own, for this is nothing great; nor, on the other hand, the husband, for the obedience of the wife, and then exercise self-command; for neither would this any more be his own well-doing; but let each, as I said, furnish his own share first. For if to the Gentiles, smiting us on the right, we must turn the other cheek; much more ought one to bear with harsh behaviour in a husband.

And I say not this for the wife to be beaten; far from it; for this is the extremest affront, not to her that is beaten, but to him who beateth. But even if by some circumstance thou have such a yoke-fellow allotted thee, take it not ill, O woman, considering the reward which is laid up for such things, and their praise too in this present life. And to you husbands also this I say; make it a rule, that there can be no such offence, as to bring you under the necessity of striking a wife. And why say I a wife? since not even upon his handmaiden could a free man endure to inflict blows, and lay violent hands. - But if the shame be great for a man to beat a maid-servant, much more to stretch forth the right hand against her that is free. And this one might see even from heathen legislators, who no longer compel her that hath been so treated to live with him that beat her, as being unworthy of her fellowship. For surely it comes of extreme lawlessness, when thy partner of life, she who in the most intimate relations, and that on the highest autho-

rity, is united with thee; when she, like a base slave, is dishonoured by thee. Wherefore also such a man, if indeed one must call him a man, and not rather a wild beast, I should say, was like a parricide and a murderer of his mother. For if for a wife's sake, we were commanded to leave even father and mother, not wronging them, but fulfilling a divine law; and a law so grateful to our parents themselves, that even they, the very persons whom we are leaving, are thankful, and bring it about with great eagerness; what but extreme frenzy can it be to insult her, for whose sake God bade us leave even our parents?

But we may well ask, Is it only madness? There is the shame too: I would fain know who can endure it. And what description can set it before us; when shrieks and wailings are borne along the alleys, and there is a running to the house of him that is so disgracing himself, both of the neighbours and the passers by, as though some wild beast were ravaging within? Better were it that the earth should gape asunder for one so frantic, than that he should be seen at all in the forum after it.

"But the woman is insolent," saith he. Consider nevertheless that she is a woman, the weaker vessel, whereas thou art a man. For therefore wert thou ordained<sup>1</sup> to be ruler: and wert assigned to her in place of a head, that thou mightest bear with the weakness of her that is set under thee. Make then thy rule glorious. And glorious it will be, when the subject of it meets with no dishonour from thee. And as the monarch will appear so much the more dignified, as he manifests more dignity in the officer under him: but if he dishonour and deprecate the greatness of that rank, he is indirectly cutting off no small portion of his own glory likewise: so also thou, if thou dishonour her who governs next to thyself, wilt in no common degree mar the honour of thy governance.

Considering therefore all these things, command thyself: and withal think also of that evening, on which the father having called thee, delivered thee his daughter as a kind of deposit, and having separated her from all, from her mother, from himself, from the family, intrusted her entire

**HOMIL.** guardianship to thy right hand. Consider that (under God) XXVI. through her thou hast children, and hast become a father, and be thou also on that account gentle towards her.

(8.) Seest thou not the husbandmen, how the earth which hath once received the seed, they tend with all various methods of culture, though it have ten thousand disadvantages; e. g. though it be an unkindly soil, or bear ill weeds, or though it be vexed with excessive rain through the nature of its situation? This also do thou. For thus shalt thou be first to enjoy both the fruit and the calm. Since thy wife is to thee both a harbour, and a potent healing charm, to rejoice thy heart. Well then: if thou shalt free thy harbour from winds and waves, thou shalt enjoy much tranquillity on thy return from the market-place: but if thou fill it with clamour and tumult, thou dost but prepare for thyself a more grievous shipwreck. In order then to prevent this, let what I advise be done: When any thing uncomfortable happens in the household, if she be in the wrong, console her, and do not aggravate the discomfort. For even if thou shouldest lose all, nothing is more grievous than to have a wife without goodwill sharing thine abode. And whatever offence thou canst mention, thou wilt tell me of nothing so very painful, as being at strife with her. So that if it were only for such reasons as these, let her love be more precious than all things. For if one another's burdens are to be borne, much more our own wife's.

Though she be poor, do not upbraid her: though she be foolish, do not trample on her, but correct her rather: because she is a member of thee, and ye are become one flesh. "But she is trifling, and drunken, and passionate." Thou oughtest then to grieve over these things, not to be angry; and to beseech God, and exhort her, and give her advice, and do every thing to cut away the evil. But if thou strike her, and keep on fretting her, the disease is not healed: for fierceness is removed by moderation, not by rival fierceness. With these things bear in mind also the reward from God: that when it is permitted thee to cut her off, and thou doest not so for the fear of God, but bearest with so great defects, fearing the law appointed in such matters, which forbids to put away a wife

whatsoever disease she may have: thou shalt receive an unspeakable reward. Yea, and before the reward thou shalt be a very great gainer, both rendering her more obedient, and becoming thyself more gentle thereby. It is said, for instance, that one of the heathen philosophers<sup>1</sup>, who had a bad wife, a trifler and a drunkard, when some asked, "Why, having such an one, he endured her;" he made reply, "That he might have in his house a school and training-place of philosophy. For I shall be to all the rest meeker," saith he, "being here disciplined every day." Did you utter a great shout? Why, I at this moment am greatly mourning, when heathens prove better lovers of wisdom than we; we who are commanded to imitate angels, nay rather who are commanded to follow God Himself in respect of gentleness.

But to proceed: it is said, that for this reason the philosopher having a bad wife, cast her not out; and some say, that this very thing was the reason of his marrying her. But I, because many men have dispositions not exactly reasonable, advise that at first they do all they can, and be careful that they take a suitable partner, and one full of all virtue. Should it happen, however, that they miss their end, and she whom they have brought into the house prove no good or tolerable bride, then I would have them at any rate try to be like this philosopher, and be always putting her in tune, and add not wilfully any of these things. Since neither will a merchant, until he have made a compact with his partner capable of procuring peace, launch the vessel into the deep, nor apply himself to the rest of the transaction. And let us then use every effort, that she who is partner with us in the business of life, and in this our vessel, may be kept in all peace within. For thus shall our other affairs too be all in calm, and with tranquillity shall we run our course through the ocean of the present life. Compared with this, let house, and slaves, and money, and lands, and the business itself of the state, be less in our account. And let it be more valuable than all in our eyes, that she who with us sits ruling over the house, should not be in mutiny and disunion with us. For so shall our other matters proceed with a favouring tide, and in spiritual things also we shall find ourselves much the freer from hindrance, drawing this yoke with one accord; and having

**HOMIL.** done all things well, we shall obtain the blessings laid up  
XXVI. in store; unto which may we all attain, through the grace  
and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the  
Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour,  
now and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## H O M I L Y XXVII.

---

1 COR. xi. 17.

*Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse.*

IT is necessary in considering the present charge, to state also first the occasion of it. For thus again will our discourse be more intelligible. What then is this occasion?

As in the case of the three thousand who believed in the beginning, all had eaten their meals in common, and had all things common; such also was the practice at the time when the Apostle wrote this: not such indeed exactly; but as it were a certain outflowing of that communion abiding among them, descended also to them that came after. And because of course some were poor, but others rich, they laid not down all their goods in the midst, but made the tables open on stated days, as it should seem; and when the solemn service<sup>11</sup> *τῆς συνάξεως.* was completed, after the communion of the mysteries, they all went to a common entertainment, the rich bringing their provisions with them, and the poor and destitute being invited by them, and all feasting in common. But afterward this custom also became corrupt. And the reason was, their being divided, and addicting themselves, some to this party, and others to that, and saying, "I am of such a one," and "I of such a one;" which thing also to correct he said, in the beginning of the Epistle, *For it hath been declared to me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas.* Not that Paul was the person to whom they

**HOMIL.** were attaching themselves: for he would not have borne it: xxvii. but wishing, by doing more than was required, to tear up this custom from the root, he introduced himself, indicating that if any one had inscribed upon himself even his name, when breaking off from the common body, even so the thing done was profane, and extreme wickedness. And if in his case it were wickedness, much more in the case of those others, inferior to him.

[2.] Since therefore this custom was broken through, a custom most excellent, and most useful; (for it was a foundation of love, and a comfort to poverty, and a corrective of riches, and an occasion of the highest philosophy, and an instruction of humility;) since however he saw so great advantages in a way to be destroyed, he naturally addresses them with severity, thus saying: *Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not.* For in the former charge, as there were many who kept (the ordinances), he began otherwise, saying thus: *Now I praise you, that ye remember me in all things:* but here contrariwise, *Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not.* And here is the reason why he placed it not after the rebuke of them that eat the idol-sacrifices. But because that was unusually harsh, he inserts by the way the discourse about wearing of long hair, that he might not have to pass from one set of vehement reproofs to others again of an invidious kind, and so appear too harsh: and then he returns to the more vehement tone, and says, *Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not.* What is this? That which I am about to tell you of. What is, *declaring unto you, I praise you not?* “I do not approve you,” saith he, “because ye have reduced me to the necessity of giving advice: I do not praise you, because ye have required instruction in regard to this, because ye have need of an admonition from me.” Dost thou perceive how from his beginning he signifieth that what was done was very profane? For when he that errs ought not to require so much as a hint to prevent his erring, the error would seem to be unpardonable.

And why dost thou not praise? Because *ye come together,* saith he, *not for the better, but for the worse;* i. e. because ye do not go forward unto virtue. For it were meet that

your liberality<sup>1</sup> should increase and become manifold, but ye have taken rather from the custom which already prevailed,<sup>1 Cor. 11. 19.</sup> and have so taken from it, as even to need warning from me,<sup>1 παραγόντες μέσαν.</sup> in order that ye may return to the former order.

Further, that he might not seem to say these things on account of the poor only, he doth not at once strike in to the discourse concerning the tables, lest he render his rebuke such as they might easily come to think slightly of, but he searches for an expression most confounding, and very fearful. For what saith he?

Ver. 18. *For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I hear that there be schisms<sup>2</sup> among you.*

And he saith not, "For I hear that you do not sup<sup>2 σχίσμα.</sup>  
together in common;" "for I hear that you feast in private,<sup>μαζα.</sup>  
rec. vers. "divi-  
and not with the poor;" but what was most calculated  
sions."  
thoroughly to shake their minds, that he set down, the name  
of *schism*, which was the cause of this mischief also: and so  
he reminded them again of that which was said in the  
beginning of the Epistle, and was *declared by them of the  
house of Chloe<sup>3</sup>.*

<sup>3 c. i. 11.</sup>

*And I partly believe it.*

Thus, lest they should say, "But what if the accusers speak falsely?" he neither saith, "I believe it," lest he should rather make them reckless; nor again, on the other hand, "I disbelieve it," lest he should seem to reprove without cause, but, *I partly believe it*, saith he, i. e. "I believe it in a small part;" making them anxious, and inviting them to return to correction.

[3.] Ver. 19. *For there must be also heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.*

By *heresies*, here, he means those which concern not the great doctrines, but these present divisions. But even if he had spoken of the doctrinal heresies, not even thus did he give them any handle. For Christ Himself said, *it must needs be that offences come*<sup>4</sup>, not destroying the liberty of the will, nor appointing any necessity and compulsion over man's life, but foretelling what would certainly ensue from the evil mind of men; which would take place, not because of his prediction, but because the incurably disposed are so minded. For not because he foretold them did these things happen:

**HOMIL.** but because they were certainly about to happen, therefore  
XXVII. he foretold them. Since, if the offences were of necessity,  
 and not of the mind of them that bring them in, it was  
 superfluous His saying, *Woe to that man by whom the  
 offence cometh.* But these things we discussed more at  
<sup>1</sup> vid. S. length when we were upon the passage itself<sup>1</sup>; now we must  
 Chrys. proceed to what is before us.  
 on S.

**Matth.** Now that he said these things of these heresies relating to  
**Hom.59.** the tables, and that contention and division, he made manifest  
 also from what follows. For having said, *I hear that there  
 are schisms among you,* he stopped not here, but signifying  
 what schisms he means, he goes on to say, *every one taketh  
 before other his own supper,* and again, *What? have ye not  
 houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the Church of  
 God?* However, that of these he was speaking, is evident.  
 And if he call them *schisms*, marvel not. For, as I said, he  
 wishes to touch them by the expression: whereas, had they  
 been schisms of doctrine, he would not have discoursed with  
 them thus mildly. Hear him, for instance, when he speaks  
 of any such thing, how vehement he is, both in assertion, and  
 in reproof: in assertion, as when he says, *If even an angel  
 preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received,*

<sup>2</sup> Gal. 1. *let him be accursed*<sup>2</sup>; but in reproof, as when he says,  
 8. *Whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from*

<sup>3</sup> Gal. 5. *grace*<sup>3</sup>. And at one time he calls the corrupters *dogs*, saying,

4. <sup>4</sup> Phil. 3. *Beware of dogs*<sup>4</sup>: at another, *having their consciences seared  
 2.* with a hot iron<sup>5</sup>. And again, *angels of Satan*<sup>6</sup>: but here he

<sup>5</sup> 1 Tim. 4. 2. said no such thing, but spake in a gentle and subdued tone.

<sup>6</sup> 2 Cor. 11. 14. 15. But what is, *that they which are approved may be made  
 manifest among you?* That they may shine the more. And  
 what he intends to say is this, that those who are unchangeable  
 and firm are so far from being at all injured hereby, but  
 even shew them the more, and declares them more glorious.

<sup>7</sup> *7. 11. a.* For the word, *that*<sup>7</sup>, is not every where indicative of the cause,  
 but frequently also of the event, of things. Thus Christ  
 Himself uses it, when He saith, *For judgment I am come  
 into this world: that they which see not might see, and that*

<sup>8</sup> John 9. 39. *they which see might be made blind*<sup>8</sup>. So likewise Paul in  
 another place, when discoursing of the law, he writes,

<sup>9</sup> Rom. 5. 20. *Moreover, the Law entered, that the offence might abound*<sup>9</sup>.

But neither was the law given to this end, that the offences <sup>1 Cor. 11. 20.</sup> of the Jews might be increased: (though this did ensue;) nor did Christ come for this end, that they which see might be made blind, but for the contrary; but the result was such. Thus then also here must one understand the expression, *that they which are approved may be made manifest.* For not at all with this view came heresies into being, that *they which are approved may be made manifest*, but on these heresies taking place such was the result. Now these things he said to console the poor, those of them who nobly bore that sort of contempt. Wherefore he said not, "that they may become approved," but, *that they which are approved may be made manifest;* shewing, that before this also they were such, but they were mixed up with the multitude, and while enjoying such relief as was afforded them by the rich, they were not very conspicuous: but now this strife and contentiousness hath made them manifest, even as the storm shews the pilot. And he said not, "that ye may appear approved," but, "that *they which are approved may be made manifest*, those among you who are such." For neither when he is accusing doth he lay them open, that he may not render them more reckless; nor when praising, that he may not make them more boastful; but he leaves both this expression and that in suspense<sup>1</sup>, allowing each man's own conscience <sup>1 σις με.</sup> <sup>τιαγεσ</sup> <sup>ἀφίησι,</sup> <sup>"sends it out</sup> <sup>into the air."</sup> to make the application of what he saith.

Nor doth he here seem to me to be comforting the poor only, but those also who were not violating the custom. For it was likely that there were among them also those that observed it.

And this is why he said, *I partly believe it.* Justly then doth he call these *approved*, who not only with the rest observed the custom, but even without them kept this good law undisturbed. And he doth this, studying by such praises to render both others and these persons themselves more forward.

[4.] Then at last he adds the very form of the offence. And what is it?

Ver. 20. *When ye come together into one place*, saith he, *this is not to eat the Lord's Supper.*

Seest thou how effectually appealing to their shame, even

HOMIL. already, by way of narrative, he contrives to give them xxvii. his counsel? "For the appearance of your assembly," saith he, "is different. It is one of love, and brotherly affection. At least one place receives you all, and ye are together in one flock. But the Banquet, when you come to that, bears no resemblance to the Assembly of worshippers." And he said not, "When ye come together, this is not to eat in common," "this is not to feast with one another;" but otherwise again and much more fearfully he reprimands them, saying, *this is not to eat the Lord's Supper*, sending them away now from this point to that evening, on which Christ delivered the awful mysteries. Therefore also he called the early meal *a supper*. For that supper too had them all reclining at meat together: yet surely not so great was the distance between the rich and the poor, as between the Teacher and the disciples. For that is infinite. And why say I the Teacher and the disciples? Think of the interval between the Teacher and the traitor: nevertheless the Lord Himself both sat at meat with them, and did not even cast him out, but both gave him his portion of salt, and made him partaker of the mysteries.

(3.) Next he explains how *this is not to eat the Lord's Supper*.

<sup>1</sup> *in eī* *φαγεῖν.* Ver. 21. *For in your eating<sup>1</sup>, every one taketh before other his own supper*, saith he, *and one is hungry, and another is drunken.*

Perceivest thou how he intimates that they were disgracing themselves rather? For that which is the Lord's, they make a private matter: so that themselves are the first to suffer indignity, depriving their own talk of its greatest prerogative. How, and in what manner? Because the Lord's Supper, i. e. the Master's, ought to be common. For the property of the master belongs not to this servant without belonging to that, but in common to all. So that by *the Lord's Supper* he expresses this, the *community* of the feast. As if he had said, "If it be thy master's, as assuredly it is, thou oughtest not to withdraw it as private, but as belonging to thy Lord and Master, to set it in common before all. For this is the meaning of, *the Lord's*. But now thou dost not suffer it to be the Lord's, not suffering it to be common, but feasting by thyself." Wherefore also he goes on to say,

*For each one taketh before other his own supper.* And he <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
11. 29. said not, “cutteth off,” but *taketh before*, tacitly censuring them both for greediness and for precipitancy. This at least the sequel also shews. For having said this, he added again, *and one is hungry, and another is drunken*, each of which shewed a want of moderation, both the craving, and the excess. See also a second fault again, whereby those same persons are injured: the first that they dishonour their supper: the second, that they are greedy and drunken; and what is yet worse, even when the poor are hungry. For what was intended to be set before all in common, that these men fed on alone, and proceeded both to surfeiting and to drunkenness. Wherefore neither did he say, “*one is hungry, and another is filled:*” but, *is drunken*. Now each of these, even by itself, is worthy of censure: for it is a fault to be drunken, even without despising the poor, and to despise the poor, without being drunken, is an accusation. When both then are joined together at the same time, consider how exceeding great is the transgression.

Next, having pointed out their profaneness, he adds his reprimand in what follows, with much anger, saying,

Ver. 22. *What? have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? Or despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that have not?*

Seest thou how he transferred the charge from the indignity offered to the poor, to the Church, that his words might make a deeper impression of disgust? Here now you see is yet a fourth accusation, when not the poor only, but the Church likewise is insulted. For even as thou makest the Lord's Supper a private meal, so also the place again, using the Church as a house. For it was made a Church, not that we who come together might be divided, but that they who are divided might be joined: and this the act of assembling shews.

*And shame them that have not.* He said not, “and kill with hunger *them that have not*,” but so as much more to put them to the blush, *shame them*; to point out that it is not food which he cares for so much, as the wrong done unto them. Behold again a fifth accusation, not only to overlook the poor, but even to shame them. Now this he said, partly

HOMIL. as treating with reverence the concerns of the poor, and intimating that they grieve not so for the belly, as for the shame ; and partly also drawing the hearer to compassion.

Having therefore pointed out so great impieties, indignity to the Supper, indignity to the Church, the contempt practised towards the poor ; he relaxes again the tone of his reproof, saying, all of a sudden<sup>1</sup>, *Shall I praise you ? In this I* <sup>την τρόπον,</sup> *λαθεῖσθαι, praise you not.* Wherein one might especially marvel at him, that when there was need to strike and chide more vehemently after the proof of so great offences, he doeth the contrary rather, gives way, and permits them to recover breath. What then may the cause be ? He had touched more painfully than usual, in aggravating the charge, and being a most excellent physician, he carries the incision as far as may answer to the wounds, neither cutting superficially those parts which require a deep stroke ; (for thou hast heard him, how he cut off among those very persons, him that had committed fornication;) nor delivering over to the knife those things which require the milder sort of remedies. For this cause then, here also he conducts his address more mildly, and in another point of view likewise, he sought especially to render them gentle to the poor : and this is why he discourses with them rather in a subdued tone.

[5.] Next, wishing also from another topic to shame them yet more, he takes again the points which were most essential, and of them weaves his discourse.

Ver. 23. *For I have received of the Lord, saith he, that which also I delivered unto you : that the Lord Jesus, the same night in which He was betrayed, took bread :*

Ver. 24. *And when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said, Take, eat : this is My Body, which is broken for you : this do in remembrance of Me.*

Wherefore doth he here make mention of the Mysteries ? Because that argument was very necessary to his present purpose. As thus : " Thy Master," saith he, " counted all worthy of the same table, though it be very and most exceedingly awful, and far exceeding the dignity of all : but thou considerest them to be unworthy even of thine own, small and mean as we see it is ; and while they have no advantage over thee in spiritual things, thou robbest

them in the temporal things. For neither are these thine <sup>1 COR.</sup>  
own." <sup>11. 24.</sup>

However, he doth not express himself thus, to prevent his discourse becoming harsh: but he frames it in a gentler form, saying, that *the Lord Jesus, in the same night in which He was betrayed, took bread.*

And wherefore doth he remind us of the time, and of that evening, and of the betrayal? Not indifferently, nor without some reason, but that he might exceedingly fill them with compunction, were it but from consideration of the time. For even if one be a very stone, yet when he considers that night, how He was with His disciples, *very heavy*, how he was betrayed, how He was bound, how He was led away, how He was judged, how He suffered all the rest in order; he becometh softer than wax, and is withdrawn from earth, and all the pomp of this world. Therefore he leads us to the remembrance of all those things, by His time, and His table, and His betrayal, putting us to shame, and saying, "Thy Master gave up even Himself for thee: and thou dost not even share a little meat with thy brother for thine own sake." (4.)

But how saith he, that *he received it from the Lord?* since certainly he was not present then, but was one of the persecutors. That thou mayest know that the first table had no advantage above that which cometh after it. For even to-day also it is He who doeth all, and delivereth it even as then.

And not on this account only doth he remind us of that night, but that he may also in another way bring us to compunction. For as we particularly remember those words, which we hear last from those who are departing; and to their heirs, if they should venture to transgress their commands, when we would put them to shame we say, "Consider that this was the last word your father uttered to you, and until the evening when he was just about to breathe his last, he kept repeating these injunctions:" just so Paul, purposing hence also to make his argument full of awefulness; "Remember," saith he, "that this was the last mysterious rite<sup>1</sup> He gave<sup>1</sup> *μυστήριον* unto you, and in that night, on which he was about to be *κυριαρχεῖν*. slain for us, he commanded these things, and having delivered to us that supper, after that he added nothing further."

Next also he proceeds to recount the very things that were

**HOMIL.** done, saying, *He took bread, and, when He had given thanks,*  
xxvii. *He brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is My Body, which is broken for you.* If therefore thou comest for a sacrifice of <sup>1 οὐχεὶς</sup> thanksgiving<sup>1</sup>, do thou on thy part nothing unworthy of that sacrifice: by no means either dishonour thy brother, or neglect him in his hunger; be not drunken, insult not the Church. As thou comest, giving thanks for what thou hast enjoyed: so do thou thyself accordingly make return, and not cut thyself off from thy neighbour. Since Christ for His part gave Himself equally to all, saying, *Take, eat.* He gave His body equally, but thou dost not give so much as the common bread equally. Yea, it was indeed broken for all alike, and became the Body equally for all.

Ver. 25. *After the same manner also the cup, when He had supped, saying, This cup is the New Testament in My Blood: this do as oft as ye drink it in remembrance of Me.*

What sayest thou? Art thou making a remembrance of Christ, and despisest thou the poor, and tremblest not? Why, if a son or brother had died, and thou wert making a remembrance of him, thou wouldest have been smitten by thy conscience, hadst thou not fulfilled the custom, and invited the poor: and when thou art making remembrance of thy Master, dost thou not so much as simply give a portion of the table?

But what is it which He saith, *This cup is the New Testament?* Because there was also a cup of the Old Testament; the libations and the blood of the brute creatures. For so, after sacrificing, they used to receive the blood in a chalice and bowl, and so pour it out. Since then instead of the blood of beasts, He brought in His own blood; lest any should be troubled on hearing this, He reminds them of that ancient sacrifice.

[6.] Next, having spoken concerning that supper, he connects the things present with the things of that time, that even as on that very evening, and reclining on that very couch, and receiving from Christ Himself this sacrifice, so also now might men be affected; and he saith,

Ver. 26. *For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till He come.*

For as Christ, in regard to the bread and the cup, said, *Do*

*this in remembrance of Me,* revealing to us the cause of the <sup>1 Cor.</sup> giving of the mystery, and beside what else He said, de- <sup>11. 27.</sup> claring this to be a sufficient cause to ground our religious fear upon:—(for when thou considerest what thy Master hath suffered for thee, thou wilt the better deny thyself:)—so also Paul saith here: *as often as ye eat ye do shew His death.* And this is that supper. Then intimating, that it abides unto the end, he saith, *till He come.*

Ver. 27. *Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread and drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.*

Why so? Because he poured it out, and makes the thing appear a slaughter, and no longer a sacrifice. Much therefore as they who then pierced him, pierced Him not that they might drink, but that they might shed His blood: so likewise doth he that cometh for it unworthily, and reaps no profit thereby. Seest thou how fearful he makes his discourse, and inveighs against them very exceedingly, signifying that if they are thus to drink, they partake unworthily of the elements<sup>1</sup>? For how can it be other than unworthily, <sup>1 οὐτῶν</sup> when it is he who neglects the hungry? <sup>εργάζουσιν</sup> who besides overlooking him, puts him to shame? Since if not giving to the poor casteth one out of the kingdom, even though one should be a virgin; or rather, not giving liberally: (for even those virgins too had oil, only they had it not abundantly:) consider how great the evil will prove, to have wrought so many impieties?

“What impieties?” say you. Why sayest thou, what (5.) impieties? Thou hast partaken of such a Table, and when thou oughtest to be more gentle than any, and like the angels, none so cruel as thou art become. Thou hast tasted the blood of the Lord, and not even thereupon dost thou acknowledge thy brother. Of what indulgence then art thou worthy? Whereas if even before this thou hadst not known him, thou oughtest to have come to the knowledge of him from the Table; but now thou dishonourest the Table itself; he having been deemed worthy to partake of it, and thou not judging him worthy of thy meat. Hast thou not heard how much he suffered who demanded the hundred pence? how he <sup>2 λειπούσης</sup> made void the gift vouchsafed to him<sup>2</sup>. Doth it not come <sup>λιπαρός</sup> perhaps into thy mind what thou wert, and what thou hast become? “officially declared.”

HOMIL. Dost thou not put thyself in remembrance, that if this man be  
xxviiij. poor in possessions, thou wast much more beggarly in good works, being full of ten thousand sins ? Notwithstanding, God delivered thee from all those, and counted thee worthy of such a Table: but thou art not even thus become more merciful: therefore of course nothing else remaineth, but that thou shouldest be *delivered to the tormentors*.

[7.] These words let us also listen to, all of us, as many as in this place approach with the poor to this holy Table, but when we go out, do not seem even to have seen them, but are both drunken, and pass heedlessly by the hungry ; the very things whereof the Corinthians were then accused. And when is this done? say you. At all times indeed, but especially at the festivals, where above all times it ought not so to be. Is it not so, that at such times, immediately after the Communion, drunkenness succeeds, and contempt of the poor? And having partaken of the Blood, when it were a time for thee to fast and watch, thou givest thyself up to wine and revelling. And yet if thou hast by chance made thy morning meal on any thing good, thou keepest thyself, lest by any other unsavoury viand thou spoil the taste of the former: and now that thou hast been feasting on the Spirit, thou bringest in a satanical luxury. Consider, when the Apostles partook of that holy Supper, what they did : did they not betake themselves to prayers and singing of hymns? to sacred vigils? to that long work of teaching, so full of all self-denial? For then He related and delivered to them those great and wonderful things, when Judas had gone out to call them who were about to crucify him. Hast thou not heard how the three thousand also who partook of the Communion continued ever in prayer and teaching, not in drunken feasts and revellings? But thou, before thou hast partaken fastest, that in a certain way thou mayest appear worthy of the Communion: but when thou hast partaken, and thou oughtest to increase thy temperance, thou undoest all. And yet surely it is not the same to fast before this and after it. Since although it is our duty to be temperate at both times, yet most particularly after we have received the Bridegroom. Before, that thou mayest become worthy of receiving: after, that thou mayest not be found unworthy of what thou hast received.

"What then? ought we to fast after receiving?" I say not <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
this, neither do I use any compulsion. This indeed were <sup>11. 27.</sup>  
well; however, I do not enforce this, but I exhort you not to  
feast to excess. For if one never ought to live luxuriously,  
and Paul shewed this when he said, *she that liveth in  
pleasure is dead while she liveth*<sup>1</sup>; much more will she then <sup>1 Tim.  
5. 6.</sup>  
be dead. And if luxury be death to a woman, much more to  
a man: and if this done at another time is fatal, much more  
after the communion of the Mysteries. And dost thou, having  
taken the bread of life, do an action of death, and not  
shudder? Knowest thou not how great evils are brought in  
by luxury? Unseasonable laughter, disorderly expressions,  
buffoonery fraught with perdition, unprofitable trifling, all  
the other things, which it is not seemly even to name. And  
these things thou doest when thou hast enjoyed the table of  
Christ, on that day, on which thou hast been counted worthy  
to touch his flesh with thy tongue. Whosoever thou art then,  
that those things be not so, do thou purify thy right hand,  
thy tongue, thy lips, which have become a threshold for  
Christ to tread upon. And when thou settest out a material  
table, raise thy mind to that Table, to the Supper of the  
Lord, to the vigil of the disciples, in that night, that holy  
night. Nay, rather should one accurately examine, this very  
present state is night. Let us watch then with the Lord, let  
us be pricked in our hearts with the disciples. It is the  
season of prayers, not of drunkenness; ever indeed, but especially  
during a festival. For a festival is therefore appointed,  
not that we may behave ourselves unseemly, not that we may  
accumulate sins, but that we may blot out rather those which  
exist.

Well: I know that I say these things in vain, yet will I  
not cease to say them. For if ye do not all obey, yet surely  
ye will not all disobey; or rather, even though ye should all  
be disobedient, my reward will be greater, though yours will  
be more condemnation. However, that it may not be more,  
to this end I will not cease to speak. For perchance, per-  
chance, by my perseverance I shall be able to reach you.

Wherefore I beseech you, that we do not this to condemna-  
tion, let us nourish Christ, let us give Him to drink, let us  
clothe Him. These things are worthy of that table. Hast

**HOMIL.** thou heard holy hymns? Hast thou seen a spiritual marriage?  
XXVII Hast thou enjoyed a royal Table? Hast thou been filled with the Holy Ghost? Hast thou joined in the quire of the Seraphim? Hast thou become partaker of the powers above? Cast not away so great a joy, waste not the treasure, bring not in drunkenness, the mother of dejection, the joy of the devil, the parent of ten thousand evils. For hence is sleep like unto death, and heaviness of head, and diseases, and obliviousness, and an image of dead men's condition. Further, if thou wouldest not choose to meet with a friend when intoxicated, when thou hast Christ within, durst thou, tell me, to thrust in upon Him so great excess?

But thou lovest enjoyment. Well then, on this very account I bid thee cease being drunken. For I too would have thee enjoy thyself, but with the real enjoyment, that which never fadeth. What then is the real enjoyment, ever blooming?

<sup>1 Ιερ' ἀρτοί.</sup> Invite Christ to sup<sup>1</sup> with thee: give Him to partake of thine, <sup>εἶτα τοιούτους:</sup> or rather of His own. This bringeth pleasure without limit, Rev. 2. 20. and in its prime everlasting. But the things of sense are not such; rather as soon as they appear they vanish away; and he that hath enjoyed them will be in no better condition than he who hath not, or rather in a worse. For the one is settled as it were in a harbour, but the other exposes himself to a kind of torrent, a besieging army of distempers, and hath not even any power to endure the first swell of the sea<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2 εἰς τὸν πόντον.</sup> That these things therefore be not so, let us follow after all moderation. For thus we shall both be in a good state of body, and we shall possess our souls in security, and shall be delivered from evils both present and future: from which may we all be delivered, and attain unto the kingdom, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, together with the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, and honour, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXVIII.

---

1 COR. xi. 28.

*But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread,  
and drink of that cup.*

WHAT mean these words, when another object is proposed to us? This is Paul's custom, as also I said before, not only to treat of those things which he had proposed to himself, but also if an argument, incidental to his purpose, occur, to proceed upon this also with great diligence, and especially when it relate to very necessary and urgent matters. Thus, when he was discoursing with married persons, and the question about the servants fell in his way, he handled it very strenuously and at great length. Again, when he was speaking of the duty of not going to law before those courts, then also having fallen upon the admonition respecting covetousness, he discoursed at length concerning this subject likewise. Now the same thing he hath also done here: in that, having once found occasion to remind them of the Mysteries, he judged it necessary to proceed with that subject. For indeed it was no ordinary one. Wherefore also he discoursed very awfully concerning it, providing for that which is the sum of all good things, viz. their approaching those Mysteries with a pure conscience. Whence neither was he content with the things said before alone, but adds these also, saying,

*But let a man examine himself:* which also he saith in the second Epistle: *prove yourselves, examine yourselves*<sup>1</sup>: <sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. <sup>13. 5.</sup> not as we do now, approaching because of the season rather than from any earnestness of mind. For we do not consider

**HOMIL. how we may approach prepared, with the ills that were xxviii. within us purged out, and full of compunction, but how we may come at festivals, and whenever all do so. But not thus did Paul bid us come: he knoweth only one season of access and communion, the purity of a man's conscience. Since if even that kind of banquet which the senses take cognizance of cannot be partaken of by us, when feverish and full of bad humours, without risk of perishing: much more is it unlawful for us to touch this Table with profane lusts, which are more grievous than fevers. Now when I say profane lusts, I mean both the desires of the body, and of money, and of anger, and of malice, and, in a word, all that are profane. And it becomes him that approacheth, first to empty himself of all these things, and so to touch that pure sacrifice. And neither, if indolently disposed and reluctantly, ought he to be compelled to approach by reason of the festival; nor, on the other hand, if penitent and prepared, should any one prevent him, because it is not a festival. For a festival is the shewing forth of good works, and reverence of soul, and exactness of conversation. And if thou hast these things, thou mayest at all times keep festival, and at all times approach. Wherefore he saith, *But let each man examine himself, and then let him approach.* And he bids not one examine another, but a man himself, making the tribunal not a public one, and the conviction without a witness.**

[2.] Ver. 29. *For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself.*

What sayest thou, tell me? Is this Table, which is the cause of so many blessings, and teeming with life, become condemnation? Not from its own nature, saith he, but from the will of him that approaches. For as His presence, which conveyed to us those great and unutterable blessings, condemned the more them that received it not: so also the <sup>1 ιφθιμα</sup> <sup>viaticata.</sup> **Mysteries become provisions<sup>1</sup> of greater punishment to such as partake unworthily.**

But why doth he eat condemnation to himself? *Not discerning the Lord's body:* i. e. not searching, not bearing in mind, as he ought, the greatness of the things set before him; not estimating the weight of the gift. For if thou shouldest

come to know accurately Who it is that lies before thee, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> and who He is that gives Himself, and to whom, thou <sup>11. 31.</sup> wilt need no other argument, but this is enough for thee to use all vigilance; unless thou shouldest be altogether fallen.

Ver. 30. *For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.*

Here he now no longer brings his examples from others, as he did in the case of the idol-sacrifices, relating the ancient histories, and the chastisements in the wilderness, but from the Corinthians themselves; which also made the discourse apt to strike them more keenly. For whereas he was saying, *he eateth condemnation to himself, and he is guilty;* that he might not seem to speak mere words, he points to deeds also, and calls themselves to witness; a kind of thing which comes home to men more than threatening, by the intimation it gives us of the threat having issued in some real fact. He was not however content with these things alone, but from these he also introduced and confirmed the argument concerning hell-fire, terrifying them in both ways; and solving an inquiry which goes the round of all places. I mean, since many question one with another, "whence arise the untimely deaths, whence the long diseases of men;" he tells them that these unexpected events are many of them conditional upon certain sins. "What then? They who are in continual health," say you, "and come to a green old age, do they not sin?" Nay, who durst say this? "How then," say you, "do they not suffer punishment?" Because there they shall suffer a severer one. But we, if we would, neither here, nor there, need suffer it. (2.)

Ver. 31. *For if we would judge ourselves, saith he, we should not be judged.*

And he said not, "if we punished ourselves, if we were revenged on ourselves," but only if we were willing to acknowledge our offences, to pass sentence on ourselves, to condemn the things done amiss, we should be rid of the punishment both in this world and the next. For he that condemns himself, propitiates God in two ways, both by acknowledging his sins, and by being more on his guard for the future. But since we are not willing to do even this light thing, as we

HOMIL. ought to do it, not even thus doth He endure to punish us XXVIII. with the world, but even after that spareth us, exacting punishment in this world, where the penalty is for a season, and the consolation great; for the result is both deliverance from sins, and a good hope of things to come, alleviating the present evils. And these things he saith, at the same time comforting the sick, and rendering the rest more serious. Wherefore he saith,

Ver. 32. *But now, when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord.*

He said not, we are punished, he said not, we have vengeance taken on us, but, *we are chastened*. For what is done belongs rather to admonition than condemnation, to healing than vengeance, to correction than punishment. And not so only, but also by the threat of a greater evil he makes the present light, saying, *that we may not be condemned with the world*. Seest thou how he brings in hell also, and that tremendous judgment-seat, and signifies that that trial and punishment is necessary, and by all means must be? For if the faithful, and such as God especially cares for, escape not without punishment in whatsoever things they offend, (and this is evident from things present,) much more the unbelieving, and they who commit the unpardonable and incurable sins.

[3.] Ver. 33. *Therefore when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.*

Thus, while their fear was yet at its height, and the terror of hell remained, he chooses again to bring in also the exhortation in behalf of the poor, on account of which he said all these things; implying that if they do not this, they must partake unworthily. But if the not imparting of our goods excludes from that table, much more the violently taking away. And he said not, "wherefore, when ye come together, impart to them that need," but, which has a more reverential sound, *tarry one for another*. For this also prepared the way for and intimated that, and with becoming decency introduced the exhortation. Then further to shame them,

Ver. 34. *And if any man hunger, let him eat at home.*

By permitting, he hinders it, and more strongly than by an absolute prohibition. For he brings him out of the church,

and sends him to his house, hereby severely reprimanding <sup>1 Cor.</sup> and ridiculing them, as slaves to the belly, and unable to <sup>11. 34.</sup> contain themselves. For he said not, “if any despise the poor,” but *if any hunger*, discoursing as with impatient children; as with brute beasts, which are slaves to appetite. Since it would be indeed very ridiculous, if, because they were hungry, they were to eat at home.

Yet he was not content with this, but added also another more fearful thing, saying, *that ye come not together unto condemnation*: that ye come not unto chastisement, unto punishment, insulting the Church, dishonouring your brother. “For for this cause ye come together,” saith he, “that ye may love one another, that ye may profit, and be profited. But if the contrary happen, it were better for you to feed yourselves at home.”

This, however, he said, that he might attract them to him the more. Yea, this was the very purpose both of his pointing out the injury that would arise from hence, and of his saying that condemnation was no trifling one, and terrifying them in every way, by the mysteries, by the sick, by those that had died, by the other things before mentioned.

Then also he alarms them again in another way, saying, *and the rest will I set in order when I come*: with reference either to some other things, or to this very matter. For since it was likely that they would yet have some reasons to allege, and it was not possible to set all to rights by letters, “the things which I have charged you, let them be observed for the present,” saith he; “but if ye have any thing else to mention, let it be kept for my coming;” speaking either of this matter, as I said, or of some other things not very urgent. And this he doth, that hence too he may render them more serious. For being anxious about his coming, they would correct the error. For the sojourning of Paul in any place was no ordinary thing: and to signify this he said, *some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you*<sup>1</sup>; and elsewhere <sup>1 Cor. 2. 11.</sup> again, *not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling*<sup>2</sup>. And therefore neither did he merely promise <sup>Phil. 2. 12.</sup> that he would come, lest they should disbelieve him, and become more negligent; but he also states a necessary cause

HOMIL. for his sojourning with them, saying, *the rest I will set in order when I come*; which implies, that the correction of the things that remained, even had he not in any case been desirous, would have drawn him thither.

(3.) [4.] Hearing therefore all these things, let us both take great care of the poor, and restrain our appetite, and rid ourselves of drunkenness, and be careful worthily to partake of the Mysteries; and whatsoever we suffer, let us not take it bitterly, neither for ourselves, nor for others; as when untimely deaths happen, or long diseases. For this is deliverance from punishment, this is correction, this is most excellent admonition. Who saith this? He that hath Christ speaking in him.

But nevertheless even after this many of our women are so foolishly disposed, as even to go beyond the unbelievers in the excess of their grief<sup>a</sup>. And some do this blinded by their passion, but others for ostentation, and to avoid the censures of them that are without: who most of all are deprived of all excuse, to my mind. For "lest such a one accuse me," saith she, "let God be my accuser: lest men more senseless than the brute beasts condemn me, but the law of the King of all be trampled under foot." Why, how many thunderbolts do not these sayings deserve?

<sup>1</sup> ~~wigdū.~~ Again; If any one invite you to a funeral supper<sup>1</sup> after your affliction, shall there be no one to say any thing against it, because there is a law of men which enjoins such things: but when God by His law forbids your mourning, do ye all thus contradict it? Doth not Job come into thy mind, O woman? Rememberest thou not his words at the misfortune of his children, which adorned that holy head more than ten thousand crowns, and made proclamation louder than many trumpets? Dost thou make no account of the greatness of his misfortunes, of that unprecedented shipwreck, and that strange and portentous tragedy? For thou possibly hast lost one, or a second, or third: but he so many sons and daughters: and he that had many children suddenly became childless. And not even by degrees were his bowels wasted away: but at one sweep all the fruit of his body was

<sup>a</sup> For the sentiments of Christian see S. Cyprian, *De Mortalitate*, c. 15, antiquity about mourning at funerals, 16.

snatched from him. Nor was it by the common law of nature, <sup>1 Cor. 11. 34.</sup> when they had come to old age, but by a death both untimely and violent: and all together, and when he was not present, nor sitting by them, that at least by hearing their last words he might have some consolation for so bitter an end of theirs: but contrary to all expectation, and without his knowing any thing of what took place, they were all at once overwhelmed, and their house became their grave and their snare.

And not only their untimely death, but many things too besides there were to grieve him; such as their being all in the flower of their age, all virtuous, and loving, all together, that not one of either sex was left, that it befel them not by the common law of nature, that it came after so great a loss, that when he was unconscious of any sin on his own part or on theirs, he suffered these things. For each of these circumstances is enough even by itself to disturb the mind: but when we find them even concurring together, imagine the height of those waves, how great the excess of that storm. And what in particular is greater and worse than his bereavement, he did not even know wherefore all these things happened. On this account then, having no cause to assign for the misfortune, he ascends to the good pleasure of God, and saith, *The Lord gave, the Lord hath taken away*: as it pleased the Lord, even so it happened: *blessed be the name of the Lord for ever*<sup>1</sup>. And these things he said, when he <sup>1 Job 11. 21,</sup> saw himself who had followed after all virtue in the last extremity; but evil men and seducers, prospering, luxurious, pampered on all sides. And he uttered no such word, as it is likely that some of the weaker sort would have uttered, “Was it for this that I brought up my children, and trained them with all exactness? For this did I open my house to all who passed by, that after those many courses run in behalf of the needy, the naked, the orphans, I might receive this recompence?” But instead of these, he offered up those words better than all sacrifice, saying, *Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither*. If however he rent his clothes, and shaved his head, marvel not. For he was a father, and a loving father: and it was meet that both the compassion of his nature should be shewn, and also the self-command of his spirit. Whereas, had he not done

HOMIL. this, perhaps one would have thought this self-command to be of mere insensibility. Therefore he indicates both his natural affection and the exactness of his piety, and in his grief he was not overthrown.

<sup>1</sup> Job

11. 10.

[5.] Yea, and when his trial proceeded further, he is again adorned with other crowns on account of his reply to his wife, saying, *If we have received good at the hand of the Lord, shall we not endure evil?*<sup>1</sup> For in fact his wife was by this time the only one left, all his having been clean destroyed, both his children, and his possessions, and his very body, and she reserved to tempt and to ensnare him. And this indeed was the cause, why the devil did not destroy her with the children, nor asked her death, because he expected that she would contribute much towards the ensnaring that holy man. Therefore he left her as a kind of implement, and a formidable one, for himself. "For if even out of paradise," saith he, "I cast mankind by her means, much more shall I be able to trip him up on the dunghill."

(4.) And observe his craft. He did not apply this stratagem when the oxen or the asses, or the camels, nor even when the house fell, and the children were buried under it, but so long looking on the combatant, he suffers her to be silent and quiet. But when the fountain of worms gushed forth, when the skin began to putrify and drop off, and the flesh wasting away to omit an ulcerous and most offensive discharge, and the hand of the devil was wearing him out with sharper pain than gridirons, and furnaces, and any flame, consuming on every side, and eating away his body more grievously than any wild beast, and when a long time had been spent in this misery<sup>c</sup>; then he brings her to him, by this time seasoned<sup>2</sup> and worn down. Whereas if she had approached him at the beginning of his misfortune, neither Conf. <sup>χειρισθη</sup> Aesch. would she have found him so unnerved, nor would she have Choeph. had it in her power so to swell out and exaggerate the misfortune by her words. But now when she saw him, through the length of time, thirsting for release, and desiring the termination of what pressed on him, vehemently then doth she come upon him. For to shew that he was quite worn down, and by this time had become unable even to draw

<sup>2</sup> *τεταρτη*

<sup>χειρισθη</sup>

Conf.

Aesch.

Choeph.

294.

<sup>c</sup> The LXX begin Job ii. 9. with "After a long time had passed."

breath, yea, and desired even to die, hear what he saith; <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
“ For I would I could lay hands on myself, or could request <sup>11. 34.</sup> another to do it: I would even do this.” And observe, I pray, the wickedness of his wife, from what topic she at once begins; namely, from the length of time, saying, *How long wilt thou hold out?*<sup>d</sup>

Now, if often, even when there were no realities, words alone have prevailed to unman a person, consider what it was likely he then should feel, when, besides these words, the things themselves also were galling him; and what, as it should seem, was worst of all, it was a wife also who spake thus, and a wife who had sunk down utterly, and was giving herself up, and on this account was seeking to cast him also into desperation. However, that we may see more clearly the enquiry which was brought against that adamantine wall, let us listen to the very words. What then are these? *How long wilt thou hold out? saying, Lo! I wait a short time longer, expecting the hope of my salvation.* “ Nay,” saith she, “ the time hath exposed the folly of thy words, while it is protracted, yet shews no mode of escape.” And these things she said, not only thrusting him into desperation, but also reproaching and jesting upon him.

For he, ever consoling her as she pressed upon him, and putting her off, would speak as follows: “ Wait a little longer, and there will soon be an end of these things.” Reproaching him therefore, she speaks: “ Wilt thou now again say the same thing? For a long time hath now run by, and no end of these things hath appeared.” And observe her malice, that she makes no mention of the oxen, the sheep, or the camels, as knowing that he was not very much vexed about these; but she goes at once to nature, and reminds him of his children. For on their death she saw him both rending his clothes, and shaving off his hair.

<sup>d</sup> Job ii. 9. where, according to the LXX, the speech of Job's wife stands as follows: “ How long wilt thou be patient, saying, Lo, let me endure yet a little while, awaiting the hope of my salvation? For behold, thy memorial is vanished from the earth, even sons and daughters, the throes and labours of my womb, for whom I have wearied

myself in vain with toils: and thou thyself in corruption of worms sittest all night in the open air, while I am a wanderer and a servant, from place to place, and from house to house, expecting the sun when it will set, that I may rest from my labours and the pains which now straiten me: but say some word against the Lord, and die.”

HOMIL. And she said not, “thy children are dead,” but very pathetically, *thy memorial is perished from the earth*, “the thing for which thy children were desirable.” For if, even now, after that the resurrection hath been made known, children are therefore longed for because they preserve the memory of the departed; much more then. Wherefore also her curse becomes from that consideration more bitter. For in that case, he that cursed, said not, “Let his children be utterly rooted out,” but “his memorial from the earth.” *Thy sons, and thy daughters.* Thus whereas she said, *the memorial*, she again accurately makes mention of either sex. “But if thou,” saith she, “carest not for these, at least consider what is mine.” *The pains of my womb, and labours, which I have endured in vain with sorrow.* Now what she means is this: “I, who endured the more, am wronged for thy sake, and having undergone the toils, I am deprived of the fruits.”

And see how she neither makes express mention of his loss of property, nor is silent about it, and hurries it by; but in that point of view in which it also might be most pathetically narrated, in that she covertly refers to it. For when she says, *I too am a vagabond and a slave, going about from place to place, from house to house*, she both hints at the loss, and indicates her great distress: these expressions being such as even to enhance that misfortune. “For I come to the doors of others,” saith she; “nor do I beg only, but am a wanderer also, and serve a strange and unusual servitude, going round every where, and carrying about the tokens of my calamity, and teaching all men of my woes;” which is most piteous of all, to change house after house. And she stayed not even at these lamentations, but proceeded to say, *Waiting for the sun when it will set, and I shall rest from my miseries, and the pains that encompass me, by which I am now straitened.* “Thus, that which is sweet to others,” saith she, “to behold ~~the~~ light, this to me is grievous: but the night and the darkness is a desirable thing. For this only gives me rest from my toils, this becometh a comfort to my miseries. *But speak somewhat against the Lord, and die.*” Perceivest thou here too her crafty wickedness? how she did not even in the act of advising at once

(5.)

introduce the deadly counsel, but having first pitifully related <sup>1 Cor.</sup> her misfortunes, and having drawn out the tragedy at length, <sup>11. 34.</sup> she couches in few words what she would recommend, and doth not even declare it plainly, but throwing a shade over that, she holds out to him the deliverance which he greatly longed for, and promises death, the thing which he then most of all desired.

And mark from this also the malice of the devil: that because he knew the desire of Job towards God, he suffers not his wife to accuse God, lest he should at once turn away from her as an enemy. For this cause she no where mentions Him, but the actual calamities she is continually harping on.

And do thou, besides what hath been said, add the circumstance, that it was a woman who gave this counsel, a wonderful orator to beguile the heedless. Many at least even without external accidents, have been cast down by the counsel of women alone.

[6.] What then did this blessed saint, and firmer than adamant? Looking bitterly upon her, by his aspect even before he spake, he repelled her devices: since she no doubt expected that she should excite fountains of tears; but he became fiercer than a lion, full of wrath and indignation, not on account of his sufferings, but on account of her diabolical suggestions; and having signified his anger by his looks, in a subdued tone he gives his rebuke; for even in misfortunes he kept his self-command. And what saith he? *Why speakest thou as one of the foolish women?* “I have not so taught thee,” saith he, “I did not so nurture thee; and this is why I do not now recognize even mine own consort. For these words are the counsel of a *foolish woman*, and of one beside herself.” Seest thou not here an instance of wounding in moderation, and inflicting a blow just sufficient to cure the disease?

Then, after the infliction, he brings in advice sufficient on the other hand to console her, and very rational, thus speaking; *if we have received our good things at the hand of the Lord, shall we not endure our evils?* “For remember,” saith he, “those former things, and make account of the Author of them, and thou wilt bear even these nobly.” Seest thou the chastened spirit of the man? that he doth not at all impute his

HOMIL. patience to his own courage, but saith it was part of the xxviii. natural result of what happened. “ For in return for what did God give us these former things? What recompense did he repay? None, but from mere goodness. For they were a gift, not a recompense; a grace, not a reward. Well then, let us bear these also nobly.”

This discourse let us, both men and women, have written on our hearts, and let us engrave the words in our minds, <sup>1</sup> μαθητῶν, both these and those before them: and by sketching upon μάτων, Savile: our minds as in picture the history of his sufferings<sup>1</sup>, I mean μαθητῶν, the loss of his wealth, the bereavement of his children, the Bened. disease of his body, the reproaches, the mockings, the devices of his wife, the snare of the devil, in a word, all the calamities of that righteous man, and that with exactness, let us provide ourselves with a most ample port of refuge: that, enduring all things nobly and thankfully, we may both in the present life cast off all despondency, and receive the rewards that belong to this good way of taking things<sup>2</sup>; by the grace and mercy <sup>2</sup> τρόπων, of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom, to the Father, with ταῦτα. “ this the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now and for way of ever, and world without end. Amen.

<sup>using</sup>  
<sup>well-</sup>  
<sup>omened</sup>  
words.”

## HOMILY XXIX.

---

1 COR. xii. 1, 2.

*Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.*

THIS whole place is very obscure: but the obscurity is produced by our ignorance of the facts referred to, and by their cessation, being such as then used to occur, but now no longer take place. And why do they not happen now? Why look now, the cause too of the obscurity hath produced us again another question: namely, why did they then happen, and now do so no more?

This however let us defer to another time, but for the present let us state what things were occurring then. Well: what did happen then? Whoever was baptized, he straightway spake with tongues, and not with tongues only, but many also prophesied, and some also performed many other wonderful works. For since on their coming over from idols, without any clear knowledge, or training in the ancient Scriptures, they at once on their baptism received the Spirit, yet the Spirit they saw not, for It is invisible; therefore God's grace bestowed some sensible proof of that energy. And one straightway spake in the Persian, another in the Roman, another in the Indian, another in some other such tongue: and this made manifest to them that were without that it is the Spirit in the very person speaking. Wherefore also he so calls it, saying, <sup>1</sup>*But the Manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal;* calling the gifts *a manifestation of the Spirit.* For as the Apostles themselves had received this sign first, so also the faithful went on receiving it, I mean the gift of tongues; yet not this only, but also many others: inasmuch as many used even to raise the dead, and to cast out devils, and to perform many

HOMIL. other such wonders: and they had gifts too, some less, and XXIX. some more. But more abundant than all was the gift of tongues among them: and this became to them a cause of division; not from its own nature, but from the perverseness of them that had received it: in that on the one hand the possessors of the greater gifts were lifted up against them that had the lesser: and these again were grieved, and envied the owners of the greater. And Paul himself as he proceeds intimates this.

Since then herefrom they were receiving a fatal blow, in the dissolution of their charity, he takes great care to correct it. For this happened indeed in Rome also, but not in the same way. And this is why in the Epistle to the Romans also he moots it indeed, but obscurely and briefly, saying thus: *For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office; so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or he that teacheth, on teaching<sup>1</sup>.*

<sup>1 Rom.</sup> <sup>12.4—8.</sup> And that the Romans also were falling into wilfulness hereby, this he intimates in the beginning of that discourse, thus saying: *For I say through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith<sup>2</sup>.* With these, however, (for the disease of division and pride had not proceeded to any length,) he thus discoursed: but here with great anxiety; for the distemper had greatly spread.

And this was not the only thing to disturb them, but there were also in the place many soothsayers, inasmuch as the city was more than usually addicted to Grecian customs, and this with the rest was tending to offence and disturbance among them. This is the reason why he begins by first stating the difference between soothsaying and prophecy. For this cause also they received discerning of spirits, so as to discern and know, which is he that speaketh by a pure spirit, and which by an impure.

For because it was not possible to supply the evidence of

the things uttered from within themselves at the moment; (for 1 Cor. prophecy supplies the proof of its own truth not at the time 12. 2. when it is spoken, but at the time of the event;) and it was not easy to distinguish it, and to discern the true prophesier from the pretender; (for the devil himself, accursed as he is, had entered into them that prophesied<sup>1</sup>, bringing in false <sup>1 See</sup> prophets, as if forsooth they also could foretel things to come; <sup>1 Kings</sup> 22. 23. and further, found it moreover easy to deceive them, because the things spoken could not for the present be brought to trial, ere yet the events had come to pass concerning which the prophecy was; (for it was the end that proved the false prophet and the true:)—in order that the hearers might not be deceived, no, not before the end, he gives them a sign, which even before the event served to indicate the one and the other. And hence taking his order and beginning, he thus goes on also to the discourse concerning the gifts, and corrects the contentiousness that arose from hence likewise. For the present however he begins the discourse concerning the soothsayers, thus saying,

[2.] *Now concerning the spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant;* calling the signs *spiritual*, because they are the works of the Spirit alone, human care contributing nothing to the working such wonders. And intending to discourse concerning them, first, as I said, he lays down the difference between soothsaying and prophecy, thus saying,

*Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were dragged away<sup>2</sup>.* Now what he <sup>means</sup> means is this: “In the idol-temples,” saith he, “if any were <sup>“\*\*\*”</sup> at any time possessed by an unclean spirit and began to divine, “dragged even as one dragged away, so was he drawn by that spirit in <sup>“\*\*\*”</sup> prison or chains; knowing nothing of the things which he utters. For <sup>“\*\*\*”</sup> execution.” this is peculiar to the soothsayer, to be beside himself, to be under compulsion, to be pushed, dragged, haled as a madman. But the prophet not so, but with sober mind, and composed temper, and knowing what he is saying, he uttereth all things. Therefore even before the event do thou first from this distinguish the soothsayer and the prophet. And consider how he frees his discourse of all suspicion; calling themselves to witness who had made trial of the matter. As if he had said, “that I lie not, nor rashly traduce the religion of the

**HOMIL.** Gentiles, feigning like an enemy, do ye yourselves bear me  
**XXIX.** witness : knowing as ye do, when ye were Gentiles, how ye  
 were pulled and dragged away then."

But if any should say, that these too are suspected, as believers, come, even from them that are without will I make this  
<sup>1</sup> *Apol.* manifest to you. Hear, for example, Plato saying thus<sup>1</sup>: "Even  
*Soc. c. 7.* as they who deliver oracles, and the soothsayers, say many and excellent things, but know nothing of what they utter." Hear again another, a poet, giving the same intimation. For whereas by certain mystical rites and witchcrafts a certain person had imprisoned a demon in a man, and the man divined, and in his divination was thrown down, and torn, and was unable to endure the violence of the demon, but was on the point of perishing in that convulsion ; he saith to the persons who were practising such mystical arts\*,

Loose me, I pray you ;  
 The mighty God no longer mortal flesh  
 Can hold.

And again,

Unbind my wreaths, and bathe my feet in drops  
 From the pure stream ; erase these mystic lines<sup>b</sup>,  
 And let me go.

For these and such like things, (for one might mention many more,) point out to us both of these facts which follow ; the compulsion which holds down the demons and makes them slaves ; and the violence to which they submit, who have once given themselves up to them, so as to swerve even from their natural reason. And the Pythoness too<sup>c</sup> : (for I am compelled now to bring forward and expose another disgraceful custom of theirs, which it were well to pass by, because it is unseemly for us to mention such things ; but that you may more clearly know their shame, it is necessary to mention it, that hence at least ye may come to know the madness and exceeding mockery of those that make use of the soothsayers:) this

\* These verses are taken from an old Oracle, quoted among others by Porphyry in a Treatise of the *Philosophy of Oracles*, and from him again by Theodoret on the *Remedies for Gentile Errors*, Disp. x. t. iv. p. 957. pt. ii. p. 278. is as follows : " You see, he bids them erase the lines, that he may depart : as though these detained him, and not only these, but the other things too about their apparel : because they wore certain portraiture of the deities who were invoked."

<sup>b</sup> Porphyry's note on this verse, as quoted by Hales from Eusebius (Evang. Prep. v.) in Savile's Chrysostom, viii.

<sup>c</sup> See Strabo, ix. 5.

same Pythoness then is said, being a female, to sit at times <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
12. 1, 2. upon the tripod of Apollo astride, and thus the evil spirit ascending from beneath, and entering the lower part of her body, fills the woman with madness, and she with dishevelled hair begins to play the bacchanal, and to foam at the mouth, and thus being in a frenzy, to utter the words of her madness. I know that you are ashamed and blush when you hear these things: but they glory in both; in the disgrace and in the madness which I have described. These then and all such <sup>(2.)</sup> things Paul was exagitating when he said, *Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.*

And because he was discoursing with those who knew well, he states not all things with exact care, not wishing to be troublesome to them, but having reminded them only, and brought all into their recollection, he soon quits the point, hastening to the subject before him.

But what is, *unto these dumb idols?* These soothsayers used to be led and dragged unto them.

But if they be themselves dumb, how did they make use of the diviners? And wherefore did the demon lead them to the images? As men taken in war, and in chains, and rendering at the same time his deceit plausible. Thus, to keep men from the notion that it was just a dumb stone, they were earnest to rivet the people to the idols, that their own style and title might be inscribed upon them. But our rites are not such. He did not however state ours, I mean the prophesyings. For it was all well known to them, and prophecy was exercised among them, as was meet for their condition, with understanding and with entire freedom. Wherefore, you see, they had power either to speak or to refrain from speaking. For they were not bound by necessity, but were honoured with a privilege. For this cause Jonah fled<sup>1</sup>; for this cause Ezekiel<sup>1 Jonah 1. 3.</sup> delayed<sup>2</sup>; for this cause Jeremiah excused himself<sup>3</sup>. And <sup>2 Ezeb.</sup> God thrusts them not on by compulsion, but advising,<sup>3. 15.</sup> exhorting, threatening; not darkening their mind; for to <sup>6</sup> cause distraction and madness and great darkness, is the proper work of a demon: but it is God's work, to illuminate, and with consideration to teach things needful.

HOMIL. [3.] This then is the first difference between a soothsayer,  
XXIX. and a prophet; but a second and a different one is that which  
 he next states, saying,

Ver. 3. *Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and then another: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.*

“ When thou seest,” saith he, “ any one not uttering His Name, or anathematizing Him, he is a soothsayer. Again, when thou seest another speaking all things with His Name, understand that he is spiritual.” “ What then,” say you, “ must we say concerning the Catechumens? For if *no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost*, what must we say of them, who name indeed His Name, but are destitute of His Spirit<sup>e</sup>? ” But his discourse at this time was not concerning these, for there were not at that time Catechumens, but concerning believers and unbelievers.

What then, doth no demon call upon God’s Name? Did not the demoniacs say, *We know Thee who Thou art, the Holy One of God*<sup>1</sup>? Did not they say to Paul, *these men are the servants of the Most High God*<sup>2</sup>? They did, but upon scourging, upon compulsion; never of their own will, and without being scourged.

But here it is proper to enquire, both why the demon uttered these things, and why Paul rebuked him. In imitation of his Teacher; for so Christ did also rebuke: since it was not his will to have testimony from them. And wherefore did the devil also practise this? Intending to confound the order of things, and to seize upon the dignity of the Apostles, and to persuade many to pay attention to them<sup>3</sup>: in marg. which had it happened, they would easily have made themselves appear from hence worthy of credit, and have brought in their own designs. That these things then might not be, and the deceit might not have a beginning, he stops their mouths even when speaking the truth, so that in their falsehoods none should at all give heed unto them, but

<sup>1</sup> Sav. in marg. reads *αὐτοῖς*.  
<sup>2</sup> Bened. *αὐτῷ*.  
<sup>e</sup> So St. Austin, Tract. 11. on St. John: “ Inasmuch as the Catechumens have the sign of the Cross in their forehead, they now belong to the Great

House: but let them from servants become sons;” alluding to Gal. 4. 6, 7; ap. Bingham, i. 3. 3.

should stop their ears altogether against the things said by 1 Cor. 12. 4. 5.

[4.] Having therefore made manifest the soothsayers and the prophets both by the first sign, and also by the second, he next discourses of the wonders; not passing without reason to this topic, but so as to remove the dissension which had arisen from hence, and to persuade both those that had the less portion not to grieve, and those who had the greater not to be elated. Wherefore also he thus began.

Ver. 4. *Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.*

And first he attends on him that had the lesser gift, and was grieved on this account. "For wherefore," saith he, "art thou dejected? because thou hast not received as much as another?" Still, consider that it is a free gift, and not a debt, and thou wilt be able to soothe thy pain." For this cause he spake thus in the very beginning: *but there are diversities of gifts.* And he said not "of signs," nor "of wonders," but *of gifts*, by the name of free gifts prevailing on them not only not to grieve, but even to be thankful. "And withal consider this also," saith he, "that even if thou art made inferior in the measure of what is given; in that it hath been vouchsafed thee to receive from the same source, as the other who hath received more, thou hast equal honour. For certainly thou canst not say, that the Spirit bestowed the gift on him, but an angel on thee: since the Spirit bestowed it both on thee and him. Wherefore he added, *but the same Spirit.* So that even if there be a difference in the gift, yet is there no difference in the Giver. For from the same Fountain ye are drawing, both thou and he. (3.)

Ver. 5. *And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.*

Thus, enriching the consolation, he adds mention of the Son also, and of the Father. And again, he calls these gifts by another name, designing by this also an increase of consolation. Wherefore also he thus said: *there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.* For he that hears of *a gift*, and hath received a less share, perhaps might grieve: but when we speak of *an administration*, the case is different.

THE BIBLE

A NEW TRANSLATION

402 Meaning of the Term, Manifestation of the Spirit :

HOMIL. For the thing implies labour, and sweat. "Why grievest thou then," saith he, "if he hath bidden another labour more, sparing thee?"

Ver. 6. *And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all.*

Ver. 7. *But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.*

"And what," saith one, "is *an operation*? and what, *a gift*? and what, *an administration*?" They are mere differences of names, since the things are the same. For what a *gift* is, that is *an administration*, that he calls *an operation* also. Thus, *make full proof*, saith he, of *thine administration*.

<sup>1</sup> 2 Tim. ~~tion~~<sup>1</sup>: and, *I magnify mine administration*<sup>2</sup>: and writing  
<sup>4. 5. mi-</sup> to Timothy, he says, *Therefore I put thee in remem-*

<sup>2</sup> Rom. ~~office~~<sup>3</sup>. *brace that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee*<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Tim. <sup>11. 13.</sup> And again, writing to the Galatians, he said, *for he that*

<sup>4</sup> 1. 6. *wrought in Peter to the Apostleship, the same was mighty in*

<sup>4</sup> Gal. <sup>2. 8.</sup> *me toward the Gentiles*<sup>4</sup>. Seest thou, that he implies there

<sup>5</sup> ~~and~~ <sup>5. 10.</sup> being no difference in the gifts of the Father, and the Son,

~~and the Holy Ghost?~~ Not confounding<sup>5</sup> the Persons, God

<sup>thus</sup> <sup>ordains</sup> <sup>forbid!</sup> but declaring the equal honour of the Essence. For

<sup>per.</sup> that which the Spirit bestows, this he saith that God also

works; this, that the Son likewise ordains and grants.

Yet surely if the one were inferior to the other, or the other to it, he would not have thus set it down, nor would this

have been his way of consoling the person who was vexed.

[5.] Now after this, he comforts him also in another kind of way; by the consideration that the measure vouchsafed is profitable to him, even though it be not so large. For having said, that it is *the same Spirit*, and *the same Lord*, and *the same God*, and having thereby recovered him, he brings in again another consolation, thus saying, *but the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.* For lest one should say, "what if there be the same Lord, the same Spirit, the same God? yet I have received less:" he saith, that thus it was profitable.

But by *the manifestation of the Spirit*, he denotes the miracles; with evident reason. For to me who am a believer, he that hath the Spirit is manifest from his having been baptized: but to the unbeliever this will in no

wise be manifest, except from the miracles: so that hence <sup>1 Cor.</sup> also again there is no small consolation. For though there <sup>12. 11.</sup> be a difference of gifts, yet the evidence is one: since whether thou hast much, or little, thou art equally manifest. So that if thou desirest to shew this, that thou hast the Spirit, thou hast a sufficient demonstration.

Wherefore, now that both the Giver is one, and the thing given a pure favour, and the manifestation takes place thereby, and this is more profitable for thee; grieve not as if despised. For not to dishonour thee hath God done it, nor to declare thee inferior to another, but to spare thee, and with a view to thy welfare. To receive more than one has ability to bear, this rather is unprofitable, and injurious, and a fit cause of dejection.

Ver. 8. *For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit;*

Ver. 9. *To another faith by the same Spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit.*

Seest thou how he every where makes this addition, saying, *by the same Spirit, and according to the same Spirit?* For he knew that the comfort from thence was great.

Ver. 10. *To another the working of miracles; to another prophecies; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues.*

Thus, since they boasted themselves in this, therefore he placed it last, and added,

Ver. 11. *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit.*

The universal medicine in which his consolation consists is, that out of the same root, out of the same treasures, out of the same streams, they all receive. And accordingly, from time to time fomenting<sup>1</sup> by this expression the apparent <sup>ineq.</sup> inequality, he places them on a level and consoles them. <sup>cons.</sup> And above indeed he points out both the Spirit, and the Son, and the Father, as supplying the gifts, but here he was content to name the Spirit, that even hence again thou mayest understand their dignity to be the same.

But what is *the word of wisdom?* That which Paul had, which John had, the son of thunder.

**HOMIL. XXIX.** And what is *the word of knowledge?* That which most of the faithful had, possessing indeed knowledge, but not there-upon able to teach, nor easily to convey to another what they knew.

*And to another, faith:* not meaning by this faith the faith of doctrines, but the faith of miracles; concerning which Christ saith, *If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye*

<sup>1 S.Mat.</sup> shall say to this mountain, Remove, and it shall remove<sup>1</sup>.  
17. 20.

And the Apostles too concerning this besought Him, saying,

<sup>2 S.Luke</sup> Increase our faith<sup>2</sup>: for this is the mother of the miracles.

17. 5. But to possess the power of working miracles, and gifts of healing, is not the same thing: for he that had a gift of healing, used only to do cures: but he that possessed powers for working miracles, used to punish also. For a miracle is not the healing only, but the punishing also: even as Paul inflicted blindness: as Peter slew.

*To another prophecies; to another discerning of spirits.* What is, *discerning of spirits?* the knowing who is spiritual,

<sup>3 1Thes.</sup> and who is not: who is a prophet, and who a deceiver: as 5. 20, 21. he said to the Thessalonians, *despise not prophesying<sup>3</sup>: but*  
<sup>4 δοκιμα-</sup> *ζορις; proving<sup>4</sup> all things, hold fast that which is good.* For great  
rec. text was at that time the corruption<sup>5</sup> of the false prophets, the  
<sup>δοκιμά-</sup> *devil striving underhand to substitute falsehood for the truth.*

<sup>5 Savile</sup> *To another divers kinds of tongues; to another interpretation of tongues.* For one person knew what he spake himself,  
“vari-  
ety.”  
(4.) but was unable to interpret to another; while another had

acquired both these, or the other of the two. Now this seemed to be a great gift, because both the Apostles received it first, and the most among the Corinthians had obtained it. But the word of doctrine not so. Wherefore that he places first, but this last: for this was on account of that, and so indeed were all the rest; both prophecies, and working of miracles, and divers kinds of tongues, and interpretation of tongues. For none is equal to this. Wherefore also he said, *Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and*

<sup>6 1 Tim.</sup> *doctrine<sup>6</sup>.* And to Timothy he wrote, saying, Give attendance  
5. 17. to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine; neglect not the gift

<sup>7 1 Tim.</sup> *that is in thee<sup>7</sup>.* Seest thou how he calls it also a gift?  
4. 13, 14. [6.] Next, the comfort which he before gave, when he said,

*the same Spirit*, this also he here sets before us, saying, *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.* And he not only gives consolation, but also stops the mouth of the gainsayer, saying here, *dividing to every man severally as he will.* For it was necessary to bind<sup>1</sup> up also, not to heal only, as he doth also<sup>1</sup> ~~heal~~<sup>pur.</sup> in the Epistle to the Romans, when he saith, *But who art thou that repliest against God?*<sup>2</sup> So likewise here, *dividing to every man severally as he will.*

And that which was of the Father, this he signifieth to be of the Spirit also. For as concerning the Father, he saith, *but it is the same God which worketh all in all;* so also concerning the Spirit, *but all these things worketh one and the self-same Spirit.* But<sup>a</sup> it will be said, “He doth it, actuated by God.” Nay, he no where said this, but thou feignest it. For when he saith, *who actuateth<sup>3</sup> all in all*, he saith this concerning men: <sup>3 inqyū,</sup> thou wilt hardly say, that among those men he numbers also<sup>“work-  
eth.”</sup> the Spirit, though thou shouldest be ever so manifold in thy doting and madness. Yea, because he had said, *by the Spirit*, that thou mightest not suppose this word, *by*, to denote inferiority, or the being actuated, he adds, that *the Spirit worketh*, not “is worked<sup>4</sup>,” and worketh *as he will*,<sup>4 inqyū,</sup> not as he is bidden. For as concerning the Father, the Son<sup>5 inqyū.</sup> saith, that *He raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth*; in like manner also, concerning Himself, that *He quickeneth whom He will<sup>5</sup>:* thus also of the Spirit, in another place, that He<sup>5 S. John 21.</sup> doeth all things with authority, and that there is nothing that hinders Him; (for the expression, *bloweth where it listeth*,<sup>6 S. John 3. 8.</sup> though it be spoken of the wind, is yet apt to establish this;) but here, that *He worketh all things as He will.* And from another place too learn that He is not one of the things actuated, but of those that actuate. *For who knoweth, says he, the things of a man, but the spirit of the man?* even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.<sup>7 1 Cor. 2. 11.</sup> Now that *the spirit of a man*, i. e. the soul, requires not to be actuated, that it may know the things of itself, is, I suppose, evident to every one. Therefore neither doth the Holy Ghost,

<sup>a</sup> In this and other places of this Homily, S. Chrysostom seems to have had in view the controversy, then recent, with the Macedonians, who denied the Divinity of the Holy Spirit.

HOMIL. that he may *know the things of God*. For his meaning is  
XXIX. like this, “*the secret things of God* are known to the Holy Spirit, as to the soul of man the secret things of herself.” But if this be not actuated for that end, much less would That which knoweth the depths of God, and needs no actuation for that knowledge, require any actuating Power in order to the giving gifts to the Apostles.

But besides these things, that also, which I before spake of, I will mention again now. What then is this? That if the Spirit were inferior, and of another substance, there would have been no avail in his consolation, nor in our hearing the words, *of the same Spirit*. For he who hath received from the king, I grant, may find it a very soothing circumstance, that he himself gave to him; but if it be from the slave, he is then rather vexed, when one offers the favour to him. So that even hence is it evident, that the Holy Spirit is not of the substance of the servant, but of the King.

[7.] Wherefore as he comforted them, when he said, that *there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord; and diversities of operations, but the same God*; so also when he said above, *there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit*; and after this again when he said, *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.*

“Let us not, I pray you, bewilder ourselves,” saith he; “neither let us grieve, saying, ‘Why have I received this, and not received that?’ neither let us demand an account of the Holy Spirit. For if thou knowest that he vouchsafed it from providential care, consider that from the same care he hath given also the measure of it, and be content, and rejoice in what thou hast received: but murmur not at what thou hast not received; yea rather, confess God’s favour, that thou hast not received things beyond thy power.

(5.) And if in spiritual things one ought not to be overcurious, much more in temporal things; but to be quiet, and not nicely enquire why one is rich and another poor. For, first of all, not every single rich man is rich from God, but many even of unrighteousness, and rapine, and avarice. For he that forbade to be rich, how can he have granted that which he forbade to receive?

But that I may, far above what the case requires, stop the <sup>1 Cor.</sup> mouths of those who concerning these things gainsay us, <sup>12. 11.</sup> come, let us carry our discourse higher up, to the time when riches used to be given by God; and answer me. Wherefore was Abraham rich, whereas Jacob wanted even bread? Were not both the one and the other righteous? Doth he not say concerning the three alike, *I am the God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob*<sup>1</sup>? Wherefore then was the one<sup>1</sup> <sup>Exod.</sup> a rich man, and the other a hired servant? Or rather why was Esau rich, who was unrighteous, and a murderer of his brother, while Jacob was in bondage for so long a time? Wherefore again did Isaac live in ease all his time, but Jacob in toils and miseries? For which cause also he said, *Few and evil are my days*<sup>2</sup>. <sup>3. Gen. 47. 9.</sup>

Wherefore did David, who was both a prophet and a king, himself also live all his time in toils; whereas Solomon his son spent forty years in security above all men, in the enjoyment of profound peace, glory, and honour, and going through every kind of deliciousness? What again could be the reason that among the prophets also one was afflicted more, and another less? Because so it was expedient for each. Wherefore upon each our remark must be, *Thy judgments are a great deep*<sup>3</sup>. For if those great<sup>3</sup> <sup>Ps. 36.</sup> and wonderful men were not alike exercised by God, but one by poverty, and another by riches; one by ease, and another by trouble; much more ought we now to bear these things in mind.

[8.] But besides this, it becomes one to consider also, that many of the things which happen, do not take place according to His mind, but arise from our wickedness. Say not then, "Why is one man rich who is wicked, and another poor who is righteous?" For first of all, one may give an account of these things also, and say, that neither doth the righteous receive any harm from his poverty, nay, even a greater addition of honour; and that the bad man in his riches possesseth but a store of punishment on his future road, unless he be changed: and, even before punishment, oftentimes his riches become to him the cause of many evils, and lead him into ten thousand pitfalls. But God permits it, at

**HOMIL. XXIX.** the same time to signify the free choice of the will, and also to teach all others not to be mad nor rave after money.

"How is it then, when a man being wicked is rich, and suffers nothing dreadful?" say you. "Since if being good he hath wealth, he hath it justly: but if bad, what shall we say?" That even therein he is to be pitied. For wealth added to wickedness aggravates the mischief. But is he a good man, and poor? Yet is he nothing injured. Is he then a bad man, and poor? Then is he so justly and by desert, or rather even with advantage to himself. "But such an one," say you, received his riches from his ancestors, and lavishes it upon harlots and parasites, and suffers no evil." What sayest thou? Doth he commit whoredom, and sayest thou, "he suffers no evil?" Is he drunken, and thinkest thou that he is in luxury? Doth he spend for no good, and judgest thou that he is to be envied? Nay what can be worse than this wealth which destroys the very soul? But thou, if the body were distorted and maimed, wouldest say that his was a case for great lamentation; and seest thou his whole soul mutilated, yet countest him even happy? "But he doth not perceive it," say you. Well then, for this very reason again is he to be pitied, as all frantic persons are. For he that knows he is sick, will of course both seek the physician, and submit to remedies; but he that is ignorant of it will have no chance at all of deliverance. Dost thou call such an one happy, tell me?

But it is no marvel: for the more part are ignorant of the true love of wisdom. Therefore do we suffer the extremest penalty, being chastised, and not even withdrawing ourselves from the punishment. For this cause are angers, dejections, and continual tumults; because when God hath shewn us a life without sorrow, the life of virtue, we leave this, and mark out another way, the way of riches and money, full of infinite evils. And we do the same, as if one, not knowing how to discern the beauty of men's bodies, but attributing the whole to the clothes and the ornaments worn, when he saw a handsome woman, and possessed of natural beauty, should pass quickly by her, but when he beheld one ugly, illshaped, and deformed, but clothed in beautiful garments, should take her

for his wife. Now also in some such way are the multitude <sup>1 Cor. 12. 11.</sup> affected about virtue and vice. They admit the one that is deformed by nature on account of her external ornaments, but turn away from her that is fair and lovely, on account of her unadorned beauty, for which cause they ought especially to choose her.

[9.] Therefore am I ashamed, that among the foolish heathen there are those that practise this philosophy, if not in deeds, yet so far at least as judgment goes; and who know the perishable nature of things present: whereas amongst us some do not even understand these things, but have their very judgment corrupted: and this while the Scripture is ever and anon sounding in our ears, and saying, *In his sight the vile person is contemned, but he honoureth them that fear the Lord<sup>1</sup>*: *the fear of the Lord excelleth every thing<sup>2</sup>*; *fear God, and keep his commandments; for this is the whole of<sup>2</sup> Or,<sup>1 Ps. 15.</sup> man<sup>3</sup>*: *be not thou envious of evil men<sup>4</sup>*; *all flesh is grass, the Lord<sup>Love of</sup> and all the glory of man as the flower of grass<sup>5</sup>*. For these and <sup>Sirach 25. 14.</sup> such-like things though we hear every day, we are yet nailed to <sup>Eccles. 12. 13.</sup> earth. And as ignorant children, who learn their letters one <sup>4 Ps. 49.</sup> after another, if they be examined after they are disarranged <sup>6 Isa. 40.</sup> concerning their order, naming one instead of another, make <sup>7.</sup> much laughter: so also ye, when here we recount them in order, follow us in a manner; but when we ask you out of doors, and in no set order, what we ought to place first and what next among things, and which after which; not knowing how to answer, ye become ridiculous. Is it not a matter of great laughter, tell me, that they who expect immortality, and the good things which eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, should strive about things which linger here, and count them enviable? For if thou hast need yet to learn these things, that riches are no great thing, that things present are a shadow and a dream, that like smoke they are dissolved and fly away: stand for the present without the sanctuary: abide in the vestibule: since thou art not yet worthy of the entrance to the palace-courts on high. For if thou knowest not to discern their nature, which is unstable and continually passing away, when wilt thou be able to despise them?

But if thou say, thou knowest, cease curiously to inquire and

**HOMIL.** busy thyself, what can be the reason why such an one is rich,  
**XXIX.** and such an one poor: for thou doest the same, when thou askest these questions, as if thou didst go round and enquire, why one is fair and another black, or one hook-nosed and another flat-nosed. For as these things make no difference to us, whether it be thus, or thus; so neither poverty and riches, and much less than they. But the whole ensues from the way in which we use them. Whether thou art poor, thou mayest live cheerfully denying thyself; or rich, thou art most miserable of all men if thou fliest from virtue. For these are what really concern us, the things of virtue. And if these things be not added, the rest are useless. For this cause also are those continual questions, because the most think that indifferent things are of importance to them, but of the important things they make no account: since that which is of importance to us, is virtue and love of wisdom.

Because then ye stand I know not where, at some far distance from her, therefore is there confusion of thoughts, therefore the many waves, therefore the tempest. For when men have fallen from heavenly glory and the love of heaven, they desire present glory, and become slaves and captives. "And how is it that we desire this," say you? From the not greatly desiring that. And this very thing, whence happens it? From negligence. And whence the negligence? From contempt. And whence the contempt? From folly, and cleaving to things present, and unwillingness to investigate accurately the nature of things. And whence again doth this latter arise? From the neither giving heed to the reading of the Scriptures, nor conversing with holy men, and from following the assemblies of the wicked.

That this therefore may not always be so, and lest wave after wave receiving us should carry us out into the deep of miseries, and altogether drown and destroy us; while there is time, let us bear up, and standing upon the rock, I mean of the divine doctrines and words, let us look down upon the surge of this present life. For thus shall we both ourselves escape the same, and having drawn up others who are making shipwreck, we shall obtain the blessings which are to come, through the grace and mercy, &c.

## HOMILY XXX.

---

1 COR. XII. 12.

*For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body; so also is Christ.*

AFTER soothing them from the considerations, that the thing given was of free favour; that they received all from *one and the self-same Spirit*; that it was given *to profit withal*, that even by the lesser gifts a manifestation was made; and withal having also stopped their mouth from the duty of yielding to the authority of the Spirit: (*for all these*, saith he, *worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to each man severally as he will*; wherefore it is not right so much as to be over-curious:) he proceeds now to soothe them in like manner from another common example, and betakes himself to nature itself, as was his use to do.

For so when he was discoursing about the hair of the men and the women, after all the rest, he drew matter thence also to correct them, saying, *Doth not even nature itself teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her*<sup>1</sup>? And when <sup>1 Cor.</sup> he spake concerning the idol-sacrifices, forbidding to touch <sup>11. 14.</sup> <sup>15.</sup> them, he took up the discourse from the examples also of them that are without, both making mention of the Olympic games, where he saith, *they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize*<sup>2</sup>: and confirming these views <sup>1 Cor.</sup> <sup>9. 24.</sup> from shepherds, and soldiers, and husbandmen: on just the same ground he brings forward here also a common example, by which he presses on and fights hard to prove that no one was really put in a worse condition: a thing which was mar-

**HOMIL. vellous and surprising to be able to shew, and calculated to refresh the weaker sort, I mean the example of the body. For nothing so consoles the person of too tender spirit, and of inferior gifts, or so persuades him not to grieve, as the being convinced that he is not left with less than his share. Wherefore also Paul making out this point, thus expresses himself: *for as the body is one, and hath many members.***

Seest thou his exact consideration? He is pointing out the same thing to be both one and many. Wherefore also he adds, pressing more vigorously on his proposed subject, *and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body.* He said not, "being many, are of one body," but "the one body itself is many:" and those so many members, are this one thing. If therefore one is many, and many are one, where is the difference? where the superiority? where the disadvantage? For all, saith he, are one: and not simply one, but being strictly considered in respect of that even which is most principal, i. e. their being a body, they are found all to be one: but when considered as to their particular natures, then the difference comes out, and the difference is in all alike. For none of them by itself can make a body, but each is alike deficient in the making a body, and there is need of our being regularly assembled: since, when the many become one, then and not till then is there one body. Wherefore also covertly intimating this very thing, he said, *But all the members of that one body, being many, are one body.* And he said not, "the superior, and the inferior," but *being many*, which is common to all.

And how is it possible that they should be one? When, throwing out the difference of the members, thou considerest the body. For the same thing which the eye is, this also is the foot, in regard of its being a member, and constituting a body. For there is no difference in this respect. Nor canst thou say, that one of the members makes a body of itself, but another does not. For they are all equal in this, for this very reason, that they are all one body.

But having said this, and having shewn it clearly from the common judgment of all, he added, *so also is Christ.* And when he should have said, "so also is the Church," for this came next in order, this he doth not say, but instead of it he places the

name of Christ, carrying the discourse up on high, and appealing more and more to the hearer's reverence. But his meaning is this: "So also is the body of Christ, which is the Church." For as the body and the head are one man, so he said that the Church and Christ are one. Wherefore also he placed Christ instead of the Church, giving that name to His body. "As then," saith he, "our body is one thing, though it be composed of many: so also in the Church we all are one thing. For though the Church be composed of many members, yet these many form one body."

[2.] Thus having, you see, recovered and raised up by this common example him who thought himself depreciated, again he leaves the topic of common experience, and comes to another, a mysterious one, bringing greater consolation, and indicative of great equality of honour. What then is this?

Ver. 13. *For by one Spirit, saith he, are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free.*

Now his meaning is this: that which hath established us to become one body, and hath regenerated us, is one Spirit: for not by one Spirit was one baptized, and by another another. And not only is that which hath baptized us one, but also that unto which<sup>1</sup> He baptized us, i. e. for which<sup>1</sup> He<sup>1 10, 2</sup> baptized us, is one. For we were baptized, not that so many several bodies might be formed, but that we might all preserve one with another the perfect nature of one body: i. e. that we might all be one body, into the same were we baptized.

So that both He who formed it is one, and that into which He formed it, is one. And he said not, "that we might all come to be of the same body;" but *that we might all be one body*. For he ever strives to use the more expressive phrases. And well said he, *we all*, adding also himself. "For not even I, the Apostle, have any more than thou in this respect," saith he. "For thou art the body, even as I, and I even as thou, and we have all the same Head, and have passed through<sup>2</sup> the same birth-pains. Wherefore we<sup>2 11, 12</sup> are also the same body." "And why speak I," saith he, "of<sup>11, 12</sup> the Jews? since even the Gentiles, who were so far off from us, He hath brought into the entireness of one body." Wherefore having said, *we all*, he stopped not here, but added, *whether*

**HOMIL.** *we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free.* Now if, **XXX.** having before been so far off, we were united, and have become one, much more after that we have become one, we can have no right to grieve and be dejected. Yea, the difference, in fact, hath no place. For if to Greeks and Jews, to bond and free, He hath vouchsafed the same blessings, how can it be, after that so vouchsafing He divides them, now that He hath bestowed a greater perfection of unity by the supply of His gifts?

*And we have all been made to drink into one Spirit.*

**Ver. 14.** *For the body is not one member, but many.*

i. e. We are come to the same Mystery, we enjoy the same table. And why said he not, “ we are nourished by the same body, and drink the same blood?” Because by saying *Spirit*, he declared them both, as well the flesh as the blood. For through both are we *made to drink into one Spirit*.

But to me he appears now to speak of that visitation of the Spirit which takes place in us after Baptism, and before the Mysteries. And he said, *We have been made to drink*, because this metaphorical speech suited him extremely well for his proposed subject: as if he had said respecting plants and a garden, that by the same fountain all the trees are watered, or by the same water; so also here, “ *we all drank the same Spirit*, we enjoyed the same grace,” saith he.

If now, as you see, both one Spirit formed us, and gathered us all together into one body; for this is the meaning of, *we were baptized into one body*: and vouchsafed us one table, and gave us all the same watering; for this is the meaning of, *we were made to drink into one Spirit*, and united persons so widely separated, and if many things then become a body, when they become one: why, I pray, art thou continually tossing to and fro their difference? But if thou sayest, “ Because there are many members, and diverse,” know that this very thing is the wonder, and the peculiar excellency of the body, when the things which are many and diverse make one. But if they were not many, it were not so wonderful and incredible that they should be one body; nay, rather they would not be a body at all.

[3.] This however he states last; but for the present he goes to the members themselves, saying thus:

Ver. 15. *If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand,* <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
*I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?* <sup>13. 17.</sup>

Ver. 16. *And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye,* *I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?*

For if the one being made inferior, : nd the other superior, doth not allow their being of the body, the whole is done away. Do not say therefore, " I am not the body, because I am inferior." For the foot also hath the inferior post, yet is it of the body: for the being or not being part of the body, is not from the one lying in this place, and the other in that; (which is what constitutes difference of place:) but from the being conjoined or separated. For the being or not being a body, arises the having been made one or not. But do thou, I pray, mark his considerate way, how he applies their words to our members. For as he said above, *These things have I in a figure transferred to myself and Apollos<sup>1</sup>*, just so likewise <sup>1 Cor. 4. 6.</sup> here, to make his argument free from invidiousness, and acceptable, he introduces the members speaking : that when they shall hear nature answering them, being thus convicted by experience herself, and by the general voice, they may have nothing further to oppose. " For say, if you will," saith he, " this very thing, murmur as you please, you cannot be out of the body. For as the law of nature, so much more doth the power of grace guard all things and preserve them entire." And see how he kept to the rule of having nothing superfluous; not working out his argument on all the members, but on two only, and these the extremes; having specified both the most honourable of all, the eye, and the meanest of all, the feet. And he doth not make the foot to discourse with the eye, but with the hand, which is mounted a little above it; and the ear with the eyes. For because we are wont to envy not those who are very far above us, but those who are a little higher, therefore he also conducts his comparison thus.

Ver. 17. *If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?*

Thus, because, having fallen upon the difference of the members, and having mentioned feet, and hands, and eyes, and ears, he had led them to the consideration of their own

**HOMIL.** inferiority and superiority : see how again he consoles them, XXX. intimating that so it was expedient: and that their being many and diverse, this especially causeth them to be a body. But if they all were some one, they would not be a body. Wherefore he saith, *If they were all one member, where were the body?* This however he mentions not till afterwards ; but here he points out also something more ; that besides the impossibility of any one being a body, it even takes away the being of the rest.

*For if the whole were hearing, where were the smelling,* saith he.

(3.) [4.] Then because after all they were yet disturbed: that which he had done above, the same he doth also now. For as there he first alleged the expediency to comfort them, and afterwards stopped their mouths, vehemently saying, *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will:* so also here having stated reasons, for which he shewed that it was profitable that all should so be, he refers the whole again to the counsel of God, saying,

Ver. 18. *But now God hath set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him.*

Even as He said of the Spirit, *as He will*, so also here, *as it pleased Him.* Now do not thou seek further into the cause, why it is thus, and why not thus. For though we have ten thousand reasons to give, we shall not be so able to shew that it is well done, as when we say, that as the best artificer pleased, so it came to pass. For as it is expedient, so He wills it. Now if in this body of ours we do not curiously enquire about the members, much more in the Church. And see his thoughtfulness, in that he doth not state the difference which arises from their nature, nor that from their operation, but that from their local situation. For *now*, saith he, *God hath set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him.* And he said well, *every one*, pointing out that the use extends to all. For thou canst not say, "This He hath Himself placed, but not that: but every one according to His will, so it is situated." So that to the foot also it is profitable that it should be so stationed, and not to the head only : and if it should invert the order, and leaving its own place, should go to another, though it might

seem to have bettered its condition, it would be the undoing <sup>1 Cor. 12. 19.</sup> and ruin of the whole. For it both falls from its own, and reaches not the other station.

[5.] Ver. 19. *And if they were all one member, where were the body?*

Ver. 20. *But now are they many members, yet but one body.*

Thus having silenced them sufficiently by God's own arrangement, again he states reasons. And he neither doth this always, nor that, but alternates and varies his discourse. Since on the one hand, he who merely silences, confounds the hearer, and he, on the contrary, who accustoms him to demand reasons for all things, injures him in the matter of faith ; for this cause then Paul is continually practising both the one and the other, that they may both believe, and may not be confounded ; and after silencing them, he again gives a reason likewise. And mark his earnestness in the combat, and the completeness of his victory. For from what things they supposed themselves unequal in honour, because in them there was great diversity, even from these things he shews, that on account of this very circumstance they are equal in honour. How, I will tell you.

*If all were one member, saith he, where were the body?*

Now what he means is, If there were not among you great diversity, ye could not be a body ; and not being a body, ye could not be one ; and not being one, ye could not be equal in honour. Whence it follows again, that if ye were all equal in honour, ye were not a body ; and not being a body, ye were not one ; and not being one, how could ye be equal in honour ? As it is, however, because ye are not all endowed with some one gift, therefore are ye a body ; and being a body, ye all are one, and differ nothing from one another in this, that ye are a body. So that this very difference is that which chiefly causeth your equality in honour. And accordingly he adds, *But now are ye many members, yet one body.*

[6.] These things then let us also consider, and cast out all envy, and neither grudge against them that have greater gifts, nor despise them that possess the lesser. For thus had God willed : let us not then oppose ourselves. But if thou art still disturbed, consider that thy work is oftentimes such as thy brother is

HOMIL. unable to perform. So that even if thou art inferior, yet in this XXX. thou hast the advantage: and though he be greater, he is worse off in this respect; and so equality takes place. For so in the body also even the little members seem to contribute no little, but the great ones themselves are often injured by them, I mean by their removal. Thus, what in the body is more insignificant than the hair? Yet if thou shouldst remove this, insignificant as it is, from the eyebrows and the eyelids, thou hast destroyed all the grace of the countenance, and the eye will no longer appear equally beautiful. And yet the loss is of a trifle; but notwithstanding even thus all the comeliness is destroyed. And not the comeliness only, but much also of the use of the eyes. The reason is, that every one of our members hath both an operation of its own, and one which is common; and likewise there is in us a beauty which is peculiar, and another which is common. And these kinds of beauty appear indeed to be divided, but they are perfectly bound together, and when one is destroyed, the other perishes also along with it. To explain myself: let there be bright eyes and a smiling cheek, and a red lip, and straight nose, and open brow; nevertheless, if thou mar but the slightest of these, thou hast marred the common beauty of all; all is full of dejection; all will appear foul to look on, which before was so beautiful: thus if thou shouldst crush only the tip of the nose, thou hast brought great deformity upon all: and yet it is the maiming but of a single member. And likewise in the hand, if thou shouldst take away the (4.) nail from one finger, thou wouldest see the same result. If now thou wouldest see the same taking place in respect of their <sup>is</sup> ~~injury~~ function<sup>1</sup> also, take away one finger, and thou wilt see the rest less active, and no longer performing their part equally.

Since then the loss of a member is a common deformity to all, and its safety, beauty to all, let us not be lifted up, nor trample on our neighbours. For through that small member, the great one too is fair and beautiful, and by the eyelids, slight as they are, is the eye adorned. So that he who wars with his brother, wars with himself: for the injury done reaches not only unto him, but himself also shall undergo no small loss.

[7.] That this then may not be, let us so care for our

neighbours, as for ourselves, and let us transfer this image <sup>1 Cor. 12. 20.</sup> of the body now also to the Church, and be careful for all, <sup>as for our own members.</sup> For in the Church also there are members many and diverse: and some are more honourable, and some more deficient. For example, there are choirs of virgins, there are assemblies of widows, there are fraternities <sup>of</sup> <sup>1 Φερτι-</sup> <sup>αι.</sup> those who shine in holy wedlock<sup>a</sup>; in short, many are the degrees of virtue. And in almsgiving again in like manner. For one empties himself of all his goods: others care for a competency alone, and seek nothing more than necessaries; others give of their superfluity: nevertheless all these adorn one another; and if the greater should set at nought the less, he would in the greatest degree injure himself. Thus, suppose a virgin to deal scornfully with a married woman, she hath cut off no small part of her reward; and he again that emptied himself of all, should he upbraid him that hath not done so, hath emptied himself of much of the fruit of his own labours. And why speak I of virgins, and widows, and men without possessions? What is meaner than those who beg? and yet even these fulfil a most important office in the Church, clinging to the doors of the sanctuary<sup>b</sup>, and supplying one of its greatest ornaments: and without these there could be no perfecting the fulness of the Church. Which thing, as it seems, the Apostles also observing, made a law from the beginning, as in regard to all other things, so also that there

<sup>a</sup> See Bingham, vii. 2. 6; and as quoted by him, St. Athanas. ad Dracont. t. i. p. 263; S. Augustin de Haeres. c. 40; in support of the opinion that "there was an order of monks which lived in a married state, and enjoyed their own property and possessions as the primitive ascetics were used to do." If the opinion is correct, (the places quoted seem hardly to prove it,) this place of St. Chrysostom may perhaps refer to that order.

<sup>b</sup> Bingham, iv. 4. 1. "At the entrance of the interior Narthex," or Choir, "the Poor of the Church placed themselves both before and after Divine Service, to ask alms of such as came from the Altar." S. Chrys. on 1 Thess. Hom. 11. near the end. "In the Churches, and in the Chapels of the Martyrs, the poor sit in front of the

vestibules... When we enter into earthly palaces, there is no such thing to be seen, but grave, splendid, rich, wise men are hastening about on all sides. But at our entrance into the true palaces, the Church, and the houses of prayer of the Martyrs, there are possessed persons, maimed, poor, old, blind, distorted in their limbs." "They are an admirable sort of watch-dogs, keeping guard in the Courts of the Palace. Feed them therefore, for the honour redounds to their King... That human things are nought, thou art excellently instructed by the very Porch of the Church: that God delights not in wealth, thou art taught by those who sit before Him." For the custom of the Church of Rome, see the account of St. Lawrence's martyrdom in Prudentius, as quoted by Hooker, E. P. v. 79. 14.

**HOMIL.** should be widows: and so great care did they use about XXX. the matter, as also to set over them seven deacons. For as bishops, and presbyters, and deacons, and virgins, and continent persons, enter into my enumeration, when I am reckoning up the members of the Church, so also do widows. Yea, and it is no mean office which they fill. For thou indeed comest here when thou wilt: but these both day and night sing psalms, and attend: not for alms only doing this; since if that were their object, they might walk in the market place, and beg in the alleys: but there is in them piety also in no small degree. At least, behold in what a furnace of poverty they are; yet never shalt thou hear a blasphemous word from them, nor a desponding one, after the manner of many rich men's wives. Yet some of them often lie down to their rest in hunger, and others continue constantly frozen by the cold; nevertheless they pass their time in thanksgiving and giving glory. Though you give but a penny, they give thanks, and implore ten thousand blessings on the giver; and if you give nothing, they do not complain, but even so they bless, and think themselves happy to enjoy their daily food.

"Yes," it is replied, "since, whether they will or no, they must bear it." Why, tell me? Wherefore hast thou uttered this bitter expression? Are there not shameful arts, which bring gain to the aged, both men and women? Had they not power to support themselves by those means in great abundance, provided they had chosen to cast off all care of good living? Seest thou not how many persons of that age, by becoming pimps and panders, and by other such ministrations, both live, and live in luxury<sup>1</sup>? Not so these, but they choose rather to perish of hunger, than to dishonour their own life, and betray their salvation; and they sit throughout the whole day, preparing a medicine of salvation for thee.

For no physician, stretching out the hand to apply the knife, works so effectually to cut out the corruption from our wounds, as doth a poor man, stretching out his right hand and receiving alms, to take away the scars which the wounds have left. And what is truly wonderful, they perform this excellent chirurgery without pain and anguish: and we who are set

<sup>1</sup> τρι-  
φορει  
και τρε-  
ψησιν.

over the people, and give you so much wholesome advice, do <sup>1 COR.</sup> 12. 20.  
not more truly discourse than he doth, who sits before the doors  
of the church, by his silence and his countenance. For we  
too sound these things in your ears every day, saying, “ Be  
not high-minded, O man ; human nature is a thing that soon  
declines, and is ready to fall away ; our youth hastens on to  
old age, our beauty to deformity, our strength to weakness,  
our honour to contempt, our health falls away to sickness,  
our glory to meanness, our riches to poverty ; our concerns  
are like a violent current that never will stand still, but keeps  
hastening down the steep.”

The same advice do they also give, and more than this, by (5.)  
their appearance, and by their experience itself too, which is a  
yet plainer kind of advice. How many, for instance, of those  
who now sit without, were in the bloom of youth, and did great  
things ? How many of these loathsome looking persons  
surpassed many, both in vigour of body, and in beauty of  
countenance ? Nay, disbelieve it not, nor deride. For surely,  
life is full of ten thousand such examples. For if from mean  
and humble persons many have oftentimes become kings,  
what marvel is it, if from being great and glorious, some have  
been made humble and mean ? Since the former is much the  
more extraordinary : but the latter, of perpetual occurrence.  
So that one ought not to be incredulous, that any of them  
ever flourished in arts, and arms, and abundance of wealth,  
but rather to pity them with great compassion, and to fear for  
ourselves, lest we too should sometime suffer the same  
things. For we too are men, and are subject to this speedy  
change.

[8.] But perchance some one of the thoughtless, and of those  
who are accustomed to scoff, will jeer at this too which hath  
been said, and will altogether deride us, saying, “ How long wilt  
thou not cease continually introducing poor men and beggars  
in thy discourses, and prophesying to us of misfortunes, and  
denouncing poverty to come, and desiring to make us beg-  
gars ? ” Not from a desire to make beggars of you, O man,  
do I say these things, but hastening to open unto you the  
riches of heaven. Since he too, who to the healthy man  
makes mention of the sick, and relates their anguish, saith it  
not to make him diseased, but to preserve him in health, by

HOMIL. the fear of their calamities cutting off his remissness. Poverty  
XXX. seems to you to be a fearful thing, and to be dreaded, even to the mere name of it. Yea, and therefore are we poor, because we are afraid of poverty; though we have ten thousand talents. For not he who hath nothing, is poor, but he who shudders at poverty. Since in men's calamities also it is not those who suffer great evils whom we lament and account wretched, but those who know not how to bear them, even though they be small. Whereas he that knows how to bear them, is, as all know, worthy of praises and crowns. And to prove that this is so, whom do we applaud in the games? Those who are much beaten, and do not vex themselves, but hold their head on high; or those who fly after the first strokes? Are not those even crowned by us, as manly and noble; while we laugh at these, as unmanly and cowards? So then let us do in the affairs of life. Him that bears all easily let us crown, as we do that noble champion<sup>1</sup>; but weep over him that shrinks and trembles at his dangers, and who before he receives the blow is dead with fear. For so in the games; if any, before he raised his hands, at the mere sight of his adversary extending his right hand, should fly, though he receive no wound, he will be laughed to scorn, as feeble, and effeminate, and unversed in such struggles. Now this is like what happens to these who fear poverty, and cannot so much as endure the expectation of it.

Evidently then, it is not we that make you wretched, but ye yourselves. For how can it be, that the devil should not henceforth make sport of thee, seeing thee even before the stroke afraid, and trembling at the menace? Or rather, when thou dost but esteem this a threat, he will have no need so much as to strike thee any more, but leaving thee to keep thy wealth, by the expectation of its being taken away he will render thee softer than any wax. And because it is our nature, (so to speak,) not to consider the objects of our dread so fearful after suffering, as before, and while yet untried: therefore, to prevent thee from acquiring even this virtue, he detains thee in the very height of fear; by the fear of poverty, before all experience of it, melting thee down as wax in the fire. Yea, and such a man is softer than any wax, and lives a life more wretched than Cain himself. For the things which he hath

<sup>1</sup> *wax-*  
*scari-*  
*asrān.*

in excess, he is in fear: for those which he hath not, in <sup>1 Cor.</sup> grief: and again, concerning what he hath he trembles, keeping his wealth within as a wilful runaway slave, and beset by I know not what various and unaccountable passions. For unaccountable desire, and manifold fear and anxiety, and trembling on every side, agitate them. And they are like a vessel driven by contrary winds from every quarter, and enduring many heavy seas. And how much better for such a man to depart, than to be enduring a continual storm? Since for Cain also it were more tolerable to have died, than to be for ever trembling<sup>1</sup>.

Lest we then for our part suffer these things, let us laugh to scorn the device of the devil, let us burst his cords asunder, let us sever the point of his terrible spear, and fortify every approach. For if thou laugh at money, he hath not where to strike, he hath not where he may lay hold. Then hast thou rooted up the root of evils; and when the root is no more, neither will any evil fruit grow.

[9.] Well: these things we must be always saying, and never leave off saying them: but whether our sayings do any good, the day will declare, even that day, which is revealed by fire, which trieth every man's work<sup>2</sup>, which sheweth what lamps<sup>2</sup> <sup>1 Cor. 3. 13.</sup> are bright, and what are not so. Then shall he who hath oil, and he who hath it not, be manifest. But may none then be found destitute of this comfort; rather may all, bringing in with them abundance of mercy, and having their lamps bright, enter in together with the bridegroom.

Since nothing is more fearful and full of anguish than that voice, which they who departed without abundant almsgiving shall then hear the Bridegroom utter, *I know you not*<sup>3</sup>. But <sup>3 S.Mat. 25. 12.</sup> may we never hear this voice, but rather that most pleasant and desirable one, *Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world*<sup>4</sup>. For thus shall we live the happy life, and enjoy all <sup>4 S.Mat. 25. 34.</sup> the good things which even pass man's understanding: unto which may we all attain, through the grace and mercy, &c.

## H O M I L Y XXXI.

---

1 COR. xii. 21.

*And the eye cannot say to the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the hand to the feet, I have no need of you.*

HAVING checked the envy of those in lower rank, and having taken off the dejection, which it was likely that they would feel from greater gifts having been vouchsafed to others, he humbles also the pride of these latter, who had received the greater gifts. He had done the same indeed in his discourse also with the former. For the statement, that it was a gift and not an achievement, was intended to declare this. But now he doth it again even more vehemently, dwelling on the same image. For from the body, in what follows, and from the unity thence arising, he proceeds to the actual comparison of the members, a thing on which they were especially seeking to be instructed. Since there was not so much power to console them in the circumstance of their being all one body, as in the conviction that in the very things wherewith they were endowed, they were not left greatly behind. And he saith, *The eye cannot say to the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.*

For though the gift be less, yet is it necessary: and as when the one is absent, many functions are impeded, so also without the other there is a maim in the fulness of the Church. And he said not, *will not say, but cannot say.* So that even though it have a will, though it should actually say so, it is out of the question, nor is the thing consistent with nature. For this cause having taken the two extremes, he makes trial of his argument in them, first in respect of the hand and the

eye, and secondly, in respect of the head and the feet, adding 1 Cor. 12. 23.

For what is meaner than the foot? Or what more honourable and more necessary than the head? For this, the head, more than any thing, is the man. Nevertheless it is not of itself sufficient, nor could it alone perform all things; since if this were so, our feet would have been a superfluous addition.

[2.] And neither did he stop here, but seeks also another amplification, a kind of thing which he is always doing, contending not only to be on equal terms, but even advancing beyond. Wherefore also he adds, saying,

Ver. 22. *Nay much more, those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary:*

Ver. 23. *And those members of the body which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness.*

In every clause adding the term *body*, and thereby both consoling the one and checking the other. "For I affirm not this only," saith he, "that the greater have need of the less, but that they have also much need. Since if there be any thing weak in us, if any thing dishonourable, this is both necessary, and enjoys greater honour." And he well said, *which seem*, and, *which we think*; pointing out that the judgment arises not from the nature of the things, but from the opinion of the many. For nothing in us is dishonourable, seeing it is God's work. Thus, what in us is esteemed less honourable than our genital members? Nevertheless they enjoy greater honour. And the very poor, even if they have the rest of the body naked, cannot endure to exhibit those members naked. Yet surely this is not the condition of things dishonourable; but it was natural for them to be despised rather than the rest. For so in a house the servant who is dishonoured, so far from enjoying greater attention, hath not even an equal share vouchsafed him. By the same rule likewise, if this member were dishonourable, instead of having greater privileges, it ought not even to enjoy the

\* The Text of the Editions seems apparently should be transposed, and here slightly corrupt. The word *μέντη* the second negative omitted.

**HOMIL. same:** whereas now it hath more honour for its portion:  
**XXXI.** and this too the wisdom of God hath effected. For to some parts by their nature He hath given not to need it: but to others, not having granted it by their nature, He hath compelled us to yield it. Yet are they not therefore dishonourable. Since the animals too by their nature have a sufficiency, and neither need clothing, nor shoes, nor a roof, the greater part of them: yet not on this account is our body less honourable than they, because it needs all these things.

Yea rather, were one to consider accurately, the parts in question are even by nature itself both honourable and necessary. Which in truth Paul himself intimated, not giving his judgment<sup>1</sup> of them from our care, and from their ~~adverses.~~ enjoying greater honour, but from the very nature of the things.

Wherefore when he calls them *weak* and *less honourable*, he uses the expression *which seem*: but when he calls them *necessary*, he no longer adds *which seem*, but himself gives his judgment, saying, *they are necessary*; and very properly. For they are useful to procreation of children and the succession of our race. Wherefore also the Roman legislators punish them that mutilate these members, and make men eunuchs, as persons who do injury to our common stock, and affront nature herself.

But woe to the intemperate, who bring reproach on the handy-works of God. For as many are wont to curse wine on account of the drunken, and womankind on account of the unchaste: so also they account these members base by reason of those that use them not as they ought. But improperly. For the sin is not allotted to the thing as a portion of its nature, but the transgression is produced by the will of him that ventures on it.

But some suppose that the expressions, *the feeble members*, and *less honourable*, and *necessary*, and *which enjoy more abundant honour*, are used by Paul of eyes and feet, and that he speaks of the eyes as *more feeble*, and *necessary*, because though deficient in strength, they have the advantage in utility: but of the feet as the *less honourable*: for these also receive from us great consideration.

[3.] Next, not to work out yet another amplification, he says,

Ver. 24. *But our comely parts have no need:*

That is, lest any should say, "Why what kind of speech is

this, to despise the honourable, and minister to the less <sup>1 Cor.</sup> honoured?" "we do not this in contempt," saith he, "but <sup>12. 25.</sup> because they *have no need.*" And see how large a measure of praise he thus sets down in brief, and so hastens on: a thing most conveniently and usefully done. And neither is he content with this, but adds also the cause, saying, *But God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour unto that part which lacked:*

Ver. 25. *That there should be no schism in the body;*

Now if He hath tempered it together, He hath not suffered that which is more uncomely to appear. For that which is mingled becomes one thing, and it doth not appear what it was before: since otherwise we could not say that it was tempered. And see how he continually hastens by the defects, saying, *that which lacked.* He said not, "to that which is dishonourable," "to that which is unseemly," but *to that which lacked (that which lacked; how? by nature,) having given more abundant honour.* And wherefore? *That there should be no schism in the body.* Thus because, though they enjoyed an endless store of consolation, they nevertheless indulged grief, as if they had received less than others, he signifies that they were rather honoured. For his phrase is, *Having given more abundant honour to that which lacked.*

Next he also adds the reason, shewing that with a view to their profit he both caused it to lack, and more abundantly honoured it. And what is the reason? *That there should be no schism, saith he, in the body.* (And he said not "in the members," but *in the body.*) For there would indeed be a great and unfair advantage, if some members were cared for both by nature and by our forethought, others not even by either one of these. Then would they be cut off from one another, from inability to endure the connexion. And when these were cut off, there would be harm done also to the rest. Seest thou how he points out, that of necessity *greater honour* is given to *that which lacketh?* "For had not this been so, the injury would have become common to all," saith he. And the reason is, that unless these received great consideration on our part, they would have been rudely treated, as not having the help of nature: and this rude treatment would have been their ruin: their

~~HOMIL.~~ ruin would have divided the body; and the body having ~~XXXI.~~ been divided, the other members also would have perished, which are far greater than these.

<sup>1. εστιν  
τῷ σώματι  
μεταβολὴ.  
τίποτε οὐ.</sup> Seest thou that the care of these latter is connected with making provision for those? For they have not their being so much in their own nature, as in their being one, by virtue of the body<sup>1</sup>. Wherefore if the body perish, they profit nothing by such health as they have severally. But if the eye remain, or the nose, preserving its proper function, yet when the bond of union is broken, there will be no use for them ever after; whereas, suppose this remaining, and those injured, they both support themselves through it, and speedily return to health.

But perhaps some one may say, “this indeed in the body hath reason, that *that which lacketh hath received more abundant honour*, but among men how may this be made out?” Why, among men most especially thou mayest see this taking place. For so they who came at the eleventh hour, first received their hire; and the sheep that had wandered induced the shepherd to leave behind the ninety and nine, and run after it, and when it was found, he bore, and did not drive it; and the prodigal son obtained more honour than he who was approved; and the thief was crowned and proclaimed before the Apostles. And in the case of the talents also thou mayest see this happen: in that to him that received the five talents, and to him that received two, were vouchsafed the same rewards; yea, by the very circumstance, that he received the two, he was the more favoured with great providential care. Since had he been entrusted with the five, with his want of ability he would have fallen from the whole: but having received the two, and fulfilled his own duty, he was thought worthy of the same with him that had gained the five, having so far the advantage, as with less labour to obtain the same crown. And yet he too was a man, as well as the one that traded with the five. Nevertheless his Master doth not in any wise call him to a strict account, nor compel him to do the same with his fellow-servant, nor doth he say, “Why canst thou not gain the five?” (though he might justly have said so,) but assigned him likewise his crown.

[4.] Knowing these things therefore, ye that are greater,

trample not on the less, lest, instead of them, ye injure your-<sup>1 Cor.</sup> selves. For when they are cut off, the whole body is destroyed. <sup>12. 25.</sup> Since what else is a body, than the existence of many members? As also Paul himself saith, that *the body is not one member, but many.* If therefore this be the essence of a body, let us take care that the many continue many. Since, unless this be entirely preserved, the stroke is in the vital parts; which is the reason also why the Apostle doth not require this only, their not being separated, but also their being closely united. For instance, having said, *that there be no schism in the body,* he was not content with this, but added, *that the members should have the same care one for another.* Adding this other cause also of the less enjoying more honour. For not only lest they should be separated one from another, hath God so contrived it, but also that there may be abundant love and concord. For if each man's being depends on his neighbour's safety, tell me not of the less and the more: in this case there is no more and less. While the body continues, you may see the difference too, but when it perishes, no longer. And perish it will, unless the lesser parts also continue.

If now even the greater members will perish, when the less are broken off, these ought to care in like manner for the less, and so as for themselves, inasmuch as in the safety of these the greater likewise remain. So then, shouldst thou say ten thousand times, "such a member is dishonoured and inferior," still if thou provide not for it in like manner, as for thyself, if thou neglect it as inferior, the injury will pass on to thyself. Wherefore he said not only, that *the members should care one for another,* but he added, *that they should have the same care one for another,* i. e. the small should enjoy the like and the same providential care with the great.

Say not then, that such an one is an ordinary person, but consider that he is a member of that body which holds together the whole: and as the eye, so also doth he cause the body to be a body. For where the body is being builded up, there none hath any thing more than his neighbour: since neither doth this make a body, there being one part greater, and another less, but their being many and diverse. For even as thou, because thou art greater, didst help to make up the

Homil. body, so also he, because he is less. So that his comparative deficiency, when the body is to be builded up, turns out of equal value with thee unto this noble contribution<sup>1</sup>: yea, he avails as much as thyself. And it is evident from hence. Let there be no member greater and less, nor more and less honourable: but let all be eye, or all head: will not the body perish? Every one sees it. Again, if all be inferior, the same thing will happen. So that in this respect also the less are proved equal. Yea, and if one must say something more, the purpose of the less being less, is that the body may remain. So that for thy sake he is less, in order that thou mayest continue to be great. And here is the cause of his demanding the same care from all. And having said, *that the members may have the same care one for another*, he explains this same thing again, saying,

[5.] Ver. 26. *And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.*

“Yea, with no other view,” saith he, “did He make the care He requires common, establishing unity in so great diversity, but that of all events there might be complete communion. Because, if our care for our neighbour be the common safety, it follows also that our glory and our sadness must be common.” Three things therefore he here demands: the not being divided, but united in perfection: the having like care one for another: and the considering all that happens, common. And as above he saith, *He hath given more abundant honour to that part which lacked*, because it needeth it; signifying that the very inferiority was become an introduction to greater honour: so here he equalizes them in respect of the care also which takes place mutually among them. For “therefore did he cause them to partake of greater honour,” saith he, “that they might not meet with less care.” And not from hence only, but also by all that befalls them, good and painful, are the members bound to one another. Thus often, when a thorn is fixed in the heel, the whole body feels it, and cares for it: both the back is bent, and the belly and thighs are contracted, and the hands coming forth as guards and servants, draw out what was so fixed, and the head stoops over it, and the eyes observe it

with much care. So that even if the foot hath inferiority <sup>1 COR.</sup> from its inability to ascend, yet by its bringing down the <sup>12. 26.</sup> head it hath an equality, and is favoured with the same honour; and especially whenever the feet are the cause of the head's coming down, not by favour, but by their claim on it. And thus, if by being the more honourable it hath an advantage; yet in that, being so, it owes such honour and care to the lesser, and likewise equal sympathy: by this it indicates great equality. Since what is meaner than the heel? what more honourable than the head? Yet this member moves toward that, and moves them all together with itself. Again, if any thing is the matter with the eyes, all complain, and all are idle: and neither do the feet walk, nor the hands work, nor doth the stomach enjoy its accustomed food; and yet the affection is of the eyes. Why dost thou cause the stomach to pine? why keep thy feet still? why bind thy hands? Because they are tied to the feet, and in an unspeakable manner the whole body suffers. For if it shared not in the suffering, it would not endure to partake of the care. Wherefore having said, *that the members may have the same care one for another*, he added, *whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.* "And how do they rejoice with it?" say you, The head is crowned, and the whole man is honoured. The mouth speaks, and the eyes laugh, and are delighted. Yet the credit given is not of the beauty of the eyes, but it belongs to the tongue. Again, if the eyes appear beautiful, the whole woman is beautified: as indeed these also, when a straight nose, and upright neck, and other members are praised, rejoice and appear cheerful: and shed tears again in great abundance over their griefs and misfortunes, though themselves continue uninjured.

[6.] Let us all then, considering these things, imitate the love of these members; let us not in any wise do the contrary, trampling on the miseries of our neighbour, and envying his good things. For this is the part of madmen, and persons beside themselves. Just as he that digs out his own eye, hath displayed a very great proof of senselessness; and he that devours his own hand, exhibits a clear evidence of downright madness.

**HOMIL.** Now if this be the case with regard to the members, so XXXI likewise, when it happeneth among the brethren, it fastens on us the reputation of folly, and brings on no common mischief. For as long as he shines, thy comeliness also is apparent, and the whole body is beautified. For not at all doth he confine the beauty to himself alone, but permits thee also to glory. But if thou extinguish him, thou bringest a common darkness upon the whole body, and the misfortune thou causest is common to all the members: as indeed if thou preservest him in brightness, thou preservest the bloom of the entire body. For no man saith, "the eye is beautiful;" but what? "such a woman is beautiful." And if it also be praised, it comes after the common encomium. So likewise it happens in the Church. I mean, if there be any celebrated persons, the community reaps the good report of it. For the enemies are not apt to divide the praises, but connect them together. And if any be brilliant in speech, they do not praise him alone, but likewise the whole Church. For they do not say only, "such a one is a wonderful man," but what? "the Christians have a wonderful teacher:" and so they make the possession common.

[7.] And now let me ask, do heathens bind together, and dost thou divide, and war with thine own body, and withstand thine own members? Knowest thou not that this overturns all? For even *a kingdom*, saith he, *divided against itself*

<sup>1</sup> S. Mat. shall not stand<sup>1</sup>.

12. 25.

But nothing so divides and separates, as envy and jealousy, that grievous disease, and exempt from all pardon, and <sup>3</sup> 1 Tim. in some respect worse than *the root of all evils*<sup>2</sup>. For the 6. 12. covetous is then pleased, when himself hath received: but the envious is then pleased, when another hath failed to receive, not when himself hath received. For he thinks the misfortunes of others a benefit to himself, rather than prosperity; going about a kind of common enemy of mankind, and smiting the members of Christ, than which what can be more akin to madness? The devil is envious, but of men, not of any devil: but thou being a man, enviest men, and withstandest what is of thine own tribe and family, which not even the devil doth. And what pardon shalt thou obtain, what excuse? trembling and turning pale, at sight of a

brother in prosperity, when thou oughtest to crown thyself,<sup>1</sup> Cor. 12. 20.

If indeed thou wishest to emulate him, I forbid not that: emulate, but with a view to be like him who is approved: not in order to depress him, but that thou mayest reach the same lofty point, that thou mayest display the same excellence. This is wholesome rivalry, imitation without contention: not to grieve at the good things of others, but to be vexed at our own evils: the contrary to which is the result of envy. For neglecting its own evils, it pines away at the good fortune of other men. And thus the poor is not so vexed by his own poverty, as by the plenty of his neighbour; than which what can be more grievous? Yea, in this respect the envious, as I before said, is worse even than the covetous: the one rejoicing at some acquisition of his own, while the other fin's his delight in some one else failing to receive.

Wherefore I beseech you, leaving this evil way, to change to a proper emulation, (for it is a violent thing, this kind of zeal, and hotter than any fire,) and to win thereby mighty blessings. Thus also Paul used to guide those of Jewish origin unto the faith, saying, *If by any means I might provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them*<sup>1</sup>. For he whose emulation is like what<sup>1</sup> Rom. 11. 14. Paul wished for, doth not pine when he sees the other in reputation, but when he sees himself left behind: the envious not so, but at the sight of another's prosperity. And he is a kind of drone, injuring other men's labours; and himself never anxious to rise, but weeping when he sees another rising, and doing every thing to throw him down. To what then might one compare this passion? It seems to me to be like as if a sluggish ass, and heavy with abundance of flesh, being yoked with a winged courser, should neither himself be willing to rise, and should attempt to drag the other down by the weight of his carcase. For so this man takes no thought nor anxiety to be himself rid of this deep slumber, but doth every thing to supplant and throw down him that is flying towards heaven, having become an exact emulator of the devil: since he too, seeing man in paradise, sought not to change his own condition, but to cast him out of paradise. And again, seeing him seated in heaven, and the

**HOMIL.** others hastening thither, he holds to the same plan, supplanting XXXI. them who are hastening thither, and thereby heaping up the furnace more abundantly for himself. For in every instance this happens: both he that is envied, if he be vigilant, becoming more eminent; and he that is envious, accumulating to himself more evils. Thus also Joseph became eminent, thus Aaron the priest: the conspiracy of the envious caused God once and again to give His suffrage for him, and was the occasion of the rod's budding. Thus Jacob attained his abundant wealth, and all those other blessings. Thus the envious pierce themselves through with ten thousand evils. Knowing as we do all these things, let us flee such emulation. For wherefore, tell me, enviest thou? Because thy brother hath received spiritual grace? And from whom did he receive it? answer me. Was it not from God? Clearly then He is the object of the enmity to which thou art committing thyself, He the bestower of the gift. Seest thou which way the evil is tending, and with what sort of a point it is crowning the heap of thy sins; and how deep the pit of vengeance which it is digging for thee?

Let us flee it, then, beloved, and neither envy others, nor fail to pray for our enviers, and do all we can to extinguish their passion: neither let us feel as the unthinking do, who being minded to exact punishment of them, do all in their power to light up their flame. But let not us do so; rather let us weep for them and lament. For they are the injured persons, having a continual worm gnawing through their heart, and collecting a fountain of poison more bitter than any gall. Come now, let us beseech the merciful God, both to change their state of feeling, and that we may never fall into that disease: since heaven is indeed inaccessible to him that hath this wasting sore, and before heaven too, even this present life is not worth living in. For not so thoroughly are timber and wool wont to be eaten through by moth and worm abiding therein, as doth the fever of envy devour the very bones of the envious, and destroy all self-command in their soul.

In order then that we may deliver both ourselves and others from these innumerable woes, let us expel from within us this evil fever, this that is more grievous than any

gangrene: that having regained spiritual strength, we may <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
both finish the present course, and obtain the future crowns; <sup>12. 20.</sup>  
unto which may we all attain, by the grace and mercy of our  
Lord Jesus Christ, with whom to the Father, with the Holy  
Ghost, be glory, power, honour, now and ever, and world  
without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXII.

---

1 COR. xii. 27.

*Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.*

FOR lest any should say, “What is the example of the body to us? since the body is a slave to nature, but our good deeds are of choice;” he applies it to our own concerns; and to signify that we ought to have the same concord of design, as they have from nature, he saith, *Now ye are the body of Christ.* But if our body ought not to be divided, much less the body of Christ, and so much less, as grace is more powerful than nature.

*And members in particular.* That is, “not only,” saith he, “are we a body, but members also.” For of both these he had before discoursed, bringing the many together into one, and implying that all become some one thing after the image of the body, and that this one thing is made up of the many, and is in the many, and that the many by this are held together, and are capable of being many.

But what is the expression, *in particular?* “So far at least as appertaineth to you; and so far as naturally should receive edification from you.” For because he had said, *the body*, whereas the whole body was not the Corinthian Church, but the Church in every part of the world, therefore he said, *in particular:* i. e. the Church amongst you is a part of the Church existing every where, and of the body which is made up of all the Churches: so that not only with yourselves alone, but also with the whole Church throughout the world, ye ought to be at peace, if at least ye be members of the whole body.

[2.] Ver. 28. *And God hath set some in the Church; first, apostles; secondarily, prophets; thirdly, teachers; after that, miracles; then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.*

Thus what I spake of before, this also he now doth. Because they thought highly of themselves in respect of the tongues, he sets it last every where. For the terms, "first" and "second" are not used by him here at random, but in order to set first the more honourable, and to point out the inferior. Wherefore also he set the apostles first, who had all the gifts in themselves. And he said not, "God hath set certain in the Church, apostles" simply, "or prophets," but he employs *first, second, and third*, signifying that same thing which I told you of.

*Secondarily, prophets.* For they used to prophesy, as the daughters of Philip, as Agabus, as these very persons among the Corinthians, of whom he saith, *Let the prophets speak, two or three*<sup>1</sup>. And writing also to Timothy, he said,<sup>1 c. 14.</sup> *Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy*<sup>2</sup>. And they were much more numerous then, than<sup>2 1 Tim. 4. 14.</sup> under the old covenant: the gift not having devolved on some ten, and twenty, and fifty, and an hundred, but this grace was poured out abundantly, and every Church had many that prophesied. And if Christ saith, *The Law and the Prophets prophesied until John*<sup>3</sup>, he saith it of those prophets who<sup>3 S.Mat. 11. 13.</sup> before proclaimed his coming.

*Thirdly, teachers.* For he that prophesieth, speaks all things from the Spirit; but he that teacheth, sometimes discourses also out of his own mind. Wherefore also he said, *Let the Elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine*<sup>4</sup>: whereas he that speaks all things by the Spirit,<sup>4 1 Tim. 5. 17.</sup> doth not labour. This accordingly is the reason why he set him after the prophet, because the one is wholly a gift, but the other is also man's labour. For he speaks many things of his own mind, agreeing however with the sacred Scriptures also.

[3.] *After that, miracles; then, gifts of healings.*

Seest thou how he again divides the healings from the power, which also he did before. For the power is more

HOMIL. than the healing: since he that hath power, both punishes  
xxxii. and heals, but he that hath the gift of healings, doeth cures only. And observe how excellent the order he made use of, when he set the prophecy before the miracles and the healings. For above, when he said, *To one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom, and to another the word of knowledge,* he spake, not setting them in order, but indifferently. Here on the other hand he sets a first, and a second rank. Wherefore then doth he set prophecy first? Because even in the old covenant the matter hath this order. For example, when Esaias was discoursing with the Jews, and exhibiting a demonstration of the power of God, and bringing forward the evidence of the worthlessness of the demons, he stated this also as the greatest evidence of his divinity, his foretelling

<sup>1</sup> Is. 41. things to come<sup>1</sup>. And Christ Himself, after working so many  
<sup>22, 23.</sup> signs, saith, that this was no small sign of His divinity: and continually adds, *But these things have I told you, that when*

<sup>2</sup> S. John *it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am He<sup>2</sup>.*

<sup>13. 19;</sup> " Well then; the gifts of healings are justly inferior to  
<sup>14. 29;</sup> prophecy. But why likewise to teaching?" Because it is  
<sup>16. 4.</sup> not the same thing, to declare the word of preaching, and sow piety in the hearts of the hearers, as it is to work miracles:

(2.) since these are done merely for the sake of that. When therefore any one teaches both by word and life, he is greater than all. For those he calls emphatically teachers, who both teach by deeds, and instruct in word. For instance: this made the Apostles themselves to become Apostles. And those gifts certain others also, of no great worth, received in the beginning, as those who said, *Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name, and done many wonderful works?* and after this were told,

<sup>3</sup> S. Mat. *I never knew you; depart from Me, ye that work iniquity<sup>3</sup>.*  
<sup>7. 22.</sup> But this twofold word of doctrine, I mean that by deeds and by words, no bad man would ever undertake. As to his setting the prophets first, marvel not at it. For he is not speaking of prophets simply, but of those who by prophecy do also teach, and say every thing to the common benefit: which in proceeding he makes more clear to us.

*Helps, governments.* What is, *helps*? To help the weak.  
<sup>4</sup> ~~etc.~~ Is this then a gift, tell me? In the first place, this too is of the Gift of God, aptness for a patron's office<sup>4</sup>; the dispensing

spiritual things; besides which he calls many even of our own good deeds, “gifts,” not meaning us to be dispirited, but intimating that in every case we need God’s help, and preparing them to be thankful, and thereby making them more forward, and stirring up their minds.

*Diversities of tongues.* Seest thou where he hath set this gift, and how he every where assigns it the last rank?

[4.] Further, since again by this catalogue he had pointed out a great difference, and stirred up the afore-mentioned distemper of those that had lesser gifts, he darts upon them in what follows with great vehemence, because he had already given them those many proofs of their not being left much inferior. What I mean is; because it was likely that on hearing these things they would say, “And why were we not all made Apostles?”—whereas above he had made use of a more soothing tone of discourse, proving at length the necessity of this result, both from the image of the body; for the body, saith he, is not one member; and again, *but if all were one member, where were the body?* and from the fact of their being given as was expedient; for the manifestation of the Spirit is given, saith he, *to every man, to profit withal:* and from all being watered from the same Spirit: and from what is bestowed being a free gift, and not a debt; for there are, saith he, diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit: and from the manifestation of the Spirit being made alike through all; for to every man, saith he, *is given his own manifestation through the Spirit:* and from the fact that these things were moulded according to the pleasure of the Spirit and of God; for all these, saith he, *worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will;* and, *God hath set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him:* and from the inferior members also being necessary; for those which seem, saith he, *to be more feeble, are necessary:* from their being alike necessary, in that they constitute the body equally with the greater; for the body, saith he, is not one member, but many: from the greater too needing the less; for the head, saith he, *cannot say to the feet, I have no need of you:* from these latter enjoying even more honour; for to that which lacketh, saith he, *He hath given more abundant honour:* from the care of them being common and equal; for all the members have

HOMIL. *the same care one for another*: and from there being one honour and one grief of them all; for *whether*, saith he, *one member suffer, all the members suffer with it, or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it* :—whereas, I say, he had above exhorted them by these topics, here and henceforth he uses language so as to bear them down and rebuke them. For, as I said, it behoves us neither always to exhort people, nor always to silence them. Therefore also Paul himself, because he at length exhorted them, doth henceforth vehemently attack them, saying,

Ver. 29. *Are all apostles? are all prophets? have all the gifts of healing?*

And he doth not stop at the first and the second gift, but proceeds to the last, either meaning this, that all cannot be all things, (even as he there saith, *if all were one member, where were the body?*) or establishing some other point also along with these, which may tell in the way of consolation again. What then is this? His signifying that even the lesser gifts are objects of contention, contended for equally with the greater, from the circumstance, that not even these were given absolutely to all? For “why,” saith he, “dost thou grieve, that thou hast not gifts of healing? consider that what thou hast, even though it be less, is oftentimes not possessed by him that hath the greater.” Wherefore he saith,

Ver. 30. *Do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?*

For even as the great gifts God hath not vouchsafed all to all men, but to some this, and to others that, so also did He in respect of the less, not setting these either before all. And this he did, building up thereby great abundance of harmony and love, that each one standing in need of the other might be brought close to his brother. This economy He established also in the arts, this also in the elements, this also in the plants, and in our members, and absolutely in all things.

(3.) [5.] Then he subjoins further the most powerful consolation, and sufficient to recover them and quiet their vexed souls. And what is this?

Ver. 31. *Covet earnestly, saith he, the best gifts, and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.*

Now by saying this, he gently hinted that they were the causes of their own receiving the lesser gifts, and had it in their

power, if they would, to have received the greater. For when 1 Cor. 12. 31. he saith, *covet earnestly*, he demands from them all diligence, and desire for spiritual things. And he said not, the greatest gifts, but *the best*, i. e. the more useful, those which would profit. And what he says is this : “ continue to desire gifts ; and I point out to you a way of gifts.” For neither did he say, “ a gift,” but *a way*, that he might the more extol that which he intends to mention. As if he said, It is not one, or two, or three gifts that I point out to you, but one way which leadeth to all these : and not merely a way, but both *a more excellent way*, and one that is open in common to all. For not as the gifts are vouchsafed, to some these, to others those, but not all to all ; so also in this case : but it is an universal gift. Wherefore also he invites all to it. *Covet earnestly*, saith he, *the best gifts*; *and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way*; meaning charity towards our neighbour.

Then intending to proceed to the discourse concerning it, and the encomium of this virtue, he first lowereth these by comparison with it, intimating that they are nothing without it ; very considerately. For if he had at once discoursed of charity, and having said, *I shew unto you a way*, had added, “ but this is charity,” and had not conducted his discourse by way of comparison ; some might possibly have scoffed at what was said, not understanding clearly the force of the thing spoken of, but still gaping after these. Wherefore he doth not at once unfold it, but first excites the hearer by the promise, and saith, *I shew unto you a more excellent way*, and so having led him to desire it, he doth not even thus straightway proceed upon it, but augmenting still further and extending their desire, he discourses first of these very things, and signifies, that without it they are nothing ; reducing them to the greatest necessity of loving one another ; seeing also, that from neglect of it sprang that which caused all their evils. So that in this respect also it might justly appear great, if the gifts not only brought them not together, but divided them even after union : but this, when many were so divided, is to reunite them by a virtue of its own, and make them one body. This however he doth not say at once, but what they chiefly longed for, that he sets down ; as that the thing was a gift, and a way to all the gifts with excellency. So that even

**HOMIL.** if thou wilt not love thy brother on the score of duty, yet for XXXI. the sake of obtaining a better sign, and an abundant gift, make charity welcome.

[6.] And see whence he first begins ; from that which was marvellous in their eyes and great, the gift of tongues. And in bringing forward that gift, he mentions it not just in the degree they had it in, but far more. For he did not say, “if I speak with tongues,” but,

Chap. 13. ver. 1. *If I speak with the tongues of men,—*

What is, *of men*? Of all nations in every part of the world. And neither was he content with this amplification, but he likewise uses another much greater, adding the words, *and of angels,—and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.*

Dost thou see to what point he first exalted the gift, and to what afterwards he lowered and cast it down? For neither did he simply say, “I am nothing,” but, *I am become sounding brass*, a thing senseless and inanimate. But how *sounding brass*? Emitting a sound indeed, but at random and in vain, and for no good end. Since besides my profiting nothing, I am counted by most men as one giving impertinent trouble, an annoying and wearisome kind of person. Seest thou how one void of charity is like to things inanimate and senseless?

Now he here speaks of the *tongue of angels*, not investing angels with a body, but what he means is this: “should I even so speak, as angels are wont to discourse unto each other, without this I am nothing, nay rather a burden and an annoyance.” Thus (to mention one other example,) where he saith, *To Him every knee shall bow, of things in heaven,*

<sup>1</sup> Phil. 2. *and things on earth, and things under the earth*<sup>1</sup>, he doth 10.

not say these things as if he invested angels with knees and bones, far from it, but it is their intense adoration, which he intends to shadow out by the fashion amongst us: so also here he calls it *a tongue*, not meaning an instrument of flesh, but intending to shadow out their converse with each other by the manner which is known amongst us.

[7.] Then, in order that his discourse may be acceptable, he stops not at the gift of tongues, but proceeds also to the remaining gifts; and having depreciated all in the absence of Charity, he then depicts her image. And because he pre-

ferred to conduct his argument by amplification, he begins 1 COR. from the less and ascends to the greater. For whereas, when 13. 2. he indicated their order, he placed the gift of tongues last, this he now numbers first; by degrees, as I said, ascending to the greater gifts. Thus having spoken of tongues, he proceeds immediately to prophecy; and saith,

Ver. 2. *And though I have the gift of prophecy.*

And this gift again with an excellency. For as in that case he mentioned not tongues, but the tongues of all mankind, and as he proceeded, those of angels, and then signified that the gift was nothing without charity: so also here he mentions not prophecy alone, but the very highest prophecy: in that having said, *Though I have prophecy*, he added, *and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge;* expressing this gift also with intensity.

Then after this also he proceeds to the other gifts. And again, that he might not seem to weary them, naming each one of the gifts, he sets down the mother and fountain of all, and this again with an excellency, thus saying: *And though I have all faith.* Neither was he content with this, but even that which Christ spake of as greatest, this also he added, saying, *so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.* And consider how again here also he lowers the dignity of the tongues. For whereas in regard of prophecy he signifies the great advantage arising from it, *the understanding mysteries, and having all knowledge;* and in regard of faith, no trifling work, even *the removing mountains:* in respect of tongues, on the other hand, having named the gift itself only, he quits it.

But do thou, I pray, consider this also, how in brief he comprehended all gifts, when he named prophecy and faith: for miracles are either in words or deeds. And how doth Christ say, that the least part of faith is the being able to remove a mountain? For as though He were speaking of something very small, did He express Himself when He said, *If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say to this mountain, Be thou removed, and it shall remove*<sup>1</sup>; whereas <sup>1 S. Mat.</sup> Paul saith, that this is *all faith.* What then must one say? <sup>17, 20.</sup> Since this were a great thing, the removing a mountain, therefore also he mentioned it, not as though *all faith* were

HOMIL. only able to do this, but since this seemed to be great to the XXXII. grosser sort because of the bulk of the outward mass, from this also he extols his subject. And what he saith is this:

*Though I have all faith, and though I can remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.*

[8.] Ver. 3. *And though I give all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.*

Wonderful amplification! For even these things too he states with another addition: in that he said not, "if I give to the poor the half of my goods," or "two or three parts," but *though I give all my goods.* And he said not, "give," <sup>1 ψωπι-</sup> but *distribute in morsels*<sup>1</sup>, so that to the expense may be <sup>σω.</sup> added the ministering also with all care.

*And though I give my body to be burned.* He said not, "if I die," but this too with an excellency. For he names the most terrible of all deaths, the being burnt alive, and saith that even this without charity is no great thing. Accordingly he subjoins, *it profiteth me nothing.*

But not even yet have I pointed out the whole of her excellency, until I bring forward the testimonies of Christ which were spoken concerning almsgiving and death. What then are His testimonies? To the rich man He saith, *If thou wilt be perfect, sell thy goods, and give to the poor, and come* <sup>2 S. Mat.</sup> *follow Me*<sup>2</sup>. And discoursing likewise of love to one's neighbour, he saith, *Greater love hath no man than this, that a man* <sup>3 S. John</sup> *lay down his life for his friends*<sup>3</sup>. Whence it is evident, that <sup>19. 21.</sup> in reference to God also this is greatest of all. But "I declare," saith Paul, "that even if we should lay down life for God's sake, and not merely lay it down, but so as even to be burned, (for this is the meaning of, *if I give my body to be burned,*) we shall have no great advantage, if we love not our neighbour." Well then, the saying that the gifts are of no great profit without charity, is no marvel: since our gifts are a secondary consideration to our way of life. At any rate, many have displayed gifts, and yet on becoming vicious have been punished: as those who *prophesied in His name, and cast out many devils, and wrought many wonderful works;* as Judas the traitor: while others, exhibiting, as believers, a pure life, have needed nothing else in order to their salva-

tion. Wherefore, that the gifts should, as I said, require this, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> 13. 3. is no marvel: but that an exact life even should avail nothing without it, this is what brings the intensity of expression strongly out, and causes great perplexity: especially too when Christ appears to adjudge His great rewards to both these, I mean to the giving up our possessions, and to the perils of martyrdom. For both to the rich man He saith, as I before observed, *If thou wilt be perfect, sell thy goods, and give to the poor, and come follow Me:* and discoursing with the disciples, of martyrdom He saith, *Whosoever shall lose his life for My sake, shall find it;* and, *Whosoever shall confess Me before men, him will I also confess before My Father which is in heaven.* For great indeed is the labour of this achievement, and well nigh surpassing nature itself, and this is known to such as have had these crowns vouchsafed to them; and known full well. For no language can set it before us: so noble a soul doth the deed belong to, and so exceedingly wonderful is it.

[9.] But nevertheless this so wonderful thing Paul said was of no great profit without charity, even though it have the giving up of one's goods joined with it. Wherefore then hath he thus spoken? This will I now eudeavour to explain, first having enquired of this, How is it possible that one who gives all his goods to feed the poor can be wanting in charity? I grant, indeed, he that is ready to be burned, and hath the gifts, may perhaps possibly not have charity: but he who not only gives his goods, but even distributes them in morsels: how hath not he charity? What then are we to say? Either that he supposed an unreal case as real; which kind of thing he is ever wont to do, when he intends to set before us something in excess; as when writing to the Galatians he saith, *If we or an angel from heaven preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed*<sup>1</sup>. And yet neither was himself nor an angel <sup>1 Gal. 1.</sup> about to do so; but to signify that he meant to carry the matter as far as possible, he set down even that which could never by any means happen. And again, when he writes to the Romans, and saith, *Neither angels, nor principalities, nor powers, shall be able to separate us from the love of God;* for neither was this about to be done by any angels: but here

**HOMIL.** too he supposes a thing which was not; as indeed also in xxxii. what comes next, saying, *nor any other creature*, whereas there is no other creature, for he had comprehended the whole creation, having spoken of all things both above and below. Nevertheless here also he mentions that which was not, by way of hypothesis, so as to shew his exceeding great desire. Now the same thing he doth here also, saying, *Though a man give all, and have not charity, it profiteth him nothing.*

Either then we may say this, or that his meaning is for those who give to be also joined closely to those who receive, and not merely to give without sympathy, but in pity and condescension, bowing down, and grieving with the needy. For therefore also hath almsgiving been enacted by God: since God might have nourished the poor as well without this, but that he might bind us together unto charity, and that we might be throughly fervent towards each other, he commanded them to be nourished by us. Therefore one saith in another place also; *a good word is better than a*

<sup>1</sup>*Eccl. gift<sup>1</sup>*; and, *behold, a word is beyond a good gift<sup>1</sup>*. And He 18. 16. Himself saith, *I will have mercy, and not sacrifice<sup>2</sup>*. For 17. <sup>2</sup>*S. Mat.* since it is usual, both for men to love those who are benefited 9. 30; <sup>9</sup>*Hos. 6.6.* by them, and for those who receive benefits to be more kindly affected towards their benefactors; he made this law, constituting it a bond of friendship.

[10.] But the point proposed for enquiry above is, How, after Christ had said that both these belong to perfection, Paul affirms, that these without charity are imperfect? Not contradicting Him, God forbid: but harmonizing with Him, and that exactly. For so in the case of the rich man, He said not merely, *sell thy goods, and give to the poor*, but He added, *and come, follow Me*. Now not even the following Him proves any man a disciple of Christ so completely as the loving one another. For *by this shall all men know*, saith He, that <sup>3</sup>*S. John ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another<sup>3</sup>*. And 13. 35. also when He saith, *Whosoever loseth his life for My sake,* <sup>4</sup>*S. Mat. shall find it<sup>4</sup>*; and *whosoever shall confess Me before men,* 10. 39, <sup>5</sup>*and 35. him will I also confess before My Father which is in heaven*; he means not this, that it is for any other motive than charity, but he declares the reward which is laid up for these labours. Since that along with martyrdom he requires also this, is

what He elsewhere strongly intimates, thus saying, *Ye shall*<sup>1</sup> Cor. indeed drink of My cup, and be baptized with the baptism <sup>13. 3.</sup> *that I am baptized with*<sup>1</sup>; i. e. ye shall be martyrs, ye shall <sup>1</sup> S.Mat. be slain for My sake; *but to sit on My right hand, and on* <sup>20. 23.</sup> *My left,* (not as though any sit on the right hand and the left, but meaning the highest precedence and honour,) *is not mine to give,* saith He, *but to those for whom it is prepared.* Then signifying for whom it is prepared, He calls them and saith, *whosoever among you will be chief, let him be slave to you all*<sup>2</sup>; setting forth humility and charity. And the <sup>2</sup> S.Mat. <sup>20. 26.</sup> charity which He requires is intense; wherefore He stopped not even at this, but added, *even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many;* pointing out that we ought so love, as even to be slain for our beloved. For this above all is to love Him. Wherefore also He saith to Peter, *If thou lovest Me, feed My sheep*<sup>3</sup>.

[11.] And that ye may learn how great a work of virtue it is, let us sketch it out in word, since in deeds we see it no where appearing; and let us consider, if it were every where in abundance, how great benefits would ensue: how there were no need then of laws, or tribunals, or punishments, or avenging, or any other such thing: since if all loved, and were beloved, no man would injure another. Yea, murders, and strifes, and wars, and divisions, and rapines, and frauds, and all evils would be removed, and vice be unknown even in name. Miracles, however, would not have effected this; they rather puff up such as are not on their guard, unto vain-glory and wilfulness.

<sup>3</sup> S.John  
21. 16.

Again: what is indeed the marvellous part of charity; all the other good things have their evils yoked with them: as he that gives up his possessions is oftentimes puffed up on this account: the eloquent, is affected with a wild passion for glory; the humble-minded, on this very ground, not seldom thinks highly of himself in his conscience. But charity is free from every such mischief. For none could ever be lifted up against the person whom he loves. And do not, I pray, suppose one person only loving, but all alike; and then wilt thou see its virtue. Or rather, if thou wilt, first suppose one single person beloved, and one loving; loving, however, as it is meet to love.

**HOMIL.** Why, he will so live on earth as if it were heaven, every where  
xxxii. enjoying a calm, and weaving for himself innumerable crowns. For both from envy, and wrath, and jealousy, and pride, and vain glory, and evil concupiscence, and every profane love, and every distemper, such a man will keep his own soul pure. Yea, even as no one would do himself an injury, so neither would this man, his neighbours. And being such, he shall stand with Gabriel himself, even while he walks on the earth.

Such then is he that hath charity. But he that works miracles, and hath perfect knowledge, without this, though he raise ten thousand from the dead, will not be much profited, broken off as he is from all, and not enduring to mix himself up with any of his fellow-servants. For no other cause than this did Christ say that the sign of perfect love towards Him, is the loving one's neighbour. For *if thou lovest me*, saith  
<sup>1 S. John</sup> <sup>21. 15.</sup> he, *O Peter, more than these, feed my sheep*<sup>1</sup>. Dost thou see how hence also He again covertly intimates, in what case this is greater than martyrdom? For so, if any one had a beloved child, in whose behalf he would even give up his life, and some one were to love the father, but pay no regard whatever to the son, he would greatly incense the father, nor would he feel the love for himself because of the overlooking his son. Now if this ensue in the case of father and son, much more in the case of God and men: since surely God is more loving than any parents.

Wherefore, having said, *The first and great commandment is, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God*, he added, *and the second*—(He leaves it not in silence, but sets it down also)—*is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*. And see how with nearly the same excellency He demands also this. For as concerning God, He saith, *with all thy heart*: so concerning thy neighbour, *as thyself*, which is tantamount to, *with all thy heart*.

Yea, and if this were duly observed, there would be neither slave nor free, neither ruler nor ruled, neither rich nor poor, neither small nor great; nor would any devil then ever have been known: I say not, Satan only, but whatever other such spirit there be, nay, rather were there a hundred, or ten thousand such, they would have no power, while charity existed. For sooner would grass endure the application of fire, than

the devil the flame of charity. She is stronger than any wall, she is firmer than any adamant; or if thou canst name any material stronger than this, the firmness of love transcends them all. Her, neither wealth nor poverty overcometh: nay rather there would be no poverty, no unbounded wealth, if there were love, but the good parts only from each estate. For from the one we should reap its abundance; from the other its freedom from care: and should neither have to undergo the anxieties of riches, nor the dread of poverty.

[12.] And why do I mention the advantages arising from it? Yea, rather consider how great a blessing it is of itself, to exercise love; what cheerfulness it produces, in how great grace it establishes the soul; a thing which above all is a choice quality of it. For the other parts of virtue have each their trouble yoked with them; as fasting, temperance, watching, have envy, concupiscence, and contempt. But love along with the gain hath great pleasure too, and no trouble, and like an industrious bee, gathering the sweets from every flower, deposits them in the soul of him who loveth. Though any one be a slave, it renders slavery sweeter than liberty. For he who loveth, rejoices not so much in commanding, as in being commanded, although to command is sweet: but love changes the nature of the things, and presents herself with all blessings in her hands, gentler than any mother, wealthier than any queen, and makes difficulties light and easy, making out virtue to be facile, but vice very bitter to us. As thus: to expend seems grievous, yet love makes it pleasant: to receive other men's goods, pleasant, but love suffers it not to appear pleasant, but frames our minds to avoid it as evil. Again, to speak evil, seems to be pleasant to all; but love while she makes this out to be bitter, causeth speaking well to be pleasant: for nothing is so sweet to us, as to be praising one whom we love. Again, anger hath a kind of pleasure; but in this case no longer, rather all its sinews are taken away. Though he that is beloved should grieve him who loves him, anger no where shews itself: but tears and exhortations, and supplications; so far is love from being exasperated: and should she behold one in error, she mourns and is in pain; yet even this pain itself brings pleasure. For the very tears and the grief of love, are sweeter than any

**HOMIL.** mirth and joy. For instance: they that laugh are not so refreshed, as they that weep for their friends. And if thou doubt it, stop their tears; and they repine at it no otherwise than as persons intolerably ill-used. "But there is," saith one, "a profane pleasure in love." Avaunt and hold thy peace, whoever thou art. For nothing is so pure from such pleasure, as genuine love.

(7.) For tell me not of this ordinary sort, the vulgar and low-minded, and a disease rather than love, but of this which Paul seeks after, which considers the profit of them that are loved; and thou shalt see that no fathers are so affectionate as persons of this stamp. And even as they who love money cannot endure to spend money, but would with more pleasure be in straits, than see their wealth diminishing: so too, he that is kindly affected towards any one, would choose to suffer ten thousand evils, than see his beloved one injured.

[13.] "How then," saith one, "did the Egyptian woman who loved Joseph, wish to injure him?" Because she loved with this diabolical love. Joseph however not with this, but with that which Paul requires. Consider then how great a love his words were tokens of, and the action which she was speaking of. "Insult me, and make me an adulteress, and wrong my husband, and overthrow all my house, and cast thyself out from thy confidence towards God:" which were expressions of one who so far from loving him, did not even love herself. But because he truly loved, he sought to avert her from all these. And to convince you that it was in anxiety for her, learn the nature of it from his advice. For he not only thrust her away, but also introduced an exhortation capable of quenching every flame: namely, *if on my account, my master, saith he, knoweth not any thing which is in his house.* He at once reminds her of her husband, that he might put her to shame. And he said not, "thy husband," but *my master*, which was more apt to restrain her, and induce her to consider who she was, and of whom she was enamoured,—a mistress, of a slave. "For if he be lord, then art thou mistress. Be ashamed then of familiarity with a servant, and consider whose wife thou art, and with whom thou wouldest be connected, and towards whom thou art

becoming thankless and inconsiderate, and that I repay him <sup>1 Cor.</sup> greater good-will." And see how he extols his benefits. <sup>12, 20.</sup> For since that barbarous and abandoned woman could entertain no lofty sentiment, he shames her from human considerations, saying, *He knoweth nothing through me*, i. e. "he is a great benefactor to me, and I cannot wound my patron in the tenderest part. He hath made me a second lord of his house, and no one<sup>1</sup> hath been kept back from me, but thee." Here <sup>1 οὐδείς,</sup> he endeavours to raise her mind, that so at any rate he might <sup>LXX. οὐδείς.</sup> persuade her to be ashamed, and might signify the greatness of her honour. Nor did he stop even here, but likewise added a name sufficient to restrain her, saying, "*Because thou art his wife; and how shall I do this wickedness?* But what sayest thou? That thy husband is not present, nor knoweth that he is wronged? But God will behold it." She however profited nothing by his advice, but still sought to attract him. For desiring to satiate her own frenzy, not through love of Joseph, she did these things; and this is evident from what she did afterwards. As that she institutes a trial, and brings in an accusation, and bears false witness, and exposes to a wild beast him that had done no wrong, and casts him into prison; or rather, for her part, she even slew him, in such a manner did she arm the judge against him. What then? Was then Joseph too such as she was? Nay, altogether the contrary, for he neither contradicted, nor accused the woman. "Yes," it may be said: "for he would have been disbelieved." And yet, he was greatly beloved; and this is evident, not only from the beginning, but also from the end. For had not his barbarian master loved him greatly, he would even have slain him in his silence, making no defence: being as he was an Egyptian, and a ruler, and wronged in his marriage-bed as he supposed, and by a servant, and a servant to whom he had been so great a benefactor. But all these things gave way to his regard for him, and the grace which God poured down upon him. And together with this grace and love he had also other no small proofs, had he been minded to justify himself; the garments themselves. For if it were she to whom violence was done, her own vest should have been torn, her face lacerated, instead of her retaining his garments. But *he heard, saith she, that I lifted up my voice, and*

HOMIL. *left his garments, and went out.* And wherefore then didst thou  
xxxii. take them from him? since unto one suffering violence what  
 was the one thing desirable? To be rid of the intruder.

But not from hence alone, but also from the subsequent events, shall I be able to point out his good-will and his love. Yea even when he fell into a necessity of mentioning the cause of his imprisonment, and remaining there, he did not even then declare the whole course of the story. But what saith he? *I too have done nothing: but indeed I was stolen out of the land of the Hebrews;* and he no where mentioned the adulteress, nor doth he plume himself on the matter, which would have been any one's feeling, if not for vain glory, yet so as not to appear to have been cast into that cell for an evil cause. For if men in the act of doing wrong by no means abstain even so from blaming the same things, although to do so brings reproach; of what admiration is not he worthy, because, pure as he was, he did not mention the woman's passion, nor make a show of her sin, nor when he ascended the throne, and became ruler of all Egypt, remember the wrong done by the woman, nor exact any punishment?

(8.) Seest thou how he cared for her, but her's was not love but madness? For it was not Joseph that she loved, but she sought to fulfil her own lust. And the very words too, if one would examine them accurately, were accompanied with wrath and great blood-thirstiness. For what saith she? *Thou hast brought in a Hebrew servant to mock us:* upbraiding her husband for the kindness; and she exhibited the garments, having become herself more savage than any wild beast: but not so he. And why speak I of his good-will to her, when he was such, we know, towards his brethren who would slay him; and never said one harsh thing of them, either within doors or without?

[14.] Therefore Paul saith, that the love which we are speaking of is the mother of all good things, and prefers it to miracles and all other gifts. For as where there are vests and sandals of gold, we require also some other garment whereby to distinguish the king: but if we see the purple and the diadem, we require not to see any other sign of his royalty: just so here likewise, when the diadem of love is upon our head, it is

enough to point out the genuine disciple of Christ, not to ourselves only, but also to the unbelievers. For by this, saith He, shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another<sup>1</sup>. So that this sign is greater<sup>1</sup> surely than all signs, in that the disciple is recognized by it.<sup>13. 35.</sup> For though any should work ten thousand signs, but be at strife one with another, they will be a scorn to the unbelievers. Just as if they do no sign, but love one another exactly, they will continue both reverenced and inviolable by all men. Since Paul himself we admire on this account, not for the dead whom he raised, nor for the lepers whom he cleansed, but because he said, who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not<sup>2</sup>? For shouldest thou have ten<sup>2</sup> thousand miracles to compare with this, thou wilt have nothing equal to it to say. Since Paul also himself said, that a great reward was laid up for him, not because he wrought miracles, but because to the weak he became as weak. For what is my reward, saith he? That, when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel without charge<sup>3</sup>. And when<sup>3</sup> he puts himself before the Apostles, he saith not, "I have wrought miracles more abundant than they," but, I have laboured more abundantly than they<sup>4</sup>. And even by famine<sup>4</sup> was he willing to perish for the salvation of the disciples.<sup>15. 10.</sup> For it were better for me to die, saith he, than that any man should make my glorying void<sup>5</sup>: not because he was glorying,<sup>5</sup> but that he might not seem to reproach them. For he nowhere is wont to glory in his own achievements, when the season doth not call to it; but even if he be compelled so to do, he calleth himself a fool. But if he ever glory, it is in infirmities, in wrongs, in greatly sympathizing with those who are injured: even as here also he saith, who is weak, and I am not weak? These words are greater even than perils. Wherefore also he sets them last, amplifying his discourse.

Of what then must we be worthy compared with him, who neither condemn wealth for our own sake, nor give up the superfluities of our goods? But not so Paul; rather both soul and body did he use to give up, that they who stoned and beat him with rods, might obtain the kingdom. "For thus," saith he, "hath Christ taught me to love;" who left behind Him the new commandment concerning love, which also Himself

HOMIL. fulfilled in deed. For being Lord of all, and of that  
XXXII. Blessed Nature ; from men, whom He created out of nothing, and on whom He had bestowed innumerable benefits, from these, insulting and spitting on Him, He turned not away, but even became man for their sakes, and conversed with harlots and publicans, and healed the demoniacs, and promised heaven. And after all these things they apprehended and beat Him with rods, bound, scourged, mocked, and at last crucified Him. And not even so did He turn away, but even when He was on high upon the cross, He saith, *Father, forgive them their sin.* But the thief who before this reviled Him, He translated into very paradise ; and made the persecutor Paul, an Apostle ; and gave up His own disciples, who were His intimates and wholly devoted to Him, unto death for the Jews' sake who crucified Him.

Recollecting therefore in our minds all these things, both those of God, and of men, let us emulate these high deeds, and possess ourselves of that which is above all gifts, charity, that we may obtain both the present and the future blessings ; the which may we all obtain, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, honour, now, and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## H O M I L Y XXXIII.

---

1 COR. xiii. 4.

*Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up.*

THUS, whereas he had shewed, that both faith, and knowledge, and prophecy, and tongues, and gifts, and healing, and a perfect life, and martyrdom, if love be absent, are no great advantage; of necessity he next makes an outline of its matchless beauty, adorning its image with the parts of virtue, as with a sort of colours, and putting together all its members with exactness. But do not thou hastily pass by, beloved, the things spoken, but examine each one of them with much care, that thou mayest know both the treasure which is in the thing, and the art of the painter. Consider, for example, from what point he at once began, and what he set first, as the cause of all its excellencies. And what is this? Long-suffering. This is the root of all self-denial. Wherefore also a certain wise man said, *A man that is long-suffering<sup>1</sup> is abundant in understanding: but he that is hasty of spirit is mightily foolish<sup>2</sup>.*

And comparing it too with a strong city, he said that it is more secure than that. For it is both an invincible weapon, and a sort of impregnable tower, easily beating off all annoyances. And as a spark falling into the deep doth it no injury, but is itself easily quenched: so upon a long-suffering soul whatever unexpected thing falls, this indeed speedily vanishes, but the soul it disturbs not: for of a truth there is nothing so impenetrable as long-suffering. You may talk of armies, money, horses, walls, arms, or any thing else whatsoever; you will name nothing like long-suffering. For he that is clad with those, oftentimes, being overcome by anger, is upset, like a worthless child, and fills all with confusion and

1 He that  
is slow to  
wrath.  
Engl.  
Vers.  
Prov. 14.

2 exalteth  
folly.  
Eng.  
Vers.

**HOMIL.** tempest : but this man, settled as it were in a harbour, enjoys a profound calm. Though thou surround him with loss, thou hast not moved the rock ; though thou bring insult upon him, thou hast not shaken the tower ; and though thou bruise him with stripes, thou hast not wounded the adamant.

Yea, and therefore is he called long-suffering, because he hath a kind of long and great soul. For that which is long, is also called great. But this excellence is born of love, both to them who possess and to them who enjoy it contributing no small advantage. For tell me not of those abandoned wretches, who, doing evil, and suffering none, become worse : since here, not from his long-suffering, but from those who abuse it, this result arises. Tell me not therefore of these, but of those gentler persons, who gain great benefit therefrom. For when, having done ill, they suffer none, admiring the meekness of the sufferer, they reap thereby a very great lesson of self-command.

But Paul doth not stop here, but adds also the other high achievements of charity, saying, *is kind*. For since there are some, who practise their long-suffering not to their own self-denial, but to the punishment of those who have provoked them, to make them burst asunder; he saith that neither hath charity this defect. Wherefore also he added, *is kind*. For not at all with a view to light up the fire, in those who are inflamed by anger, do they deal more mannerly<sup>1</sup> with them, but in order to appease and extinguish it: and not only by enduring nobly, but also by soothing and comforting, do they cure the sore, and heal the wound of passion.

*Envieth not.* For it is possible for one to be both long-suffering and envious, and thereby that excellency is spoiled. But love avoids this also.

*Vaunteth not itself;* i. e. is not rash\*. For it renders him who loves both considerate, and grave, and steady in his movements. In truth, one mark of those who love unlawfully is a defect in this point. Whereas he to whom this love is

\* οὐ πεστινέται. Theod. in loc. gives the word the same turn. “ She inquires not into matters which concern her not, (for that is τὸ τις τις τις) she feels not about for the measures

of the Divine Substance, nor asks questions in His dispensations, as some use to do. He that loveth, cannot endure to do any thing rash.”

known, is of all men the most entirely freed from these evils. 1 COR.  
For when there is no anger within, both rashness and insolence 13. 4.  
are clean taken away. Charity, like some excellent husband-  
man, taking her seat inwardly in the soul, and not suffering  
any of these thorns to spring up.

*Is not puffed up.* For so we see many who think highly  
of themselves on the score of these very excellencies; for  
example, on not being envious, nor grudging, nor mean-  
spirited, nor rash: these evils being incidental not to wealth  
and poverty only, but even to things naturally good. But  
love perfectly purges out all. And consider: He that is long-  
suffering is not of course also kind. But if he be not kind,  
the thing becomes a vice, and he is in danger of falling into  
malice. Therefore she supplies a medicine, I mean kindness,  
and preserves the virtue pure. Again, the kind person often  
becomes over-complaisant; but this also she corrects. For  
“*love*, saith he, *vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up*: the  
kind and long-suffering is often ostentatious; but she takes  
away this vice also.”

And see how he adorns her not only from what she hath, (2.)  
but also from what she hath not. For he saith that she both  
brings in virtue, and extirpates vice, nay rather she suffers it  
not to spring up at all<sup>1</sup>. Thus he said not, “ She envieith,<sup>1</sup> ~~envy~~,  
indeed, but overcometh envy ;” nor, “ is arrogant, but chas-<sup>desire</sup>,  
tiseth that passion ;” but, *envieith not, vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up*; which truly is most to be admired, that even with-<sup>envy</sup> ~~envy~~,  
out toil she accomplishes her good things, and without war  
and battle-array her trophy is set up: she not permitting him  
that possesseth her to toil, and so to attain the crown, but  
without labour conveying to him her prize. For where there  
is not passion to contend against sober reason, what labour  
can there be?

[2.] *Doth not behave herself unseemly*<sup>b</sup>. “ Nay, why,” saith  
he, “ do I say, she *is not puffed up*, when she is so far from  
that feeling, that in suffering the very worst for Him whom  
she loves, she doth not even count the thing an unseemliness?”  
Again, he did not say, “ she suffereth unseemliness, but

<sup>b</sup> Or, *doth not think herself treated* brethren's sake she refuses to do, under  
*unseemly*. Theod. in loc. “ There is no the notion that to do so would be an  
mean or lowly thing which for the unseemly thing.”

**HOMIL.** beareth the shame nobly," but, "she doth not even entertain any  
xxxiii. sense at all of the shame." For if the lovers of money endure all manner of reproaches for the sake of that sordid traffic of theirs, and far from hiding their faces, do even exult in it: much more he that hath this approved charity will count nothing whatsoever to be refused for the safety's sake of those whom he loves: nay, nor will any thing that he can suffer shame him.

And that we may not fetch our example from any thing base, let us examine this same statement in its application to Christ, and then we shall see the force of what hath been said. For our Lord Jesus Christ was both spit upon, and beaten with rods by pitiful slaves; and not only did He not count it an unseemliness, but He even exulted, and called the thing glory; and bringing in a robber and murderer with Himself before the rest into paradise, and discoursing with a harlot, and this when the standers-by all accused him, he counted not the thing to be disgraceful, but both allowed her to kiss his feet, and to bedew his body with her tears, and to wipe them away with her hair, and this amid a company of spectators who were foes and enemies; *for love doeth nothing unseemly.*

Therefore also fathers, though they be the first of philosophers and orators, are not ashamed to lisp with their children; and none of those who see them find fault with them, but the thing is esteemed so good and right, as to be even worth a prayer. And again, should they become vicious, the parents keep on correcting, caring for them, abridging the reproaches they incur, and are not ashamed. For love *doth nothing unseemly*, but as it were with certain golden wings covereth up all the offences of the beloved.

Thus also Jonathan loved David, and hearing his father <sup>1</sup> 1 Sam. say<sup>1</sup>, *Thou son of damsels that have run away from their*  
 20, 30. <sup>2</sup> *homes*<sup>2</sup>, *thou womanly bred*<sup>3</sup>, he was not ashamed, though the  
<sup>2 nega-</sup> <sup>3 nega-</sup> words be full of great reproof. For what he means is this:  
<sup>2 nega-</sup> <sup>3 nega-</sup> *"Thou son of mean harlots who are mad after men, who run*  
<sup>Eng.</sup> <sup>2 nega-</sup> <sup>3 nega-</sup> *after the passers-by, thou unnerfed and effeminate wretch, who*  
<sup>the per-</sup> <sup>Eng.</sup> <sup>2 nega-</sup> *hast nothing of a man, but livest to the shame of thyself and*  
<sup>verse</sup> <sup>Eng.</sup> <sup>2 nega-</sup> *the mother who bare thee."* What then? Did he grieve at  
<sup>rebel-</sup> <sup>Eng.</sup> <sup>2 nega-</sup> *these things, and hide his face, and turn away from his be-*  
<sup>lious wo-</sup> <sup>Eng.</sup> <sup>3 LXX.</sup> *loved?* Nay quite the contrary; he displayed his fondness as  
<sup>man."</sup> <sup>Eng.</sup> <sup>2 nega-</sup> *an ornament. And yet the one was at that time a king, and a*  
<sup>2 nega-</sup> <sup>3 nega-</sup> *phi.*

king's son, even Jonathan; the other a fugitive and a wanderer, <sup>1 Cor. 18. 4.</sup> I mean, David. But not even thus was he ashamed of his friendship. *For love doth not behave itself unseemly.* Yea, this is its wonderful quality, that not only it suffers not the injured to grieve and feel galled, but even disposes him to rejoice. Accordingly, he too, of whom we are speaking, after all these things, just as though he had a crown put on him, went away and fell on David's neck. For love knows not what sort of thing shame may be. Therefore it glories in those things, for which another hides his face. Since the shame is, not to know how to love; not, when thou lovest, to peril thyself, and endure all for thy beloved ones.

But when I say, "all," do not suppose that I mean things injurious also; for example, assisting a youth in a love affair, or whatsoever hurtful thing any one may beseech another to do for him. For such a person doth not love, and this I shewed you lately from the Egyptian woman: since in truth he only is the lover, who seeks what is profitable to the beloved: so that if any pursue not this, even what is right and good, though he make ten thousand professions of love, he is more hostile than any enemies.

So also Rebecca aforetime, because she exceedingly clung<sup>1</sup> ἀνεβα- to her son, both perpetrated a theft, and was not ashamed of <sup>λαρυγνί-</sup>  
<sup>νον.</sup> detection, neither was she afraid, though the risk was no "made common one; but even when her son carefully debated<sup>1</sup> the <sup>some</sup> minute matter with her, *upon me be thy curse, my son,* she said. <sup>objec-</sup>  
<sup>tion.</sup> Dost thou see even in a woman the soul of an Apostle? (3.)

\* This view of Rebecca's conduct is generally sanctioned by the Fathers: so St. Augustine: "That which Jacob did by direction of his mother so as to appear to deceive his father, if you consider it diligently and faithfully, non est mendacium sed mysterium. And if we term that sort of thing a lie, by the same rule we must also account as lies all parables and figures whatsoever." contr. Mendac. ad Consentium, c. 24. St. Ambrose, (de Jacob et vita beata, ii. 6.) "In the mind of that pious mother the mystery overweighed the tie of affection. She was not so much preferring Jacob to his brother, as offering him to the Lord, who, she knew, had power to preserve the gift presented unto Him." This seems to

mean, that in consecrating Jacob to be the first-born, she knowingly separated him from herself, and so made a greater sacrifice. S. Chrys. himself says, "Rebecca did this not of her own mind, but in obedience to the divine oracle." (on Gen. Hom. 53. l. 414.) And he proceeds to point out God's hand in certain minute details of the transaction. It appears from St. Jerome, (l. 169.) that Hippolytus, Irenæus' disciple, early in the third century, took the same view. St. Gregory Nazianzen seems to be the only writer who has left a contrary judgment on record: saying, "he pursued a noble object by ignoble means." The general result of the reflections of the Fathers on the subject seems to be, that as where we have God's *express*

**HOMIL.** how, even as Paul chose, (if one may compare a small thing  
XXXIII. with a great,) to be anathema for the Jews' sake<sup>1</sup>, so also she,  
<sup>1 Rom.</sup> 9. 3. that her son might be blessed, chose to be no less than accursed.

And the good things she gave up to him, for she was not, it seems, to be blessed with him, but the evils she was prepared to endure herself alone: nevertheless she rejoiced, and hastened, and this where so great a danger lay before her, and she was grieved at the delay of the business: having besides a fear, lest Esau might anticipate them, and render her wisdom vain. Wherefore also she cuts short the conversation, and urges on the young man, and just permitting him to answer what had been said, states a reason-sufficient to persuade him. For she said not, "thou sayest these things without reason, and in vain thou fearest, thy father having grown old, and being deprived of clearness of sight:" but what? "*upon me be thy curse, my son.* Only do thou not mar the plot, nor lose the object of our chace, nor give up the treasure."

And this very Jacob, served he not for wages with his kinsman twice seven years? Was he not together with the bondage subject to mockery in respect of that trick? What then? Did he feel of the mockery? Did he count it behaving himself unseemly, that being a freeman, and free born, and well brought up, he endured slaves' treatment among his own kinsmen: a thing which is wont to be most vexing, when one receives opprobrious treatment from one's friends? In no wise. And the cause was, his love, which made the time, though long, appear short. *For they were,* saith he, <sup>2 Gen.</sup> <sup>29. 20.</sup> *in his sight as a few days.* So far was he from being galled and blushing for this his bondage. Justly then said the blessed Paul, *Love doth not behave itself unseemly.*

[3.] Ver. 5. *Seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked.*

Thus having said, *doth not behave itself unseemly*, he sheweth also the temper of mind, on account of which she doth not behave herself unseemly. And what is that temper? That she *seeketh not her own.* For the beloved she esteems

command or approbation, we are sure of the rectitude of what would otherwise be wrong, so there may be circumstances rendering such command or approbation more or less probable, which ought at

least to stay us from censure: and that marked providential interference, and mysterious allusion, throughout, are to be considered as such circumstances.

to be all, and then only *behaveth herself unseemly*, when she <sup>1 Cor. 13. 5.</sup> cannot free him from such unseemliness; so that if it be possible by her own unseemliness to benefit her beloved, she doth not so much as count the thing unseemliness; for the other party thereafter is yourself, when you love<sup>1</sup>: since this<sup>1</sup> *ἰστὶν* is friendship, that the lover and the beloved should no longer *γὰρ εἰ-* <sup>τὸς ἀν-</sup> be two persons divided, but in a manner one single person; *λαυτόν*. a thing which no how takes place, except from love. Seek not therefore thine own, that thou mayest find thine own. For he that seeks his own, finds not his own. Wherefore also Paul said, *Let no man seek his own, but every man another's<sup>2</sup>.* For your own profit lies in the profit of your<sup>2</sup> <sup>1 Cor. 10. 24.</sup> neighbour, and his in yours. As therefore one that had his own gold buried in the house of his neighbour, should he refuse to go and there seek and dig it up, will never see it; so likewise here, he that will not seek his own profit in the advantage of his neighbour, will not attain unto the crowns due to this: God Himself having therefore so disposed of it, in order that we should be mutually bound together: and even as one awakening a slumbering child to follow his brother, when he is of himself unwilling, places in the brother's hand that which he desires and longs for, that through desire of obtaining it he may pursue after him that holds it, and accordingly so it takes place: thus also here, each man's own profit hath he given to his neighbour, that hence we may run after one another, and not be torn asunder.

And if thou wilt, see this also in our case who address you. For my profit depends on thee, and thy advantage on me. Thus, on the one hand it profits thee to be taught the things that please God, but with this have I been entrusted, that thou mightest receive it from me, and therefore mightest be compelled to run unto me; and on the other hand it profits me, that thou shouldest be made better: for the reward which I shall receive for this will be great; but this again lieth in thee; and therefore am I compelled to follow after thee, that thou mayest be better, and that I may receive my profit from thee. Wherefore also Paul saith, *For what is my hope? are not even ye?* And again, *My hope, and my joy, and the crown of my rejoicing<sup>3</sup>.* So that the joy of Paul<sup>3</sup> <sup>1 Thess. 2. 19.</sup>

HOMIL. was the disciples, and his joy they had. Therefore he even  
XXXIII. wept, when he saw them perishing.

Again, their profit depended on Paul: wherefore he said,  
<sup>1</sup> *Acts* *For the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain*<sup>1</sup>. And  
 28. 20. again, *These things I endure for the elect's sakes, that they*  
<sup>2</sup> *2 Tim.* *may obtain eternal life*<sup>2</sup>. And this one may see in worldly  
 2. 10. things. *For the wife, saith he, hath not power of her own*  
<sup>3</sup> *1 Cor.* *body, nor yet the husband; but the wife of the husband's,*  
 7. 4. *and the husband of the wife's*<sup>3</sup>. So likewise we, when we  
 wish to bind any together, do this. We leave neither of them  
 in his own power, but extending a chain between them, we  
 cause the one to be holden of the other, and the other of the one.

Wilt thou also see this in the case of governors? He that judges sits not in judgment for himself, but seeking the profit of his neighbour. The governed, on the other hand, seek the profit of the governor by their attendance, by their ministry, by all the other things. Soldiers take up their stations for us, for on our account they peril themselves. We for them are in straits; for from us are their supplies.

(4.) But if thou sayest, "each one doth this seeking his own," this also say I, but I add, that by the good of another one's own is won. Thus both the soldier, unless he fight for them that support him, hath none that ministers to him for this end: and this same on the other hand, unless he nourish the soldier, hath none to arm himself in his behalf.

[4.] Seest thou charity, how it is every where extended, and manages all things? But be not weary, until thou have thoroughly acquainted thyself with this golden chain. For having said, *seeketh not her own*, he mentions again the good things produced by this. And what are these?

*Is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil.* See charity again not only subduing vice, but not even suffering her to take any ground at all. For he said not, "though provoked, she overcomes," but, *is not even provoked*. And he said not, "worketh no evil," but, "not even *thinketh*:" i. e. so far from contriving any evil, she doth not even suspect it of the beloved. How then could she work any, or how be provoked? who doth not even endure to admit an evil surmise; with whom is the fountain of all affection.

Ver. 6. *Rejoiceth not in iniquity.* i. e. doth not feel pleasure over those that suffer ill; and not this only, but also, what is much greater, *rejoiceth in the truth.* “She feels pleasure,” saith he, “with them that are well spoken of,” as Paul saith, *Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep*<sup>1</sup>.

Hence, she *envieth not*, hence she *is not puffed up*: since in fact she accounts the good things<sup>d</sup> of others her own.

Seest thou how by degrees charity makes her nursling an angel? For when he is void of anger, and pure from envy, and free from every tyrannical passion, consider that even from the nature of man he is delivered from henceforth, and hath arrived in a port, at the very serenity of the angels.

Nevertheless he is not content with these, but he hath something even more than these to say: according to his plan of stating the stronger points later. Wherefore he saith, *beareth all things.* From her long-suffering, from her goodness; whether they be insults, or stripes, or death, or whatsoever else. And this again one may perceive from the case of blessed David. For what could be more intolerable than to see a son rising up against him, and aiming at usurpation, and thirsting for a father's blood? Yet this did he, that blessed one, endure, nor even so could he bear to throw out one bitter expression against the parricide; but even when he left all the rest to his captains, gave a strong injunction respecting his safety. For strong was the foundation of his love. Wherefore also it *beareth all things.*

Now its power the Apostle here intimates, but its goodness, by what follows. For, *it hopeth all things*, saith he, *believeth all things, endureth all things.* What is, *hopeth all things?* “It doth not despair,” saith he, “of any good thing in the beloved, but even though he be worthless, it continues to correct, to provide, to care for him.”

*Believeth all things.* “For it doth not merely hope,” saith he, “but also believeth from its great affection.” And even if these good things should not turn out according to its hope, but the other should prove yet more intolerable, it bears even these. For, saith he, it *endureth all things.*

[5.] Ver. 8. *Charity never faileth.*

<sup>d</sup> Fronto Duceus reads ~~manū~~.

**HOMIL.** Seest thou when he put the crown on the arch, and what of all things is peculiar to this gift? For what is, *faileth not?* it is not severed, is not dissolved by endurance. For it puts up with every thing: since happen what will, he that loves never can hate. This then is the greatest of its excellencies.

Such a person was Paul. Wherefore also he said, *If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh*<sup>1</sup>; and he continued hoping. And to Timothy he gave <sup>11. 14.</sup> a charge, saying, *And the servant of the Lord must not strive, but be gentle unto all men, . . . . in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, if God peradventure will give them the knowledge of the truth*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2 2 Tim. 2. 24. 25.</sup> "What then," saith one, "if they be enemies and heathens, ~~men, i.e.~~ must not one hate them?" One must hate, not them, but their doctrine; not the man, but the wicked conduct, the corrupt mind. For the man is God's work, but the deceit is the devil's work. Do thou not therefore confound the things of God, and the things of the devil. Since the Jews were both blasphemers, and persecutors, and injurious, and spake ten thousand evil things of Christ. Did Paul then hate them, he who of all men most loved Christ? In no wise, but he both loved them, and did every thing for their sakes: and at one time he saith, *My heart's desire and prayer to God for them*

<sup>3 Rom. 10. 1; 9. 3.</sup> *is, that they may be saved*<sup>3</sup>: and at another, *I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for their sakes.* Thus also Ezekiel seeing them slain saith, *Alas, O Lord, dost thou blot out the remnant of Israel*<sup>4</sup>? And Moses, *If thou wilt forgive their sin, forgive*<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>4 Ezek. 9. 8.</sup> <sup>5 Exod. 32. 32.</sup> Why then saith David, *Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate thee, and against thy enemies did I not pine away?* *I hated them with perfect hatred*<sup>6</sup>?

<sup>6 Ps. 139. 21.</sup> Now, in the first place, not all things spoken in the Psalms by David, are spoken in the person of David. For it is he himself who saith, *I have dwelt in the tents of Kedar*<sup>7</sup>; and, <sup>7 Ps. 120. 5; 137. 1.</sup> *by the waters of Babylon, there we sat down, and wept:* yet, he neither saw Babylon, nor the tents of Kedar.

But besides this, we require now a completer self-command. Wherefore also when the disciples besought that fire might come down, even as in the case of Elias, *Ye know not, saith Christ, what manner of spirit ye are of*<sup>8</sup>. For at that time <sup>8 Luke 9. 55.</sup>

not the ungodliness only, but also the ungodly themselves, <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
they were commanded to hate, in order that their friendship <sup>13. 9.</sup>  
 might not prove an occasion of transgression unto them.  
 Therefore he severed their connexions, both by blood and  
 marriage, and on every side he fenced them off.

But now because he hath brought us to a more entire self-command, and set us on high above that mischief, he bids us rather admit and soothe them. For we get no harm from them, but they get good by us. What then doth he say? we must not hate, but pity. Since if thou shalt hate, how wilt thou easily convert him that is in error? how wilt thou pray for the unbeliever? for that one ought to pray, hear what Paul saith: *I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men*<sup>1</sup>. But that all were not then believers, is, I suppose, <sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. <sup>2. 1.</sup> evident unto every one. And again, *for kings, and all that are in authority*. But that these were ungodly and transgressors, this also is equally manifest. Further, mentioning also the reason for the prayer, he adds, *for this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth*. Therefore, if he find a Gentile wife consorting with a believer, he dissolves not the marriage. Yet what is more closely joined than a man to his wife? *For they two shall be one flesh*<sup>2</sup>, and <sup>2 Gen. 2.</sup> <sup>24.</sup> great in that instance is the charm, and ardent the desire. But if we are to hate ungodly and lawless men, we shall go on to hate also sinners; and thus in regular process thou wilt be broken off from the most even of thy brethren, or rather from all: for there is not one, no, not one, without sin. For if it be our duty to hate the enemies of God, one must not hate the ungodly only, but also sinners: and thus we shall be worse than wild beasts, estranged from all, and puffed up with pride; even as that Pharisee. But not thus did Paul command us, but how? *Warn the unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men*<sup>3</sup>. <sup>3 1 Thes.</sup> <sup>5. 14.</sup>

[6.] What then doth he mean, when he saith, *If any obey not our word by this epistle, mark that man, and keep no company with him*<sup>4</sup>? In the first place, he saith this of brethren, <sup>4 2 Thes.</sup> <sup>3. 14.</sup> however not even so without limitation, but this too with gentleness. For do not thou cut off what follows, but sub-

HOMIL. join also the next clause : how, having said, *keep no company,*  
XXXIII. he added, *yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.* Seest thou how he bade us hate the deed that is evil, and not the man ? For indeed it is the work of the devil to tear us asunder from one another, and he hath ever used great diligence to take away love, that he may cut off the way of correction, and may retain him in error, and thee in enmity, and thus block up the way of his salvation. For when both the physician hates the sick man and flies from him, and the sick man turns away from the physician, when will the distempered person be restored, seeing that neither the one will call in the other's aid, nor will the other go to him ?

But wherefore, tell me, dost thou at all turn away from him and avoid him ? Because he is ungodly ? Truly for this cause oughtest thou to welcome and attend him, that thou mayest raise him up in his sickness. But if he be incurably sick, still thou hast been bidden to do thy part. Since Judas also was incurably diseased, yet God left not off attending upon him. Wherefore, neither do thou grow weary. For even if after much labour thou fail to deliver him from his ungodliness, yet shalt thou receive the deliverer's reward, and wilt cause him to wonder at thy gentleness, and so all this praise will pass on to God. For though thou shouldest work wonders, and raise the dead, and whatsoever work thou doest, the Heathen will never wonder at thee so much, as when they see thee displaying a meek, gentle, mild disposition. And this is no small achievement : since many will even be entirely delivered from their evil way ; there being nothing that hath such power to allure men as love. For in respect of the former they will rather be jealous of thee, I mean the signs and wonders ; but for this they will both admire and love thee : and if they love, they will also lay hold of the truth in due course. If however he become not all at once a believer, wonder not, nor hurry on, neither do thou require all things at once, but suffer him for the present to praise, and love, and unto this in due course he will come.

[7.] And that thou mayest clearly know how great a thing this is, hear how even Paul, going before an unbelieving judge, made his defence. *I think myself happy,* saith he, *having to answer for myself before thee*<sup>1</sup>. And these

<sup>1</sup> Acts  
26. 2.

things he said, not to flatter him, far from it; but wishing to gain him by his gentleness. And he did in part gain him, and he that was till then considered to be condemned took captive his judge, and the victory is confessed by the person himself who was made captive, with a loud voice in the presence of all, saying, *Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian*<sup>1</sup>. What then saith Paul? He spreads his net the wider, and saith, *I would to God that not only thou, but also all present were that which I am, except these bonds.* What sayest thou, O Paul? *except these bonds?* And what confidence remains for thee, if thou art ashamed of these things, and fliest from them, and this before so great a multitude? Dost thou not every where in thy Epistles boast of this matter, and call thyself a prisoner? Dost thou not every where carry about this chain in our sight as a diadem? What then hath happened now, that thou deprecatest these bonds? “I deprecate them not,” saith he, “nor am I ashamed of them, but I condescend to their weakness. For they are not yet able to receive my glorying; and I have learned from my Lord not to put *a piece of a new cloth upon an old garment*<sup>2</sup>: therefore did I thus speak. For in fact, unto this time are they ill-affected to our doctrine, and abhor the cross.<sup>3 S. Mat. 9. 16.</sup> If therefore I should add also bonds, their hatred becometh greater; I removed these, therefore, that the other might be made acceptable. So it is, that to them it seems disgraceful to be bound, because they have not as yet tasted of the Glory which is with us. One must therefore condescend: and when they shall have learned self-denial, then will they know the beauty also of this iron, and the lustre which comes of these bonds.” Furthermore, discoursing with others, he even calls the thing a free gift, saying, *It is given to us by God, not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake*<sup>3</sup>. But for the time then present, it was a great thing for the hearers not to be ashamed of the cross: for which cause he goes on gradually. Thus, neither doth any one introducing a person to a palace, before that he beholds the vestibule, compel him, yet standing without, to survey what is within: since in that way it will not even seem admirable, unless one enter in, and so acquaint one's self with all.

So then let us also deal with the heathen sort: with con-

**HOMIL.** descension, with love. For love is a great teacher, and able  
XXXIII. both to withdraw men from error, and to reform the character,  
 and to lead them by the hand unto self-denial, and out of  
 stones to make men.

[8.] And if thou wouldest learn her power, bring me a man timid and fearful of every sound, and trembling at shadows; or passionate, and harsh, and a wild beast rather than a man; or wanton and licentious; or endowed with any sort of wickedness, and deliver him into the hands of love, and introduce him to this school; and thou wilt speedily see that cowardly and timid creature, turned into a brave and magnanimous one, and venturing upon all things cheerfully. And what is wonderful, not from any change of nature do these things result, but in the coward soul itself love manifests her peculiar power; and it is much the same kind of result, as if one should cause a leaden sword, not

<sup>1</sup> ἀπλακ-  
<sup>στος</sup>  
 Gen. 25. turned into steel, but continuing in the nature of lead, to do

<sup>27.</sup> the work of steel. As thus: Jacob was a *plain man*<sup>1</sup>, *dwell-*

<sup>2 σιξιας</sup>  
 LXX. *ing in a house*<sup>2</sup>, and unpractised in toils and dangers, living

<sup>rec. vers.</sup> a kind of remiss and easy life, and like a virgin in her chamber,

<sup>"tents,"</sup> so also he was compelled for the most part to sit within doors

and keep the house; withdrawn from the forum, and all tumults of the forum, and from all such matters, and ever continuing in ease and quietness. What then? After that the torch of love had set him on fire, see how it made this plain and home-keeping man apt to endure and fond of toil. And of this hear not what I say, but what the patriarch himself saith: how finding fault with his kinsman, his words are,

<sup>3 Gen.</sup>  
<sup>31. 36.</sup> *These twenty years am I with thee*<sup>3</sup>. And how hast thou

been these twenty years? (For this also he adds,) *Consumed by the heat in the day time, and with the frost by night, and sleep departed from mine eyes.* Thus speaks that *plain man, keeping at home*, and living that easy life.

Again, that he was timid, is evident, in that, expecting to see Esau, he was dead with fear. But see again, how this timid man became bolder than a lion under the influence of love. For putting himself forward like some champion before the rest, he was ready to be first in receiving that savage and slaughter-breathing brother, as he supposed him to be, and with his own body to purchase the safety of his wives: and him

whom he feared and shuddered at, he desired to behold him- <sup>1 Cor. 13. 9.</sup>  
self foremost in the array. For this fear was not so strong as \_\_\_\_\_ his affection for his wives. Seest thou how, being timid, he became suddenly adventurous, not by changing his character, but being invigorated by love? For that after this also he was timid, is evident by his changing from place to place.

But let no man consider what has been said to be a charge against that just man: since being timid is no reproach, for this is a man's nature; but the doing any thing unseemly for timidity's sake. For it is possible for one that is timid by nature, to become courageous through piety. What did Moses? Did he not, through fear of a single Egyptian, fly, and go away into banishment? Nevertheless this fugitive, who could not endure the menace of a single man, after that he tasted of the honey of love, nobly, and without compulsion from any man, was forward to perish together with them whom he loved. *For if Thou wilt forgive their sin, saith he, forgive; and if not, blot me also out of Thy book, which Thou hast written*<sup>1.</sup> <sup>1 Exod. 32. 32.</sup>

[9.] Moreover, that love makes also the fierce moderate, and the wanton chaste, we have no longer need of any examples in this: this being evident to all men. Though a man be more savage than any wild beast, no sheep so gentle as he is rendered by love. Thus, what could be more savage and frantic than Saul? But when his daughter let his enemy go, he uttered not against her even a bitter word. And he that unsparingly put to the sword all the priests for David's sake, seeing that his daughter had sent him away from the house, was not indignant with her even as far as words; and this when so great a fraud had been contrived against him: because he was restrained by the stronger bridle of love.

Now as moderation, so chastity is an ordinary effect of love. If a man love his own wife as he ought to love, even though he be never so much inclined to wantonness, he will not endure to look upon another woman, on account of his affection for her. *For love*<sup>2</sup>, saith one, *is strong as death.* So that from<sup>2</sup> Cant. no other source doth wanton behaviour arise, than from want<sup>8. 5.</sup> of love.

Since then love is the Artificer of all virtue, let us with all exactness implant her in our own souls, that she may produce for us many blessings, and that we may have her fruit con-

**HOMIL.** tinually abounding, the fruit which is ever fresh, and never decays. For thus shall we obtain no less than eternal blessings; which may we all obtain, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom, to the Father, and also the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now, and for ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXIV.

---

1 COR. xiii. 8.

*But whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.*

HAVING shewn the excellency of charity from its being requisite both to the gifts, and to the virtues of life; and from rehearsal of all its good qualities, and by shewing it to be the foundation of exact self-denial; from another, a third head, again he points out its worth. And this he doth, first from a wish to persuade those who seemed to be accounted inferior, that it is in their power to have the chief of all signs, and that they will be no worse off than the possessors of the gifts, if they have this, but rather much better: secondly, with regard on the other hand to them that had the greater gifts, and were lifted up thereby, studying to bring them down, and to signify, that they have nothing unless they have this. For thus they would both love one another, envy as well as pride being hereby taken away; and reciprocally, loving one another, they would still further banish these passions. *For love envieth not, is not puffed up.* So that on every side he throws around them an impregnable wall, and a manifold unanimity, first removing all their disorders, and thereby again waxing stronger. Therefore also he put forward innumerable reasons which might comfort their dejection. As thus: both *the same Spirit*, saith he, is the giver; and *He giveth to profit withal; and divideth as he will*, and it is a gift which He divideth, not a debt. Though thou receive but a little, thou dost equally contribute to the body, and even thus thou enjoyest much honour. And he that hath the greater, needs thee who hast the less. And, “Charity is the greatest gift, and *the more excellent way.*”

**HOMIL.** Now all this he said, doubly to bind them to each other,  
XXXIV. both by their not considering themselves disparaged, while they had this; and because, after pursuit and attainment of it, they henceforth feel not as might be expected from human infirmity; both as having the root of all gifts, and as no longer capable of contentiousness, even though they had nothing. For he that is once led captive by charity, is freed from contentiousness.

And this is why, pointing out to them how great advantages they shall thence reap, he sketched out its fruits; by his praises of it repressing their disorders: inasmuch as each one of the things mentioned by him was a sufficient medicine to heal their wounds. Wherefore also he said, *suffereth long*, to them that are at strife one with another; *is kind*, to them that stand mutually aloof, and bear a secret grudge; *envieth not*, to them that look grudgingly on their superiors; *vaunteth not itself*, to them that are separated; *is not puffed up*, to them that boast themselves against others; *doth not count it unseemly*, to them that are unwilling to condescend<sup>a</sup>; *seeketh not her own*, to them that overlook the rest; *is not easily provoked*, *thinketh no evil*, to them that are insolent; *rejoiceth not in iniquity*, *but rejoiceth in the truth*, to them again that are envious; *beareth all things*, to them that are treacherously dealt with; *hopeth all things*, to the despairing; *endureth all things*, *never faileth*, to them that easily separate themselves.

[2.] Now then after that in every way he had shewn her to be very exceedingly great, again he doth so from another most important head, by a fresh comparison elevating her dignity, and saying thus; *but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease*. For if both these were brought in in order to the faith; when that is every where sown abroad, the use of these is henceforth superfluous. But the loving one another shall not cease, rather it shall even advance further, both here, and hereafter, and then more than now. For here there are many things that weaken<sup>1</sup> our love; wealth, business, passions of the body, disorders of the soul: but there none of these.

<sup>1</sup> *χαυ-*  
*ρουτα.* So Saville conj. *οὐκ θέλοντας*: the Editions have *οὐκ ὑφείλοντας*, “do not think it their duty.” \*

But although it be no marvel that prophecies and tongues <sup>1 COR.</sup> should fail, that knowledge should be done away, this is what <sup>13. 12.</sup> may cause some perplexity. For this also he added, and said, *Whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.* What then? are we then to live in ignorance? Far from it. Nay, then specially it is probable that our knowledge is made intense. Wherefore also he said, *Then shall I know, even as also I am known.* For this reason, if you mark it, that you might not suppose this to be done away equally with the prophecy and the tongues, having said, *Whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away*, he was not silent, but added also the manner of its vanishing away, immediately subjoining the saying,

Ver. 9. 10. *We know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.*

It is not therefore knowledge that is done away, but this circumstance, that our knowledge is in part. For we shall not only know as much, but even a great deal more. But that I may also make it plain by example; now we know that God is every where, but how, we know not. That He made out of things that are not the things that are, we know; but of the manner we are ignorant. That He was born of a virgin, we know, but how, we know not yet. But then shall we know somewhat more and more clearly concerning these things. Next he points out also how great is the distance of the two, and that our deficiency is no small one, saying,

Ver. 11. *When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things.*

And by another example too he manifests the same thing <sup>1 Cor.</sup> again, saying,

Ver. 12. *For now we see through a glass<sup>1.</sup>*

Further, because the glass sets before us the thing seen in <sup>(2.)</sup> some way or other, he added, *darkly<sup>2.</sup>* to shew very strongly <sup>2. b. a. n. i. t. y.</sup> <sup>part.</sup> that the present knowledge is most partial.

*But then face to face.* Not as though God hath a face, but to express the notion of greater clearness and perspicuity. Seest thou how we learn all things by gradual addition?

*Now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also*

**HOMIL. I am known.** Seest thou how in two ways he pulls down  
xxxiv. their pride? Both because their knowledge is in part, and  
 because not even this have they of themselves. "For I knew  
<sup>1</sup> by ~~you~~. Him not, but He made Himself known<sup>1</sup> to me," saith he.  
~~you,~~ mademe Wherefore, even as He knew me, and Himself now first  
 know hastened towards me, so shall I hasten towards Him then  
 Him. much more than now. For so he that sits in darkness, as  
 long as he sees not the sun, doth not of himself hasten to meet  
 the beauty of its beam. That beam indeed shews itself as soon  
 as it hath begun to shine: but when he perceives its bright-  
 ness, then also himself at length follows after its light. This  
 then is the meaning of the expression, *even as also I am  
 known*. Not that we shall so know Him as He us, but that  
 even as He hastened toward us now, so also shall we cleave  
 unto Him then, and shall know many of the things which are  
 now secret, and shall enjoy that most blessed society and  
 wisdom. For if Paul, who knew so much, was a child,  
 consider what those things must be. If these be *a glass*  
 and *a riddle*, do thou hence again infer, God's open Face,  
 how great a thing It is.

[3.] But that I may open out to thee some small part of this  
 difference, and may enkindle some faint ray of this thought  
 in thy soul, I would have thee recall to mind things as they  
 were in the Law, now after that grace hath shone forth. For  
 those things too, that came before grace, had a certain great  
 and marvellous appearance: nevertheless hear what Paul  
 saith of them after grace came: *That which was made  
 glorious had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory  
 that excelleth*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. 3. 10. But that what I say may be made yet clearer, let us manage  
 the argument with a view to some one of the rites then per-  
 formed, and then thou wilt see how great is the difference. And if thou wilt, let us bring forward that passover and this, and then shalt thou be aware of our superiority. For the Jews indeed celebrated it, but they celebrated it *so as in a glass, and darkly*. But these hidden mysteries they never at any time did even conceive in their mind, nor what things they were, which those prefigured. They saw a lamb slain, and the blood of a beast, and door-posts sprinkled with it; but that the Son of God incarnate shall be slain, and shall set

free the whole world, and shall grant both to Greeks and Barbarians to taste of this Blood, and shall open heaven to all, and shall offer what is there to the whole human race, and having taken His flesh steeped in blood, shall exalt it above the heaven, and the heaven of heavens, and in a word, above all the hosts on high, of the angels and archangels and all the other powers, and shall cause it to sit down upon the throne itself of the King, on the right hand of the Father shining in unspeakable glory,—these things, I say, no one either of them, or of the rest of mankind, either foreknew, or was able ever to conceive.

[4.] But what say those who shrink from nothing? That the expression, *now I know in part*, is spoken of dispensations; for that the apostle had the perfect knowledge of God. And how calls he himself a child? How sees he *through a glass*? How *darkly*, if he hath the sum of knowledge? And why doth he refer it as something peculiar to the Spirit, and to no other power in the creation, saying, *For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of a man which is in him?* *Even so the things of God knoweth no man, save the Spirit of God*<sup>1</sup>. And Christ again saith that this belongs to Himself alone, thus saying; *Not that any man hath seen the Father, save He which is of God, He hath seen the Father*<sup>2</sup>, <sup>1 Cor. 2, 11.</sup> <sup>3 John 6, 46.</sup> giving the name, *sight*, to the most clear and perfect knowledge.

And how shall he who knoweth the Essence, be ignorant of the dispensations? since that knowledge is greater than this.

“Are we then,” saith he, “ignorant of God?” Far from it. That He is, we know, but what He is, as regards His Essence, we know not yet. And that thou mayest understand that not concerning the dispensations did he speak the words, *now I know in part*; hear what follows. He adds then, *but then shall I know, even as also I am known*. He was not surely known by the dispensations, but by God.

Let none therefore consider this to be a small or simple transgression, but twofold, and threefold, yea and manifold. For not only is there this impiety, that they boast of knowing those things which belong to the Spirit alone, and to the Only-begotten Son of God, but also that when Paul could not acquire even this knowledge *which is in part* without the

**HOMIL.** revelation from above, these men say that they have obtained <sup>xxxiv.</sup> the whole from their own reasonings. For neither are they able to point out that the Scripture hath any where discoursed to us of these things.

[5.] But however, leaving their madness, let us give heed to the words which follow concerning charity. For he was not content with these things, but adds again, saying,

*Ver. 13. And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.*

(3.) For faith indeed and hope, when the good things believed and hoped for are come, cease. And to shew this Paul said, *For hope that is seen, is not hope; for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?* Again, *Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen <sup>1.</sup>. So that <sup>1 Rom.</sup> <sup>8. 24;</sup> <sup>Heb. 11.</sup> these cease when those appear; but charity is then most elevated, and becomes more vehement. Another praise again for charity. For neither is he content with those before mentioned, but he strives to discover again yet another. And observe: he hath said that it is a great gift, and a way to these in a more eminent manner. He hath said, that without it there is no great profit in our gifts; he hath shadowed out its image at length; he intends again and in another manner to exalt it, and to shew that it is great from its abiding. Wherefore also he said, *But now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.* How then is charity the greater? In that those pass away.*

If now so great is the virtue of charity, with good reason doth he add and say, *Follow after charity.* For there is surely need of *following*, and of a kind of vehement running after her: in such sort doth she fly from us, and so many are the things which subvert our course in that direction. Wherefore we have ever need of great earnestness in order to overtake her. And to point out this, Paul said not, *follow charity,* <sup>2. diuers.</sup> but, *pursue* <sup>2.</sup> her; stirring us up, and inflaming us to lay hold on her.

For so God from the beginning contrived ten thousand ways for implanting her in us. Thus, first, He granted one head to all, Adam. For why do we not all spring out of the earth? Why not full grown, as he was? In order that both the births and the bringing up of children,

and the being born one of another, might bind us mutually<sup>1</sup> *Cor.* <sup>13. 13.</sup> together. For this cause neither made He the woman out of the earth: and because the being of the same substance was not equally sufficient to shame us into unanimity, unless we had also the same progenitor, He provided also for this: since, if now, being separated only by place, we consider ourselves alien from one another; much more would this have happened, if our race had had two originals. For this cause therefore, as it were from some one head, he bound together the whole body of the human race. And because from the beginning they seemed to be in a manner two, see how he fastens them together again, and gathers them into one, by marriage. For, *for this cause, saith He, shall a man leave his father and his mother, and be joined unto his wife; and they two shall be for one flesh*<sup>1</sup>. And he said not, “the woman,”<sup>1</sup> *Gen. 2,* <sup>24.</sup> but, *the man*, because the desire too is stronger in him. Yea, *is ὀρεγα* and for this cause He made it also stronger, that it might *υιαν.* cause the superior party to bend to the absolute sway of this passion, and might subjugate it to the weaker. And since marriage also must needs be introduced, him from whom she sprang He made husband to the woman. For all things in the eye of God are second to charity. And if, when things had thus begun, the first man straightway became so frantic, and the devil sowed among them so great warfare and envy; what would he not have done, had they not sprung from one root?

Further, in order that the one might be subject, and the other rule; (for equality is wont oftentimes to bring in strife;) he suffered it not to be a democracy, but a monarchy; and as in an army, this order one may see in every family. In the rank of monarch, for instance, there is the husband; but in the rank of lieutenant and general, the wife; and the children too are allotted a third station in command. Then after these a fourth order, that of the servants. For these also bear rule over their inferiors, and some one of them is oftentimes set over the whole, keeping ever the post of the master, but still as a servant. And together with this again another command, and among the children themselves again another, according to their age, and according to their sex; since among the children the female doth not possess equal sway. And every where hath God made governments at small distances, and

Homil. thick together, that all might abide in concord and much good order. Therefore even before the race was increased to a multitude, when the first two only were in being, He bade him govern, and her obey. And in order again that He might not despise her as inferior, and separate from her, see how He honoured her, and made them one, even before her creation. For, *Let us make for man*, saith He, *a help-meet*, implying that she was made for his need, and thereby drawing him unto her who was made for his sake: since to all those things are we more kindly disposed, which are done for our sakes. But that she, on the other hand, might not be elated, as being granted him for help, nor might burst this bond, He makes her out of his side, signifying that she is a part of the whole body. And that neither might the man be elated therefore, He no longer permits that to belong to him alone, which before was his alone, but effected the contrary to this, by bringing in procreation of children, and herein too giving the chief honour unto the man, not however allowing the whole to be his.

(4.) Seest thou how many bonds of love God hath wrought? And these indeed by force of nature He hath lodged in us as pledges of concord. For both our being of the same substance leads to this; (for every animal loves its like;) and the woman being of the man, and again the children of both. Whence also many kinds of affection are produced. For one we love as a father, another as a grandfather; one as a mother, another as a nurse; and one as a son, and grandson, and great-grandson again, and another as a daughter, and granddaughter: and one as a brother, another as a nephew: and one as a sister, another as a niece. And why need one recount all the names of consanguinity?

And He devised also another foundation of affection. For having forbidden the marriages of kindred, he led us out unto strangers, and drew them again unto us. For since by this natural kindred it was not possible that they should be connected with us, he connected us anew by marriage, uniting together whole families by the single person of the bride, and mingling entire races with races.

<sup>1</sup> Lev. 18, 6. For, *marry not*, saith the Lord<sup>1</sup>, *thy sister, nor thy father's sister, nor any damsel which hath such consanguinity with*

*thee*, as utterly hinders the marriage ;” naming the degrees of such relationship. It is enough for thine affection towards them that ye were the fruit of the same birth-pangs, and that the others are in such relation as they are to thee. Why dost thou narrow the breadth of love ? Why dost thou idly throw away a ground of affection towards her, such as that thou mightest thereby provide thyself with a distinct source for affection to spring from ; I mean, by taking a wife from another family, and through her a chain of kinsmen, both mother, and father, and brethren, and their connexions ?

[7.] Seest thou by how many ways He hath bound us together? Nevertheless not even this sufficed Him, but He likewise made us to stand in need of one another, that thus also He might bring us together, because necessities above all create friendships. For no other reason neither suffered He all things to be produced in every place, that hence also He might compel us to mix with one another. But having set us in need of one another, He on the other hand made the intercourse easy. Since if this were not so, the matter would have turned out painful and difficult in another way. For if one that wanted a physician, or a carpenter, or any other workman, had need to set off on a long foreign sojourn, the whole had come to nought. Here then is why He founded cities also, and brought all into one place. And accordingly that we might easily keep up intercourse with distant countries, He spread the level of the sea between us, and gave us the swiftness of winds, thereby making our voyages easy. And at the beginning He even gathered all men together in one spot, and did not disperse them until they who first received the gift, abused their concord unto sin. However, He hath drawn us together in every way ; both by nature, and by consanguinity, and by language, and by place ; and as He willed not that we should fall from Paradise ; (for had He willed it, he would not have placed there at all *the man whom he had formed*, but he that disobeyed was the cause;) so neither was it His will that men should have divers tongues ; since otherwise He would have made it so from the beginning. But now *the whole earth was of one language, and all had one speech*<sup>1</sup>.

Here is the reason why, when it was needful that

<sup>1</sup> Gen.  
11. 1.

**HOMIL.** the earth should be destroyed, not even then did he make us  
xxxiv. of other matter, nor did he translate the righteous man, but leaving him in the midst of the deluge, like a kind of spark of the world, he rekindled our race from thence, even by the blessed Noah. And from the beginning he made one sovereignty only, setting the man over the woman. But after that our race became wrecked in extreme disorder, he appointed other sovereignties also, those of Masters, and those of Governors, and this too for love's sake. That is, since vice was a thing apt to dissolve and subvert our race, he set those who administer justice in the midst of our cities as a kind of physicians, that driving away vice, as it were a plague to love, they might gather together all in one.

And that not only in cities, but also in each family there might be great unanimity, He honoured the man with rule and superiority; the woman on the other hand He armed with desire: and the gift also of procreation of children, He committed in common to both, and withal He furnished also other things apt to conciliate love: neither entrusting all to the man, nor all to the woman; but *dividing these things also severally to each*; to her entrusting the house, and to him the market; to him the work of feeding, for he tills the ground; to her that of clothing, for the loom and the distaff are the woman's. For it is God Himself who gave to woman-kind skill in woven work. Woe be to covetousness, which suffers not this difference to appear! For men's general effeminacy<sup>1</sup> hath gone so far as to introduce our men to the looms, and put shuttles into their hands, and the woof, and threads. Nevertheless even thus the forethought of the divine œconomy shines out. For we still greatly need the woman in other more necessary things, and we require the help of our inferiors in those things which keep our life together.

[8.] And so strong is the compulsion of this need, that though one be richer than all men, not even thus is he rid of this close conjunction, and of his want of that which is inferior to himself. For it is not, we see, the poor only who need the rich, but the rich also the poor; and these require those more than the others them. And that thou mayest see it more clearly, let us suppose, if it seem good, two cities, the one of rich only, but the other of poor; and neither in that of the rich let there be any poor

(5.)

man, nor in that of the poor any rich; but let us purge out <sup>1 Cor.</sup> both of the two thoroughly, and see which will be the more <sup>13. 28.</sup> able to support itself. For if we find that of the poor able, it is evident that the rich will more stand in need of them.

Now then, in that city of the affluent there will be no manufacturer, no builder, no carpenter, no shoe-maker, no baker, no husbandman, no brazier, no rope-maker, nor any other such trade. For who among the rich would ever choose to follow these crafts, seeing that the very men who take them in hand, when they become rich, endure no longer the discomfort caused by these works? How then shall this our city stand? "The rich," it is replied, "giving money, will buy these things of the poor." Well then, they will not be sufficient for themselves, their needing the others proves that. But how will they build houses? Will they purchase this too? But the nature of things cannot admit this. Therefore they must needs invite the artificers thither, and destroy the law, which we made at first, when we were founding the city. For you remember, that we said, "let there be no poor man within it." But, lo, necessity, even against our will, hath invited and brought them in. Whence it is evident, that it is impossible without poor for a city to subsist: since if the city were to continue refusing to admit any of these, it will be no longer a city, but will perish. Plainly then it will not support itself, unless it shall collect the poor as a kind of preservers, to be within itself.

But let us look also upon the city of the poor, whether this too will be in a like needy condition, on being deprived of the rich. And first let us in our discourse throughly clear the nature of riches, and point them out plainly. What then may riches be? Gold, and silver, and precious stones, and garments silken, purple, and embroidered with gold. Now then that we have seen what riches are, let us drive them away from our city of the poor: and if we are to make it purely a city of poor persons, let not any gold appear there, no not in a dream, nor garments of such quality; and if you will, neither silver, nor vessels of silver. What then? Because of this will that city and its concerns live in want, tell me? Not at all. For suppose first there should be need to build; one does not want gold and silver and pearls, but skill, and

**HOMIL.** hands, and hands not of any kind, but such as are become  
xxxiv. callous, and fingers hardened, and great strength, and wood,  
 and stones: suppose again one would weave a garment,  
 neither here have we need of gold, and silver, but, as before,  
 of hands, and skill, and women to work. And what if one  
 require husbandry, and digging the ground? Is it rich men  
 who are wanted, or poor? It is evident to every one, poor.  
 And when iron too is to be wrought, or any such thing to be  
 done, this is the race of men whereof we most stand in  
 need.

What respect then remains wherein we may stand in need  
 of the rich? except the thing required be, to pull down this  
 city. For should that sort of people make an entrance, and  
 these philosophers, (for I call them philosophers, who seek  
 after nothing superfluous,) should fall to desiring gold and  
 jewels, giving themselves up to idleness and luxury; they  
 will ruin every thing from that day forward.

[9.] “But unless wealth be useful,” saith one, “wherefore  
 hath it been given by God?” And whence is it evident, that  
 being rich is from God? “The Scripture saith, *The silver is  
 Mine, and the gold is Mine*, and to whomsoever I will, I will  
<sup>1 Hag. 2.</sup> give it<sup>1</sup>.” Here, if I were not doing an unseemly thing, I  
<sup>8.</sup> could at this moment laugh loudly, in derision of those who  
 say these things: because as little children, admitted to a  
 King’s table, together with that food thrust into their mouth  
 every thing that comes to hand; so also do these together  
 with the divine Scriptures privily bring in their own notions.  
 For this, *the silver is Mine, and the gold is Mine*, I know to  
 have been spoken by the Prophet; but that, “to whomsoever  
 I will, I will give it,” is not added, but is brought in by these  
<sup>2 οὐερο-</sup>  
<sup>τῶν.</sup> offscourings<sup>2</sup> of the people. And as to the former, why  
 it was said, I will explain. The Prophet Haggai, because  
 he was continually promising to the Jews after their return  
 from Babylon, that he would shew the temple in its former  
 appearance, and some doubted of the thing spoken, and  
 considered it to be well nigh impossible, that after being  
 reduced to dust and ashes the house should appear again  
 such as it was;—he, to remove their unbelief, in the person  
 of God saith these things; as if he said, “why are ye afraid?  
 and why do ye refuse to believe? *The silver is Mine, and*

*the gold is Mine,* and I need not to borrow from others, and so to beautify the house." And to shew that this is the meaning, He adds, *and the glory of this house, the latter glory, shall be greater than the glory of the former.* Let us not then bring in spiders' webs upon the royal robe. For if any person, detected in weaving a counterfeit thread in a purple vest, is to suffer the severest punishment, much more in spiritual things; since neither is it an ordinary sin, which is hereby committed. And why say I, by adding and taking away? By a mere point, and by a mere circumstance of delivery in the reading, many impious thoughts have not seldom been brought into being.

" Whence then the rich," saith one? " for it hath been said, *Riches and poverty are from the Lord.*" Let us then ask those who object these things against us, whether all riches and all poverty are from the Lord? Nay, who would say this? For we see that both by rapine, and by wickedly breaking open of tombs, and by witchcraft, and by other such devices, great wealth is gathered by many, and the possessors not worthy to live. What then, tell me, do we say that this wealth is from God? Far from it. Whence then? From sin. For so the harlot by doing indignity to her own body grows rich, and a handsome youth oftentimes selling his bloom with disgrace brings himself gold, and the tomb-spoiler by breaking open men's sepulchres gathers together unjust wealth, and the robber by digging through their partition walls. Is then all this wealth from God?

" What then," saith one, " shall we say to this expression?" Acquaint thyself first with a kind of poverty which proceeds not from God, and then we will proceed to the saying itself. I mean, that when any dissolute youth spends his wealth either on harlots, or on conjurors, or on any other such evil desires, and becomes poor, is it not very evident, that this hath not come from God, but from his own profligacy? Again, if any through idleness become poor; if any through folly be brought down to beggary, if any, by taking in hand perilous and unlawful practices; is it not quite evident, that neither hath any one of these and other such persons been brought down to this their poverty by God?

**HOMIL. XXXIV.** “Doth then the Scripture speak falsely?” God forbid! but they do foolishly, who neglect to examine all things written with due exactness. For if this on the one hand be acknowledged, that the Scripture cannot lie; and this on the other hand proved, that not all wealth is from God; the weakness of inconsiderate readers is the cause of the difficulty.

[10.] Now it were right for us to dismiss you, having herein exculpated the Scripture, that ye may suffer this punishment at our hands for your negligence concerning the Scriptures: but because I greatly spare you, and cannot any longer bear to look on you confused and disturbed, let us also add the solution, having first mentioned the speaker, and when it was spoken, and to whom. For not alike to all doth God speak, as neither do we deal alike with children and men. When then was it spoken, and by whom, and to whom? By Solomon in the Old Testament, to the Jews, who knew no other than things of sense, and by these proved the power of God. For these are they who say, *Can he give bread also?* and, *What sign shewest thou unto us? our fathers did eat manna in the desert:*—whose God is

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 77. *their belly*<sup>1</sup>. Since then they were proving Him by these things, 24. Mat. 12. he saith to them, “this also is possible with God, to make 38. both rich and poor;” not that it is of course He Himself who John 6. maketh them, but that He can, when He will. Just as when 31. Phil. 3. he saith, *Who threateneth the sea, and maketh it dry, and 19.* <sup>2</sup> Is. 44. *maketh all the rivers a desert*<sup>2</sup>, and yet this was never done. 27. How then doth the prophet say so? Not as though it were a-doing always, but as a thing that was possible for Him to do.

What kind of poverty then doth He give, and what kind of wealth? Remember the patriarch, and thou shalt know the kind of wealth that is given by God. For He made both Abraham rich, and after him Job, even as Job himself saith; *If we have received good from the Lord, shall we not* <sup>3</sup> Job 11. *also endure evil*<sup>3</sup>? And the wealth of Jacob thence had its 10. beginning. There is also a poverty which cometh from Him, that which is commended, such as He once would have introduced to the knowledge of that well-known rich man, saying, *If thou be perfect, sell thy goods, and give to the poor, and come, follow me*<sup>4</sup>. And to the 19. 21. disciples again, making a law and saying, *Provide neither*

*gold, nor silver, nor two coats*<sup>1</sup>. Say not then that all wealth <sup>1 Cor. 13. 13.</sup> is His gift: seeing that cases have been pointed out of its <sup>1 Mat. 10. 9.</sup> being collected both by murders, and by rapine, and by ten thousand other devices.

But again the discourse reverts to our former question: viz. “if the rich are no way useful to us, wherefore are they made rich?” What then must we say? That these are not useful, who so make themselves rich; whereas those surely who are made so by God, are in the highest degree useful. And do thou learn this from the very things done by those whom we just now mentioned. Thus Abraham possessed wealth for all strangers, and for all in need. For he, who on the approach of three men, as he supposed, sacrificed a calf, and kneaded three measures of fine flour, and that while sitting in his door in the heat of the day; consider with what liberality and readiness he used to spend his substance on all, together with his goods giving also the service of his body, and this at such an advanced age; being a harbour to strangers, to all who had come to any kind of want, and possessing nothing as his own, not even his son: since at God’s command, he actually delivered up even him; and along with his son he gave up also himself, and all his house, when he hastened to snatch his brother’s son out of danger; and this he did not for lucre’s sake, but of mere humanity. When, for instance, they who were saved by him would put the spoils at his disposal, he rejected all, even to *a thread and a shoe-latchet*<sup>2</sup>.

Such also was the blessed Job. *For my door*, saith he, <sup>2 Gen. 14. 23.</sup> *was open to every one who came*<sup>3</sup>: *I was eyes to the blind*, <sup>3 Job 31. 32.</sup> *and feet to the lame*; *I was a father of the helpless*: *the stranger lodged not without*, and the helpless, whatever need they had, failed not of it, neither suffered I one helpless man to go out of my door with an empty bosom. And much more too than these, that we may not now recount all, he continued to do, spending all his wealth on the needy.

Wilt thou also look upon those who have become rich but not of God, that thou mayest learn how they employed their wealth? Behold him in the parable of Lazarus, how he imparted not so much as a share of his crumbs. Behold Ahab, how not even the vineyard is free from his extortion: behold Gehazi: behold all such. Thus they on the one hand who

**HOMIL.** make just acquisitions, as having received from God, spend  
XXXIV. on the commands of God: but they who in the act of acquiring offend God, in the expending also do the same: consuming it on harlots and parasites, or burying and shutting it up, but laying out nothing upon the poor.

“ And wherefore,” saith one, “ doth God suffer such men to be rich?” Because He is long-suffering; because He would bring us to repentance; because He hath prepared hell; because *He hath appointed a day, in which He is to judge the world*<sup>1</sup>. Whereas, did He use at once to punish them that are rich and not virtuously, Zaccheus would not have had an

<sup>1</sup> *Acts 17. 31.* <sup>2</sup> *μετρίας.* appointed time<sup>2</sup> for repentance, so as even to restore fourfold whatever he had unjustly taken, and to add half of his goods; nor Matthew, to be converted and become an Apostle, taken off as he would have been before the due season; nor yet many other such. Therefore doth He bear with them, calling all to repentance. But if they will not, but continue in the same, they shall hear Paul saying, that *after their hardness and impenitent heart they treasure up unto themselves wrath against the day*

<sup>3</sup> *Rom. 2. 5.* <sup>4</sup> *μετρίας.* <sup>5</sup> *of wrath, and revelation, and righteous judgment of God*<sup>5</sup>: which wrath that we may escape, let us become rich with the riches of heaven, and follow after the laudable sort of poverty. For thus shall we obtain also the good things to come: the which may we all obtain, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now, and for ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXV.

---

1 COR. xiv. 1.

*Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts; but rather that ye may prophesy.*

THUS, inasmuch as he had with exactness rehearsed unto them all the excellence of charity, he exhorts them in what follows, with alacrity to lay hold of it. Wherefore also he said, *Follow after*: for he that is in chace, beholds that only which is chased, and towards that he strains himself, and leaves not off until he lay hold of it. He that is in chace, when by himself he cannot, by those that are before him he doth overtake the fugitive, beseeching those who are near with much eagerness to seize and keep it so seized for him, until he shall come up. This then let us also do. When of ourselves we do not reach unto charity, let us bid them that are near to her hold her, till we come up with her, and when we have apprehended, no more let her go, that she may not again escape us. For continually she springs away from us, because we use her not as we ought, but prefer all things unto her. Therefore we ought to make every effort, so as perfectly to retain her. For if this be done, we require not henceforth much labour, nay rather scarce any; but taking our ease, and keeping holiday<sup>1</sup>, we shall march on in<sup>1</sup> ~~the narrow path of virtue.~~ the narrow path of virtue. Wherefore he saith, *Follow after* ~~the narrow path of virtue.~~ <sup>γνητος τεσσαρακονταριανης</sup> her.

Then that they might not suppose, that for no other end he brought in the discourse of charity, except that he might extinguish the gifts, he subjoins as follows;

**HOMIL.** Ver. 1. *And desire spiritual gifts; but rather that ye may prophesy.*

Ver. 2. *For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the Spirit he speaketh mysteries.*

Ver. 3. *But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.*

At this point he proceeds to make a comparison between the gifts, and lowers that of the tongues, neither signifying it to be altogether useless, nor very profitable by itself. For in fact they were greatly puffed up on account of this, because the gift was considered to be a great one. And it was thought great, because the Apostles received it first, and with so great display; it was not however therefore to be esteemed above all the others. Wherefore then did the Apostles receive it before the rest? Because they were to go abroad every where. And as in the time of building the tower the one tongue was divided into many; so then the many tongues frequently met in one man, and the same person used to discourse both in the Persian, and Roman, and Indian, and many other tongues, the Spirit sounding within him: and the gift was called the gift of tongues, because he could all at once speak divers languages. See accordingly how he both depresses and elevates it. Thus by saying, *He that speaketh with tongues, speaketh not unto men, but unto God, for no man understandeth him,* he depressed it, implying that the profit of it was not great; but by adding, *howbeit in the Spirit he speaketh mysteries,* he again elevated it, that it might not seem to be superfluous, and useless, and given in vain.

*But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.*

Seest thou by what he signifies the choice nature of this gift? i. e. by the common benefit? and how every where he gives the higher honour to that which tends to the profit of the many? For do not the former speak unto men also? tell me. But not so much *to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.* So that the being possessed by the Spirit, is common to both, as well to him that prophesieth, as to him that speaketh with tongues; but in this, the one, (he, I mean, who prophesieth,) hath the advantage, in that he is also pro-

fitable unto the hearers. For they who spake with tongues <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
were not understood by them that had not the gift. <sup>14—6.</sup>

What then? Did they edify no man? "Yes," saith he,  
"themselves alone:" wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 4. *He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself.*

And how, if he know not what he saith? Why, for the present, he is speaking of them who understand what they say;—understand it themselves, but know not how to render it unto others.

*But he that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.* Now as great as is the difference between a single person and the Church, so great is the interval between these two. Seest thou his wisdom, how he doth not thrust out the gift and make nothing of it, but signifies it to have some advantage, small though it be, and such as to suffice the possessor only?

[2.] Next, lest they should suppose that in envy to them he depresses the tongues (for the more part had this gift) to correct their suspicion he saith,

Ver. 5. *I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the Church may receive edifying.*

But *rather* and *greater*, do not mark opposition, but superiority. So that hence also it is evident, that he is not disparaging the gift, but leading them to better things, displaying both his carefulness on their behalf, and his spirit free from all envy. For neither did he say, "I would that two, or three," but *that ye all spake with tongues*; and not this only, but, also, *that ye prophesied*; and this rather than that; *for greater is he that prophesieth.* For since he hath established and proved it, he next proceeds also to assert it; not however simply, but with a qualification. Accordingly he adds, *except he interpret*; since if he be able to do this, I mean the interpreting, "he hath become equal unto the prophet," so he speaks, "because then there are many who reap the advantage of it;" a thing to be especially observed, how this throughout, before all else, is his object.

Ver. 6. *But now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to*

**HOMIL.** *you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying,  
XXXV. or by doctrine?*

“ And why speak I,” saith he, “ of the rest? Nay, let the person who speaketh with tongues be Paul: yea even so will no good come of it to the hearers.” And these things he saith, to signify that he is seeking their profit, not bearing any grudge against them that have the gift; since not even in his own person doth he shrink from pointing out their unprofitableness. And indeed it is his constant way to work out the disagreeable topics in his own person: as in the beginning of the Epistle he said, “ *Who then is Paul? and who is Apollos? and who is Cephas?*” The same then he doth also here, saying, *Not even I shall profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by prophesying, or by knowledge, or by doctrine.* And what he means is, “ if I say not somewhat that can be made intelligible to you, and that may be clear, but merely make display of my having the gift of tongues;—tongues which when ye have heard, ye will go away with no sort of profit. For how should you profit, by a voice which ye understand not?”

[3.] Ver. 7. *Yet even the things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?*

“ And why do I say,” saith he, “ that in our case this is unprofitable, and that only useful, which is clear and easy to be apprehended by the hearers? Since even in musical instruments without life one may see this: for whether it be pipe or harp, yet if it be struck or blown confusedly and unskilfully, without proper cadence or harmony, it will captivate none of the hearers. For even in these inarticulate sounds there is need of some distinctness: and if thou strike not or breathe into the pipe according to art, thou hast done nothing. Now if from things without life we require so much distinctness, and harmony, and appropriateness, and into those inarticulate sounds we strive and contend to infuse so much meaning, much more in men, endued with life and reason, and in spiritual gifts, ought one to make signification an object.

Ver. 8. *For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?*

Thus, from things merely ornamental he carries on his <sup>1 Cor.</sup> 14. 10. argument to those which are more necessary and useful ; and saith, that not in the harp alone, but in the trumpet also one may see this effect produced. For in that also there are certain measures ; and they give out at one time a warlike note, and at another one that is not so ; and again sometimes it leads out to line of battle : and unless one know this, there is danger to all that is most important. Which is just what he means, and the mischief of it what he is manifesting, when he saith, *who shall prepare himself to the battle?* So then, if it have not this quality, it is the ruin of all. "And what is this to us," saith one? Truly it concerns you very especially; wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 9. *So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air:* i. e. calling to nobody, speaking unto no man. Thus every where he shews its unprofitableness.

[4.] "But if it be unprofitable, why was it given?" saith one. So as to be useful to him that hath received it. But if it is to be so to others also, there must be added interpretation. Now this he saith, bringing them near to one another ; that if a person himself have not the gift of interpretation, he may take unto him another that hath it, and make his own gift useful through him. Wherefore he every where points out its imperfection, that so if it might be, he may bind them together. Any how, he that accounts it to be sufficient for itself, doth not so commend it, as disparage it, not suffering it to shine brightly by the interpretation. For excellent indeed, and necessary is the gift, but it is so, when it hath one to explain what is spoken. Since the finger too is a necessary thing, but when you separate it from the other members, it will not be equally useful: and the trumpet is necessary, but when it sounds at random, it is rather an annoyance. Yea, neither shall any art come to light, without matter subject to it ; nor is matter put into shape, if no form be assigned to it. Suppose then the voice to be as the subject-matter, but the distinctness as that form, which not being present, there will be no use in the material.

Ver. 10. *There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them without signification:*

HOMIL. i. e. so many tongues, so many voices of Scythians, Thracians,  
xxxv. Romans, Persians, Moors, Indians, Egyptians, innumerable other nations.

Ver. 11. *Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice,*  
(3.) *I shall be unto him that speaketh a barbarian.* “For suppose not,” saith he, “that this happens only in our case; rather in all one may see this taking place: so that I do not say this to disparage the voice, but to signify, that to me it is useless, as long as it is not intelligible.” Next that he may not render the accusation unpalatable, he makes his charge alike for the two, saying, *He shall be unto me a barbarian, and I to him.* Not from the nature of the voice, but from our ignorance. Seest thou how by little and little he draws men to that which is akin to the subject. Which is his use to do, to fetch his examples from afar, and to end with what more properly belongs to the matter. For having spoken of a pipe and harp, wherein is much that is wanting, and that is unprofitable, he comes to the trumpet, a thing more useful; next, from that he proceeds to the very voice itself. So also before, when he was discoursing to shew that it was not forbidden the Apostles to receive, beginning first with husbandmen, and shepherds, and soldiers, then he brought the discourse on to that which is nearer to the subject, the priests in the old covenant.

But do thou, I pray, consider, how every where he hath given diligence to free the gift from censure, and to bring round the charge to the receivers of it. For he said not, “I shall be a barbarian,” but, *unto him that speaketh, a barbarian.* And again, he did not say, “he that speaketh shall be a barbarian,” but, *he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> οἱ μη-  
λαλῶν,  
he that  
speaketh  
unto me.  
[5.] “What then must be done?” saith he. Why, so far from disparaging, one ought to recommend and to teach it; as indeed himself also doth. Since after he had accused and rebuked it, and shewn its unprofitableness, he proceeds to counsel them; saying,

Ver. 12. *Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the Church.*

Seest thou his aim every where, how he looks to one thing continually and in all cases, the general utility, the profiting

the Church ; laying this down as a kind of rule ? And he <sup>1 Cor.</sup> ~~14. 15.~~ did not say, "that ye may obtain the gifts," but, *that ye may excel*, i. e. that ye may even possess them in great abundance. Thus, so far am I from wishing you not to possess them, that I even wish you to abound in them, only so that ye handle them with a view to the common advantage. And how this same purpose may be answered, he declares, and saith by way of inference,

Ver. 13. *Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.*

Ver. 14. *For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.*

Ver. 15. *What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.*

Here he intimates that it is in their own power to obtain the gift. For *let him pray*, saith he, i. e. "let him contribute his own part," since if thou ask diligently, thou wilt surely receive. Ask accordingly not to have a gift of an unknown tongue only, but also of interpretation, that thou mayest become useful unto all, and not shut up the gift in thyself alone. *For if I pray in an unknown tongue*, saith he, *my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.* Seest thou how by degrees bringing his argument to a point, he signifies, that not to others only is such an one useless, but also to himself; if at least *his understanding is unfruitful?* For if a man should speak only in the Persian, or any other foreign tongue, and not understand what he saith, then of course to himself also will he be thenceforth a barbarian, not to another only, from not knowing the meaning of the sound. For there were of old many who had also a gift of prayer, together with some unknown tongue; and they prayed, and the tongue spake, either in the Persian or Latin language, uttering a prayer: but their understanding knew not what was spoken. Wherefore also he said, *If I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth*, i. e. the gift which is given me, and which moves my tongue, *but my understanding is unfruitful.*

What then may that be which is best in itself, and doth good ? And how ought one to act, or what request of God ? To pray, *both with the spirit*, i. e. the gift, and *with the understanding*<sup>1</sup>. Wherefore also he said, *I will pray with* <sup>1</sup> *διανοίᾳ.*

494 Inconvenience of the Eucharist in an unknown Tongue.

HOMIL. *the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also :*  
~~XXXV.~~ *I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.*

[6.] He signifieth the same thing again here also, that both the tongue may speak, and the understanding may not be ignorant of the things spoken. For except this be so, there will also be another confusion.

Ver. 16. For *besides*, saith he, *when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say the Amen at thy giving of thanks? seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest?*

Ver. 17. *For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.*

Observe how again here he brings his stone to the plumb-line<sup>1</sup>, every where seeking the edification of the Church.

Now by *the unlearned*<sup>2</sup> he means the layman, and signifies that he also endures no little loss, when he is unable to say the Amen.

the Amen. And what he saith is this: “if thou shalt bless

in a barbarian tongue, not knowing what thou sayest, nor able to interpret, the layman cannot respond the Amen. For not hearing the words, *for ever and ever*, which are at the end<sup>3</sup>, he doth not say the Amen.” Then again, comforting him concerning this, that he might not seem to hold the gift too cheap; the same kind of remark as he made above, that *he speaketh mysteries, and speaketh unto God, and edifieth himself, and prayeth with the spirit*, intending no little comfort from these things, this also he utters here, saying, “*for thou indeed givest thanks well*, since thou speakest being moved by the Spirit; but the other hearing nothing, nor knowing what is said, stands there, receiving no great advantage by it.”

(4.) [7.] Further, because he had attacked the possessors of this gift, as though they had no such great thing; that he might not seem to hold them cheap, as being himself destitute of it, see what he saith:

<sup>3</sup> λαλῶν. Ver. 18. *I thank God, speaking<sup>3</sup> with tongues more than ye all.*

rec. vers. “*I* And this he doth also in another place; intending, namely, speak.” to take away the advantages of Judaism, and to shew that

<sup>1</sup> i. e. at the end of the Long Thanks-giving in that part of the Service for the Holy Eucharist, which is called the Anaphora. Vid. Brett's Liturgies, 1838, p. 9, 16, 37, &c.

henceforth they are nothing, he begins by intimating that himself had been endowed with them, yea, and that in very great excess; and then he calls them *loss*, thus saying, *If any man thinketh that he hath confidence in the flesh, I more: circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee; concerning zeal, persecuting the Church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless*<sup>1</sup>. And <sup>1</sup> Philip. 3. 4—7. then, having signified himself to have the advantage of all, he saith, *But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.* So also he doth here, saying, *I speak with tongues more than ye all.* Do not ye therefore glory, as though ye only had the gift. For I also possess it, yea more than ye.

Ver. 19. *Yet in the Church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that I might teach others also.*

What is that, *speak with my understanding, that I might teach others also?* “Understanding what I say,” and “words which I can both interpret to others, and speak intelligently, and teach the hearers.” *Than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.* Wherefore? *That I may teach others*, saith he. For the one hath but display only; the other, great utility: this being what he every where seeks, I mean the common profit. And yet the gift of tongues was strange, but that of prophecy familiar, and ancient, and heretofore given to many; this on the contrary then first given: howbeit it was not much cared for by him. Wherefore neither did he employ it; not because he had it not, but because he always sought the more profitable things: being as he was free from all vain-glory, and considering one thing only, how he might render the hearers better.

[8.] And here is the account of the faculty he had of seeing the expedient both to himself and to all others: viz. because he was free from vain-glory. Since he assuredly that is enslaved by it, so far from discerning what is good to others, will not even know his own.

Such was Simon, who, because he looked to vain-glory, did not even see his own advantage. Such also were the Jews, who because of this<sup>2</sup>, pledged their own salvation to <sup>the</sup> ~~devil~~<sup>“”</sup>. Hence also did idols spring, and by this madness did the heathen philosophers excite themselves, and make shipwreck in their false doctrines. And observe the per-

HOMIL. verseness of this passion: how because of it some of them also  
xxxv. made themselves poor, others were eager about wealth. So potent is its tyranny, that it prevails even in direct contraries. Thus one man is vain of chastity, and contrariwise another of adultery; and this man of justice, and another of injustice: so of luxury and fasting, modesty and rashness, riches and poverty. I say poverty: since some of them that were without, when it was in their power to receive, for admiration's sake forbore to receive. But not so the apostles: that they were pure from vain-glory, they shewed by their doings: in that, when some were calling them Gods, and were ready to sacrifice unto them oxen with garlands, they did not merely just forbid what was doing, but they even rent their clothes<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Acts 14. 13, 14. all with open mouths were beholding them, they said, *Why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power we*

<sup>2</sup> Acts 3. had made this man to walk<sup>2</sup>? And those, among men who admired poverty, chose to themselves a state of poverty: but om. these among persons who despised poverty, and gave praise

to wealth. And these, if they received aught, ministered to the needy. Thus, not vain-glory, but benevolence, was the motive of all they did. But those quite the reverse; as enemies and pests of our common nature, and no otherwise, did they such things. Thus one sunk all his goods in<sup>b</sup> the sea for no good purpose, imitating fools and madmen: and another let all his land go to sheep common<sup>c</sup>. Thus they did every thing for vain-glory. But not so the Apostles; rather they both received what was given them, and distributed to the needy with so great liberality, that they even lived in continual hunger. But if they had been enamoured of glory, they would not have practised this, the receiving and distributing, for fear of some suspicion arising against them. For he who throws away his own for glory, will much more refuse to receive the things of others, that he may not be accounted to stand in need of others, nor incur any suspicion. But these thou seest both ministering to the poor, and themselves begging for them. So truly were they more loving than any fathers.

[9.] And observe also their laws, how moderate, and freed from

<sup>b</sup> Aristippus. See Hor. Sat. ii. 3. 100; <sup>c</sup> Democritus. See Hor. Ep. i. 12. Cic. de Invent. ii. 58. 12.

all vain-glory. Thus: *Having, saith he, food and raiment,* <sup>1 Cor.</sup> *let us be therewith content*<sup>1</sup>. Not like him of Sinope<sup>d</sup>, who, <sup>14. 19.  
1 Tim.</sup> clothed in rags, and living in a cask to no good end, <sup>6. 8.</sup> astonished many, but profited none: whereas Paul did none of these things; (for neither had he an eye to ostentation;) but was both clothed in ordinary apparel with all decency, and lived in a house continually, and displayed all exactness in the practice of all other virtue; which the Cynic despised, living impurely, and publicly disgracing himself, and dragged away by his mad passion for glory. For if any one ask the reason of his living in a cask, he will find no other, but vain-glory alone. But Paul also paid rent for the house wherein he abode at Rome. Although he who was able to do things far severer, could much more have had strength for this. But he looked not to glory, that savage monster, that fearful demon, that pest of the world, that poisonous viper. Since, as that animal tears through the womb of her parent with her teeth, so also this passion tears in pieces him that begets it. (5.)

[10.] By what means then may one find a remedy for this manifold distemper? By bringing forward those that have trodden it under foot, and with an eye to their image, so ordering one's own life. For so the patriarch Abraham:—nay, let none accuse me of tautology, if I often make mention of him, and on all occasions: this being that which most of all shews him wonderful, and deprives them that refuse to imitate him of all excuse. For, if we exhibit one doing well in this particular, and another in that, some one might say that virtue is hardly to be attained; for that it is scarcely possible to succeed in all those things together, whereof each one of the saints hath only performed a part. But when one and the same person is found to possess all, what excuse will they have, who after the law and grace are not able to attain unto the same measure with them that were before the law and grace? How then did this Patriarch overcome and subdue this monster, when he had a dispute with his nephew<sup>2</sup>? <sup>2 Gen.</sup> For so it was, that coming off worst, and losing the first share, <sup>13. 8.</sup> he was not vexed. But ye know that in such matters the shame is worse than the loss to the vulgar-minded, and particularly when a person having all in his own power,

<sup>d</sup> Diogenes the Cynic.

**HOMIL.** as he had then, and having been the first to give honour, was  
xxxv. not honoured in return. Nevertheless none of these things

vexed him, but he was content to receive the second place, and when wronged by the young man, himself old, an uncle by a nephew, he was not indignant, nor took it ill, but loved him equally, and ministered to him. Again, having been victorious in that great and terrible fight, and having mightily

<sup>1 Gen.</sup> put to flight the Barbarians<sup>1</sup>, he doth not add show to victory,  
<sup>14.</sup> nor erect a trophy. For he wished to save only, not to exhibit himself. Again, he entertained strangers, yet did he

not here act vaingloriously, but himself both ran to them, and paid them worship, not as though he were giving, but receiving a benefit, and he calleth them lords, without knowing who they are who are come to him, and presents his wife

<sup>2 Gen.</sup> in the place of a handmaiden<sup>2</sup>. And in Egypt too before this,  
<sup>18.</sup> when he had appeared so extraordinary a person, and had received back this very woman, his wife, and had enjoyed so

<sup>3 Gen.</sup> great honour<sup>3</sup>, he sheweth it to no man. And though the inhabitants of the place called him prince, he himself even

<sup>4 Gen.</sup> laid down the price of the sepulchre<sup>4</sup>. And when he sent to  
<sup>23. 6.</sup> betroth a wife for his son, he gave no command to speak in

<sup>5 Gen.</sup> high and dignified terms of him<sup>5</sup>, but merely to bring the bride.

[11.] Wilt thou examine also the conduct of those under grace, when from every side great was the glory of the doctrine flowing round them, and wilt thou see then also this passion cast out? Consider, I pray, this same apostle, who speaks these things, how he ever ascribes the whole to God, how of his sins he makes mention continually, but of his good deeds never, unless perchance it should be needful to correct the disciples; and even if he be compelled to do this, he calls the matter folly, and yields the first place to Peter, and is not ashamed to labour with Priscilla and Aquila, and every where he is eager to shew himself lowly, not in the market place, nor stately walking, carrying crowds with him, but setting himself down among the obscure. Wherefore also he said,

<sup>6 2 Cor.</sup> *but his bodily presence is weak*<sup>6</sup>, i. e. easy to be despised,  
<sup>10. 10.</sup> and in not being accompanied with display. And again, *I pray that ye do not evil, not that we may appear approved*. And what marvel, if he despise this glory? seeing that he despises

the glory of heaven, and the kingdom, and hell, for that which was pleasing unto Christ: for he wishes himself to be accursed from Christ, for the glory of Christ. For if he saith that he is willing to suffer this for the Jews' sake, he saith it on this account, that none of those without understanding might think to take to himself the promises, made to them. If therefore he were ready to pass by those things, what marvel is it, if he despise human things?

[12.] But the men of our time are overwhelmed by all things, not by desire of glory only, but also on the other hand, by insult, and fear of dishonour. Thus, should any one praise, it would puff thee up, and if he blame, it would cast thee down. And as weak bodies are by common accidents injured, so also souls which grovel on earth. For such not poverty alone, but even wealth destroys, not grief only, but likewise joy, and prosperity more than adversity. For poverty compels to be wise, but wealth leads on oftentimes into some great evil. And as men in a fever are hard to be pleased in any thing, so also they that are depraved in mind on every side receive hurt.

Knowing therefore these things, let us not shun poverty, let us not admire riches: but prepare our soul to be sufficient for all estates. For so any one building an house, doth not consider how neither rain may descend, nor sun-beam light on it, (for this were impossible,) but how it may be made capable of enduring all. And he again that builds a ship, doth not fashion and design any thing to keep waves from breaking against it, or any tempest from rising in the sea: (for this too were impossible:) but that the sides of the ship may be ready to meet all. And again, he that cares for the body doth not look to this, that there may be no inequality in the temperature, but that the body may easily endure all these things. So accordingly let us act in respect of the soul, and neither be anxious to fly poverty, nor to become rich, but to regulate each of them for our own safety.

Wherefore letting alone these things, let us render our soul meet both for wealth and poverty. For although no calamity, such as man is subject to, befall, which is for the most part impossible, even thus, better is he that seeks not wealth, but knows how to bear all things easily, than he that is always rich. And why? First, such an one hath his safety from within, but the

**HOMIL.** other from without. And as he is a better soldier, who trusts  
XXXV. to his bodily powers and skill in fighting, than he that hath his strength in his armour only; so he that relies on his wealth, compared with him that is fenced in by his virtue, is inferior. Secondly, because even if he do not fall into poverty, it is impossible that he should be without trouble. For wealth hath many storms and troubles; but not so virtue, but pleasure only and safety. Yea, and it puts a man out of the reach of them that lay snares for him, but wealth quite the contrary, rendering him easy to be attacked and taken. And as among animals, stags and hares are of all most easily taken through their natural timidity, but the wild boar, and the bull, and the lion, would not lightly throw themselves in the way of the liers-in-wait; just so one may see in the case of the rich, and of them that live voluntarily in poverty. The one is like the lion and the bull, the other like the stag and the hare. For whom doth not the rich man fear? Are there not robbers, potentates, enviers, informers? And why speak I of robbers and informers, in a case where a man suspects his very domestics?

[13.] And why say I, “when he is alive?” Not even when dead is he freed from the villainy of the robbers, nor hath death power to set him in safety, but the evil doers spoil him even when dead, so dangerous a thing is wealth. For we see that not only do they dig into houses, but they even burst open tombs, and coffins. What then can be more wretched than this man, since not even death can furnish him with this security, but that wretched body, even when deprived of life, is not freed from the evils of life, those that commit such wickedness hastening to war even with dust and ashes, and much more grievously than when it was alive? For then, it might be, entering his store-house, they would remove his chests, but abstain from his person, and would not take so much as to strip the body itself; but now the accursed hands of the tomb-breakers do not even abstain from these, but move and turn it about, and with much cruelty insult it. For after it hath been committed to the ground, having stripped it both of its covering of earth and of that which its grave-clothes constitute, they leave it thus to be cast out.

What foe then so deadly as wealth, which destroys both the

very soul of the living, and insults the very body of the dead, 1 Cor. and suffers it not even to lie, buried in the ground, which 14. 19. is common even to the condemned, and to them that have been taken in the vilest crimes? For of them the legislators having exacted the punishment of death, inquire no further; but of these, wealth even after death exacts a most bitter punishment, exposing them naked and unburied, a dreadful and pitiable spectacle: since even those who suffer this after sentence, and by the anger of their judges, do not suffer so grievously as these. For they indeed remain unburied the first and second day, and so are committed to the ground; but these, when they have been committed to the ground, are then stripped naked and insulted. And if the robbers depart without taking the coffin too, there is still no thanks to their wealth, but in this case also to their poverty. For she it is that guards it. Whereas most assuredly, had we intrusted wealth with even so much as this, and leaving off to form it of stone, had forged it of gold, we should have lost this also.

So faithless a thing is wealth; which belongs not so much to them that have it, as to them that endeavour to seize it. So that it is but a superfluous argument which aims to shew that wealth is an irresistible sort of evil, seeing that not even on the day of their death do its possessors obtain security. And yet who is not reconciled with the departed, whether it be wild beast, or demon, or whatever else? The very sight being enough to bend even one who is altogether iron, and quite past feeling. Therefore, you know, when one sees a corpse, though it be an enemy public or private whom he sees, yet he weeps for him as one of his dearest friends; and his wrath is extinguished with life, and pity is brought in. And it would be impossible, in time of mourning and carrying out to burial, to distinguish an enemy from him who is not such. So greatly do all men revere their common nature, and the customs which have been introduced respecting it. But wealth not even on obtaining this, remits her anger against her possessors; nay, it renders them that have been no way wronged enemies of the dead; if at least to strip the dead body, be an act of persons very bitter and hostile. And nature for her part reconciles even his enemies to him then: but wealth makes foes of them that

HOMIL. have nothing to accuse him of, and cruelly intreats the body  
xxxv. in its utter desolation. And yet in that case there are many things which might lead one to pity, the fact of its being a corpse, its inability to move, and tending to earth and corruption, the absence of any one to help: but none of these things soften those accursed wretches, because of the tyranny they are under from their base cupidity. For the passion of covetousness, like some ruthless tyrant, is at hand, injoining on them those inhuman commands, and having made wild beasts of them, so brings them to the tombs. Yea, like wild beasts, attacking the dead, they would not even abstain from their flesh, if their limbs were any way useful unto them. Such is our enjoyment of wealth; to be insulted even after death, and deprived of sepulture, whereof even the most desperate criminals partake.

[14.] Are we still then, tell me, to be fond of so grievous an enemy? Nay, I beseech you, nay, my brethren! but let us fly from it without turning to look: and if it come into our hands, let us not keep it within, but bind it fast by the hands of the poor. For these are the bonds which have more power to hold it, and from those treasures it will never more escape; and so this faithless one abides for the time to come faithful, tractable, tame, the right hand of Mercy producing this effect on it.

As I have said then, if it ever come to us, let us hand it over to her: but if it come not, let us not seek after it, nor fret ourselves, nor count its possessors happy; for what sort of a notion of happiness is this? Unless thou wouldest also say that those who fight with beasts are to be envied, because those high-priced animals are shut up and reserved by the proposers of such contests for themselves: not daring however themselves to approach, or to touch them, but fearing and trembling because of them. Something like this, I say, is the case of the wealthy, when they have shut up their wealth in their treasures as it were some savage beast, and day by day receive from it innumerable wounds; in this latter unlike to the beasts: since they, when thou leadest them out, then, and not till then, hurt such as meet them: but this, when it is shut up and preserved, then destroys its possessors and hoarders.

But let us make this beast tame. And it will be tame, if <sup>1 Cor.</sup> we do not shut it up, but give it into the hands of all who are <sup>14. 19.</sup> in need. So shall we reap from this quarter the greatest blessings, both living in the present life with safety and a good hope, and in the day that is to come standing with boldness: to which may we all attain, through the grace and mercy, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XXXVI.

---

1 COR. xiv. 20.

*Brethren, be not children in understanding; howbeit in malice  
be ye children, but in understanding be men.*

AS might be expected, after his long argument and demonstration he adopts a more vehement style, and abundance of rebuke; and mentions an example suited to the subject. For children too are wont to gape after trifles, and to be fluttered, but of things very great they have not so much admiration. Since then these also having the gift of tongues, which was the lowest of all, thought they had the whole; therefore he saith, *Be not children*, i. e. be not without understanding where ye ought to be considerate, but there be ye childlike and simple, where unrighteousness is, where vainglory, where pride. For he that is a babe in wickedness, ought also to be wise. Since as wisdom with wickedness would not be wisdom, so also simplicity with folly would not be simplicity, it being requisite both in simplicity to avoid folly, and in wisdom wickedness. For as neither bitter nor sweet medicines in excess do good, so neither doth simplicity by itself, nor wisdom: and this is why Christ injoining us to mix both

<sup>1</sup> Mat. said, *Be ye wise as serpents, and harmless as doves*<sup>1</sup>.

10. 16. But what is it to be a babe in wickedness? Not even to know what wickedness is: yea, such he willed them to be. Wherefore also he said, *Fornication is positively heard of*

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. among you<sup>2</sup>. He said not, "is done," but is *heard of*: as if he said, "ye are not without knowledge of the thing; ye have heard of it some time." I say, he would have them both to be men and children; the one however in wickedness, but the other in wisdom. For so even the man may become a man, if he

be also a child: but as long as he is not a child in wickedness, 1 Cor. 14. 25. neither will he be a man. For the crafty, instead of perfect growth, will be but a fool.

Ver. 21. *For in the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people, and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.*

Yet surely it is no where written in the Law, but as I said before, he calls always the whole of the Old Testament, the Law: both the prophets, and the historical books. And he brings forward his testimony from Essaias the prophet, again covertly detracting from the glory of the gift, for their profit; nevertheless even thus he states it with a signification of honour. For the expression, *not for all that*, hath force to point out, that the miracle was enough to astonish them; and if they did not believe, the fault was theirs. And wherefore did God work it, if they were not to believe? That He might in every case appear to do His part.

Dan. 7. 28. 46.  
Isai. 28. 11.

[2.] Having shewn then even from the prophecy, that the sign in question is not of great use, he adds,

Ver. 22. *Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.*

Ver. 23. *If therefore the whole Church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?*

Ver. 24. *But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all:*

Ver. 25. *And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and so, falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.*

Great in this place is the difficulty which one seems to find arising from what is said. For if tongues are for a sign to them that believe not, how saith he, if they that believe not should see you speaking with tongues, they will say that *ye are mad?* And if prophecy be *not for them that believe not, but for them that believe*, how shall also the unbelievers gain thereby?

*For if there come in, saith he, when ye are prophesying, one that believeth not, he is convinced of all, and judged.*

**HOMIL.** And not only this, but also after this another question hence xxxvi. springs up: since the tongue will appear on the contrary greater than the prophecy. For if the tongues are for a sign to them that believe not, but prophecy to them that believe, that which draws in aliens, and makes them of the household, is greater than that which regulates those of the household. What then is the meaning of that expression? Nothing difficult, nor obscure, nor contrary to what went before, but rather very agreeable to it, if we give heed: viz. that prophecy is suitable to both, but the foreign tongue not so. Wherefore having said of the unknown tongue, *it is for a sign*, he adds, *not to them that believe, but to them that believe not*, and to them *for a sign*, i. e. for astonishment, not so much for instruction.

"But in the case of prophecy too," saith some one, "he did the very same thing, saying, *but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe*. For the believer hath no need to see a sign, but requires only teaching and catechizing. "How then sayest thou," saith he, "that prophecy is of use to both, when Paul saith, *not to them that believe not, but to them which believe?*" If thou wilt accurately examine, thou wilt understand what is said. For he said not, "prophecy is not useful to them that believe not," but, "*is not for a sign*, as the unknown tongue," i. e. it is unprofitable: nor is the tongue any way useful to them that believe not; for its only work is, to astonish, and to confound; the word *sign* being one of those which may be taken two

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 86. ways: as when he saith, *shew me a sign*<sup>1</sup>, he adds, *for good*; 17. and again, *I am become as it were a monster unto many*<sup>2</sup>,

<sup>2</sup> Ps. 71. i. e. a sign.

7. (2.) And to shew thee that he introduced the term *sign* here, not as a thing which of course did some good, he added that which resulted from it. And what was this? *They will say*, saith he, *that ye are mad*. This however not from the nature of the sign, but from their folly. But when thou hearest of unbelievers, do not suppose that the same persons are in every case intended, but at one time they which are incurably diseased, and abide uncorrected, and at another they which may be changed; such as were they who in the times of the Apostles admire the mighty things of God which they hear

of; such as in the case of Cornelius. His meaning accordingly is this; that prophecy avails both among them that believe not, and among them that believe: as to the unknown tongue, when heard by the unbelieving and inconsiderate, instead of profiting by it, they rather deride the utterers, as madmen. For, in fact, it is to them but for a sign, i. e. in order to astonish them merely; whereas they who had understanding used also to profit by it: with a view to which the sign was given. Even as then there were not only certain who accused them of drunkenness, but many also admired them, as relating the wonderful works of God. It appears then that the mockers were those without understanding. Wherefore also Paul did not simply say, *they will say that ye are mad*, but added, *unlearned and unbelievers*.

But prophecy is not for a sign merely, but is also suitable and useful for faith, and for profit unto both. And this, if not directly, yet in the sequel he more clearly explained, saying, *he is convinced of all. For if all prophesy*, saith he, *and there come in one that believeth not, or unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all; and thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and so, falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.*

So that not in this only is prophecy greater, in its availing with each class<sup>1</sup>, but also in its attracting the more shameless<sup>1</sup> i. e. of the unbelievers. For it was not the same wonder, when Peter convicted<sup>2</sup> Sapphira, which was a work of prophecy,<sup>3</sup> *πίστις καὶ πίστος*. and when he spake with tongues: but in the former case all shrank into themselves; whereas, when he spake with tongues, he got the credit of being even beside himself.

[3.] Having said then, that the unknown tongue profited not, and having again qualified<sup>3</sup> this statement by turning the charge upon the Jews, he proceeds to signify that it even doth injury. "And wherefore was it given?" That it might go forth with interpretation: since without this, it hath even the contrary effect among them that are without understanding. *For if*, saith he, *all speak with tongues, and there come in unbelievers or unlearned, they will say that ye are mad*; as indeed even the Apostles incurred the suspicion of being drunken: for *these men*, it saith, *are full of new wine*<sup>4</sup>: <sup>4</sup> Acts 2. 13. but it is not the fault of the sign, but of their unskilfulness;

**HOMIL.** therefore he added, *unlearned and unbelievers*, to shew that  
xxxvi. the notion belongs to their ignorance and want of faith; for, as I before said, his object is to rank that gift not among things that are disparaged, but among those which do not greatly profit, and this, in order to repress them, and bring them to a necessity of seeking for an interpreter. For since the greater part looked not to this, but made use of it for display and rivalry, this is what he especially withdraws them from, intimating that their credit is injured, they bringing on themselves a suspicion of madness. And this especially is what Paul continually attempts to establish, when he wants to lead men away from any thing: he shews that the person suffers loss in respect of those very things which he desires.

And do thou accordingly likewise: if thou wouldest lead men away from pleasure, shew that the thing is bitter: if thou wouldest withdraw them from vain-glory, shew that the thing is full of dishonour: thus also was Paul used to do. When he would tear away the rich from their love of money, he said not merely that wealth is a hurtful thing, but also that it casts into temptations. *For they that will be rich,*

<sup>1</sup> *Tim.* saith he, *fall into temptation*<sup>1</sup>. Thus, since it seems to <sup>6. 9.</sup> deliver from temptations, he attributes to it the contrary of that which the rich supposed. Others again held fast by the wisdom that is without, as though by it establishing Christ's doctrine; he signifies that not only it gives no aid to the cross, but even makes it void. They held to going to law before strangers, thinking it unmeet to be judged by their own, as if those without were wiser: he points out that going to law before them that are without, is shameful. They clave to things offered in sacrifice to idols, as displaying perfect knowledge: he intimates that this is a mark of imperfect knowledge, not to know what economy to practise in the things which concern our neighbours. So also here,

<sup>2</sup> *1 Cor. viii.* because they were wild<sup>2</sup> about this gift of tongues, through their love of glory, he signifies that this on the other hand more than any thing brings shame upon them, not only depriving them of glory, but also involving them in a suspicion of madness. But he did not at once say this, but having spoken very many things before, when he had made

his discourse acceptable, then he brings in that topic so very <sup>1 Cor.</sup> 14. 25. contrary to their opinion. And this in fact is no more than the common rule; that he who intends thoroughly to shake a deep-rooted opinion, and to turn men round to its contrary, must not at once state the opposites: otherwise he will be ridiculous in the eyes of them that are preoccupied by the contrary conviction. Since that which is very much beside expectation, cannot be from the beginning, easily received, but you must first well undermine by other arguments, and then give it the contrary turn.

Thus for example he did, when discoursing of marriage: (3.) I mean, since many turned their minds to it as a thing which brings rest, and he wished to intimate that the abstaining from marriage was rest; if he had said this at once, he would not so easily have made it acceptable: whereas now, having stated it after much other matter, and timing its introduction exactly, he strongly touched the hearers. This also he did in respect of virginity. For before this having said much, and after this again, at last he saith, *I spare you*, and, *I would have you without care*<sup>1</sup>.

This then he doth in respect of the tongues, shewing that they not only deprive of glory, but also bring shame upon those who have them in the eyes of the unbelievers. But prophecy, on the contrary, is both free from reproach among the unbelievers, and hath very great credit and usefulness. For none will say in regard to prophesying, *they are mad*; nor will any one deride them that prophesy; but, on the contrary, will be astonished at, and admire them. For *he is convinced of all*, i. e. the things which he hath in his heart, are brought forward, and shewn unto all: now it is not the same thing for any one to come in and see one speaking in Persian, and another in Syriac, and to come in and hear the secrets of his own mind; as whether he cometh in as a tempter, and with evil mind, or sincerely; or that such and such a thing hath been done by him, and such another designed. For this is much more awful, and more profitable than the other. For this cause therefore, whereas of the tongues he saith, *ye are mad*; not however affirming this of himself, but of their judgment: i. e. *they will say*, saith he, *that ye are mad*; here, on the contrary, he

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor.  
7,28,32.

**HOMIL.** makes use both of the verdict of the facts<sup>a</sup>, and that of those  
XXXVI. who are the objects of the benefit. *For he is convinced of all*, saith he, *he is judged of all: and thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling down on his face he will worship God, reporting that God is in you of a truth.* Seest thou that this is not capable of two interpretations: how in the former case what is done may be doubted of, and here and there an unbeliever might ascribe it to madness? whereas here there will be no such thing, but he will both wonder and worship, first making a confession by his deeds, and then by his words also. Thus also Nebuchadnezzar worshipped God, saying, *Of a truth, your God, He is the God that revealeth secrets, seeing thou couldest reveal this*

<sup>1</sup> Dan. 2. *secret*<sup>1</sup>. Seest thou the might of prophecy, how it changed  
 47. that savage one, and brought him under instruction, and introduced him to faith?

[4.] Ver. 26. *How is it then, brethren? When ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying.*

Seest thou the foundation and the rule of Christianity? how, as it is the artificer's work to build, so it is the Christian's to profit his neighbours in all things.

But since he had vehemently run down the gift; lest it might seem to be superfluous, for with a view to pull down their pride and no more, he did this:—again he reckons it with the other gifts, saying, *hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue.* For of old they used also to make psalms by a gift, and to teach by a gift. Nevertheless, “let all these look to one thing,” saith he, “the correction of their neighbour: let nothing be done at random. For if thou comest not to edify thy brother, why dost thou come here at all? In fact, I do not make much account of the difference of the gifts. One thing concerns me, one thing is my desire, to do all things *unto edifying.*” Thus also he that hath the lesser gift, will outrun him that hath the greater, if this be not wanting. Yea, therefore are the gifts bestowed, that each

<sup>a</sup> i. e. the actions of the man's life, and his conscience, which answers to the prophecy.

might be edified; since unless this take place, the gift will rather turn to the condemnation of the receiver. For what, tell me, is the use of prophesying? What is the use of raising the dead, when there is none who profits by it? But if this be the end of the gifts, and if it be possible to effect it in another way without gifts, boast not thyself on the score of the signs, nor do thou bewail thyself, to whom the gifts are denied.

[5.] Ver. 27. *And if any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret.*

Ver. 28. *But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the Church; and let him speak to himself, and to God.*

What sayest thou, tell me? Having spoken so much of tongues, that the gift is a thing unprofitable, a thing superfluous, if it have no interpreter, dost thou command again to speak with tongues? I do not command, saith he, neither do I forbid; as when he saith, *if any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go,* he saith it not laying down a law for them to go, but not hindering them: so likewise here. *And let him speak to himself and to God.* If he endure not to be silent, saith he, but is so ambitious and vain-glorious, *let him speak by himself*<sup>1</sup>. And thus, by the very fact of so permitting, he <sup>xas</sup> <sub>arriv.</sub> greatly checked and put them to shame. Which he doth also elsewhere, discoursing of converse with a wife, and saying, *But this I say through your incontinency.* But not so did he speak, when he was discoursing of prophecy. How then? In a tone of command and legislation: *Let the prophets speak, two, or three.* And he no where here seeks the interpreter, nor doth he stop the mouth of him that prophesies, as under the former head, saying, *If there be no interpreter, let him keep silence:* because in fact he who speaks in a tongue, hath not the command of himself. Wherefore if any hath both gifts, let him speak. But if he have not, yet wish to speak, let him do so with the interpreter's aid. For the prophet is an interpreter, but of God; whereas thou art of man. *But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence:* for nothing ought to be done superfluously,

HOMIL. nothing for ambition. Only let him speak to himself, and to XXXVI. God; i. e. mentally, or quietly, and without noise: at least, if he will speak. For this is not surely the tone of one making a law, but it may be of one who shames them more even by his permission; as when he saith, *but if any hunger, let him eat at home:* and seeming to give permission, he touches them hereby the more sharply. "For ye come not together for this purpose," saith he, "that ye may shew that ye have a gift, but that ye may edify the hearers;" which also he before said, *Let all things be done unto edifying.*

[6.] Ver. 29. *Let the prophets speak, two, or three, and let the other judge.*

No where hath he added, *for the most part*, as in the case of the tongues. And what is this that he saith? intimating that neither is prophecy sufficient in itself, if at least he permitteth the judgment to others. Nay, surely it is quite sufficient: and this is why he did not stop the mouth of the prophet, as of the other, when there is no interpreter; nor, as in his case he said, *if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence*, so also in the case of the prophet, "if there be none to judge, let him not prophesy;" but he only secured the hearer; since for the satisfaction of the hearers he said this, that no diviner might throw himself in among them. For of this also at the beginning he bad them beware, when he introduced a distinction between divination and prophecy, and now he bids them discriminate and spy out the matter, so that nothing Satanic might privily enter.

Ver. 30. *If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.*

Ver. 31. *For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.*

What may this be which is spoken? "If when thou prophesiest," saith he, "and art speaking, the spirit of another stir him up, be silent thenceforth." For that which he said in the case of the tongues, this also here he requires, that it should be done "by course," only in a diviner way here. For he made not use of the very expression, *by course*<sup>1</sup>, but, *if it be revealed to another.* Since what need was there further, that when the second was moved to prophesy, the first should speak? Ought they then both?

<sup>1</sup> ἀνά<sub>τ</sub>ρι<sub>π</sub>α.  
v. 7.

Nay, this were profane, and would produce confusion. *1 Cor.* Ought the first? This too were out of place. For to this 14. 32. end when the one was speaking, the Spirit moved the other, in order that he too might say somewhat.

So then, comforting him that had been silenced, he saith, *For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.* Seest thou how again he states the reason wherefore he doeth all things? For if him that speaks with tongues he altogether forbid to speak, when he hath not an interpreter, because of the unprofitableness; reasonably also he bids restrain prophecy, if it have not this quality, but createth confusion and disturbance and unseasonable tumult.

Ver. 32. *And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.*

Seest thou how he put him to shame earnestly and fearfully? For that the man might not strive, nor be factious, he signifies that the gift itself is under subjection. For by *spirit* here, he means its actual working. But if the spirit be subject, much more thou its possessor canst not justly be contentious.

[7.] Then he signifies that this is pleasing also unto God, subjoining and saying,

Ver. 33. *For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as I teach in all the Churches of the saints.*

Seest thou by how many reasons he leads him to silence, and soothes him, in the act of giving way to the other? By one, and that the chief, that his part was not made null and void by such a proceeding; *for ye may all prophesy*, saith he, *one by one.* By a second, that this seems good to the Spirit Himself; *for the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.* Besides these, that this is according to the mind of God; *for God, saith he, is not of confusion, but of peace:* and by a fourth, that in every part of the world this custom prevails, and no strange thing is enjoined upon them. For thus, saith he, *I teach in all the Churches of the saints.*

What now can be more awful than these things? For in truth the Church was a heaven then, the Spirit leading the people in all things, and moving each one of the rulers, and making him inspired. But now we retain only the symbols

HOMIL. of those gifts. For now also we speak two or three, and by  
xxxvi. course, and when one is silent, another begins. But these  
 are only signs and memorials of those things. Wherefore  
 when we begin to speak, the people respond, *with thy Spirit*<sup>\*</sup>,  
 indicating that of old they thus used to speak, not of their own  
 wisdom, but moved by the Spirit. But not so now: (I speak of  
 (5.) mine own case so far.) But the present Church is like a  
 woman who hath fallen from her former prosperous days, and  
 in many respects retains the symbols only of that ancient  
 prosperity; displaying indeed the repositories and caskets of  
 her golden ornaments, but bereft of her wealth: such an  
 one doth the present Church resemble. And I say not  
 this in respect of gifts: for this were nothing marvellous,  
 if it were this only: but in respect also of life and virtue.  
 Thus the list of her widows, and the choir of her virgins, then  
 gave great ornament to the churches: but now she is made  
 desolate, and void, and the tokens only remain. There are  
 indeed widows now, there are also virgins; but they retain  
 not that adornment which women should have who prepare  
 themselves for such wrestlings. For both the special distinction  
 of the virgin is, the caring for the things of God alone, and  
 the waiting on Him without distraction: and the widow's  
 mark too should be not so much the not engaging in a second  
 marriage, as the other things, charity to the poor, hospitality,  
 continuing instant in prayers, all those other things, which  
 Paul writing to Timothy requires with great exactness. One  
 may see also the married women exhibiting among us great  
 seemliness. But this is not the only thing required, but  
 rather that sedulous attention to the needy, through which  
 those women of old shone out most brightly. Not as the  
 generality now-a-days. For then instead of gold they were  
 clothed with the fair array of almsgiving: but now, having  
 left off this, they are decked out on every side with cords of  
 gold woven of the chain of their sins.

Shall I speak of another repository too, emptied of its  
 hereditary splendour? They all met together in old time,  
 and sang psalms in common. This we do also now: but

\* The *Anaphora*, or more solemn part of the Liturgy, begins with the St. Mark, St. Chrysostom, St. Basil, Versicle and Response here alluded to, in the Clementine Liturgy, and in those and the Roman Missal.

then among all was there one soul and one heart: but now <sup>1 Cor.</sup> 14. 33.  
not in one single soul can one see that unanimity, rather great  
is the warfare every where.

"Peace," even now, "to all<sup>b</sup>," he that presides in the Church  
prays for, entering as it were into his Father's house: but of  
this peace the name is frequent, but the reality no where.

[8.] Then the very houses were churches: but now  
the Church itself is a house, or rather worse than any  
house. For in a house one may see much good order:  
since both the mistress of the house is seated on her chair  
with all seemliness, and the maidens weave in silence, and  
each of the domestics hath his appointed task in hand. But  
here great is the tumult, great the confusion, and our assem-  
blies differ in nothing from a vintner's shop, so loud is  
the laughter, so great the disturbance; as in baths, as in  
markets, the cry and tumult is universal. And these things  
are here only: since elsewhere it is not permitted even to  
address one's neighbour in the Church, not even if one have  
received back a long absent friend, but these things are done  
without; and very properly. For the Church is no barber's  
or perfumer's shop, nor any other merchant's warehouse in  
the market-place, but a place of angels, a place of arch-  
angels, a palace of God, heaven itself. As therefore if one  
had rent the heaven and had brought thee in thither, though  
thou shouldest see thy father, or thy brother, thou wouldest  
not venture to speak, so neither here ought one to utter  
any other sound but those which are spiritual. For in truth  
the things in this place are also a heaven.

And if thou believest not, look to this table, call to mind  
for Whose sake it is set, and why: consider Who it is that is  
coming forth here; tremble with awe even before the time.  
For so, when one sees the throne only of a king, in heart he  
rises up, expecting the king's coming forth. And do thou  
accordingly thrill with awe even before that thrilling moment:  
raise up thyself, and before thou seest the veils drawn aside,  
and the choir of angels marching forth, ascend thou to the  
very heaven.

But the uninitiated knows not these things. Well then,  
it is necessary with a view to him also to introduce other

<sup>b</sup> See Bingham, xiii. 8. 13; S. Chrys. 3 Hom. in Coloss. t. iv. 106. Ed. Savile.

HOMIL. topics. For neither towards him shall we want reasons of power to stir him up thoroughly, and cause him to soar.

Thou then who knowest not these things, when thou shalt hear the prophet<sup>c</sup> saying, *Thus saith the Lord*, quit the earth, ascend thou also unto heaven, consider who it is that by him discourses with thee.

But as things are, for a buffoon who is moving laughter, or for a whorish and abandoned woman, so vast an assemblage of spectators is set, listening in entire quietness to what is spoken, and this when none commands silence<sup>d</sup>; and there is neither tumult, nor cry, nor any the least noise: but when God is speaking from heaven on subjects so awful, we behave ourselves more impudently than dogs, and even to the harlot women we pay greater respect than to God.

- (7.) Doth it make your flesh creep to be told of these things? Nay then, much rather let it creep when ye do them.

[9.] That which Paul said of them that despised the poor, and feasted alone, *What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that*

<sup>11 Cor. 11. 22.</sup> *have not*<sup>1</sup>?—the same allow me also to say of those who

make a disturbance and hold conversations in this place. “What? have ye not houses to trifle in? or despise ye the Church of God, and corrupt those even who would be modest and quiet?” “But it is sweet and pleasant for you to converse with your friends.” I do not forbid this, but let it be done in the house, in the market, in the baths. For the church is not a place of conversation, but of teaching. But now it differs not from the market; nay, if it be not too bold a word, haply not even from the stage; in such sort do the women who assemble here adorn themselves more wantonly than the unchaste who are to be found there. Accordingly we see that even hither many profligates are enticed by them; and

<sup>c</sup> Because the Catechumens and others, as it seems, were allowed to hear the Lessons read, though not to be present at what was strictly called the Communion Service. See Bingham, xiv. iii. 1.

<sup>d</sup> An allusion to the injunctions for silence used by the Deacon occasionally in the Church: see Bingham, ii. 20. 14; and the Apost. Constit. ii. 57. as quoted by him: “Let the Deacon oversee the people, that none whisper, or doze, or laugh, or nod:” and after-

wards in the time of the offering, “Let some of the Deacons observe the people, and make silence among them.” Chrys. Hom. 24. on Acts, says, “Prayer is going on, and here are young persons talking and jesting with one another even while on their knees. Do thou who standest by, young or old, rebuke them, if thou seest it; reprimand them more sharply; if he take it not well, call the Deacon.”

if any one is trying or intending to corrupt a woman, there <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
is no place, I suppose, that seems to him more suitable than <sup>14. 33.</sup>  
the church. And if any thing be to be sold or bought, the  
church appears more convenient than the market. For on  
such subjects also there is more talk here, than in the shops  
themselves. Or if any wish to say or to hear any scandal,  
you will find that this too is to be had here, more than in the  
forum without. And if you wish to hear any thing of politi-  
cal matters, or the affairs of private families, or the camp,  
go not to the judgment-hall, nor sit in the apothecary's shop;  
for here, here I say are those who report all these things more  
accurately; and our assemblies are any thing rather than a  
church.

Can it be, that I have touched you to the quick? I for my  
part think not. For while ye continue in the same practices,  
how am I to know, that you are touched by what hath been  
said? Therefore I must needs handle the same topics again.

Are these things then to be endured? Are these things to  
be borne? We weary and distract ourselves every day, that  
ye may not depart without having learned something useful:  
and none of you goes away at all the better, but rather injured  
the more. Yea, and *ye come together unto condemnation*,  
having no longer any cloke for your sin, and ye thrust out  
the more modest, disturbing them with your fooleries on every  
side.

But what do the multitude say? "I do not hear what is read,"  
saith one, "nor do I know what the words are which are  
spoken." Because thou makest a tumult and confusion,  
because thou comest not with a reverent soul. What sayest  
thou? "I know not what things are said." Well then, for  
this very reason oughtest thou to give heed. But if not even  
the obscurity stir up thy soul, much more if things were clear  
wouldest thou hurry them by. Yea, this is the reason why  
neither all things are clear, lest thou shouldest indulge  
indolence; nor obscure, lest thou shouldest be in despair.

And whereas that eunuch and barbarian<sup>1</sup> said none of these<sup>2</sup> barba-  
rianus; per-  
affairs, and on his journey, had a book in his hands, and was haps,  
reading: dost thou, both abounding in teachers, and having "repeat-  
ing what <sup>1</sup> Acts 8.  
is read in  
a lower  
tone."

**HOMIL.** and pretexts? Knowest thou not what is said? Why then  
xxxvi. pray that thou mayest learn: but sure it is impossible to be ignorant of all things. For many things are of themselves evident and clear. And further, even if thou be ignorant of all, even so oughtest thou to be quiet, not to jostle out them that are attentive; that God, accepting thy quietness and thy reverence, may make the obscure things also plain. But canst thou not be silent? Well then, go out, not to become a mischief to others also.

For in truth there ought to be but one voice in the church always, even as there is but one body. Therefore both he that reads, utters his voice alone, and the Bishop himself is content to sit in silence; and he who chants, chants alone; and though all utter the response, the voice is wasted as from one mouth. And he that pronounces a homily, pronounces it alone. But when there are many, conversing on many and diverse subjects, why do we disturb you for no good? since surely unless ye thought that we are but disturbing you for no good, ye would not, in the midst of our speech on such high matters, discourse on things of no consequence.

[10.] Therefore not in your conduct only, but in your very estimation of things, there is great perversion. And ye gape after superfluities, and leaving the truth, pursue all sorts of shadows and dreams. Are not all present things a shadow and dreams, and worse than a shadow? For both before they appear, they fly away; and before they are flown, the trouble they give is much, and more than the pleasure. Let one acquire in this world and bury in the earth ever such abundance of wealth, yet when the night is past, naked he shall depart hence, and no wonder. Since they too who are rich but in a dream, on rising from their couch, have nothing of what they seemed to have while sleeping. So also are the greedy of gain: or rather not so, but in a much worse condition. For he that dreams of being rich, neither hath the money which he fancied he had, nor is any other mischief found to have accrued to him from this phantasy when he arises, but this man is both deprived of his riches, and hath also to depart, filled with the sins which arise out of them; and in his wealth having but enjoyed a phantasy, the evils resulting from his wealth he sees not in fancy any more, but

in the very truth of things: and his pleasure was in dreams, 1 Cor. but the punishment ensuing on his pleasure turns out no more 14. 33. a dream, but is matter of actual experience. Yea rather, even before that punishment, even here he pays the heaviest penalty, in the very collecting of his wealth wearing into himself innumerable sadnesses, anxieties, accusations, calumnies, tumults, perturbations.

In order therefore that we may be delivered both from the dreams and from the evils that are not in dreams, instead of covetousness let us choose almsgiving, instead of rapine, mercy to mankind. For thus we shall obtain the good things both present and to come, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom, to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, honour, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXVII.

---

1 COR. xiv. 34.

*Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but to be under obedience, as also saith the law.*

HAVING abated the disturbance both from the tongues, and from the prophesyings; and having made a law to prevent confusion, that they who prophesy should be silent when another begins; he next in course proceeds to the disorder which arose from the women, rooting out their unseasonable boldness of speech: and that very opportunely. For if to them that have the gifts it is not permitted to speak inconsiderately, nor when they will, and this, though they be moved by the Spirit; much less to those women who prate idly and to no purpose. Therefore he represses their babbling, and that with much authority, and taking the law along with him, thus he sews up their mouths; not simply exhorting here, or giving counsel, but he even laying his commands on them vehemently, by the recitation of an ancient law on that subject. For having said, *Let your women keep silence in the churches;* and, *it is not permitted unto them to speak, but to be under obedience,* he added, *as also saith the law.* And where doth the law say this? *Thy desire*

<sup>1</sup> Gen. 3. 16. *shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee*<sup>1</sup>. Seest thou the wisdom of Paul, what kind of testimony he adduced, one that not only enjoins on them silence, but silence too with fear; and with as great fear as that wherewith a maid servant ought to keep herself quiet. Wherefore also having himself said, *it is not permitted unto them to speak,* he

added not, "but to be silent," but instead of, *to be silent*, he <sup>1 Cor.</sup> set down what is more, to wit, *to be under obedience*. And if <sup>14. 36.</sup> this be so in respect of husbands, much more in respect of teachers, and fathers, and the general assembly of the Church. "But if they are not even to speak," saith one, "nor ask a question, to what end are they to be present?" That they may hear what they ought; but the points which are questioned let them learn at home from their husbands. Wherefore also he added,

Ver. 35. *And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home.*

Thus, "not only, as it seems, are they not allowed to speak," saith he, "at random, but not even to ask any question in the church." Now if they ought not to ask questions, much more is their speaking at pleasure contrary to law. And what may be the cause of his setting them under so great subjection? Because the woman is in some sort a weaker being, and easily carried away, and light minded. Here you see why he set over them their husbands as teachers, for the benefit of both. For so he both rendered the women orderly, and the husbands he made anxious, as having to deposit with their wives very exactly what they heard.

Further, because they supposed this to be an ornament to them, I mean their speaking in public; again he brings round the discourse to the opposite point, saying, *For it is a shame for a woman to speak in the church.* That is, first he made this out from the law of God, then from common reason, and our received custom; even as, when he was discoursing with the women about long hair, he said, *Doth not even nature herself teach you?*<sup>1</sup> And every where thou mayest find this<sup>1 c. 11.</sup> to be his manner, not only from the divine Scriptures, but <sup>14.</sup> also from the common custom, to put them to shame.

[2.] But besides these things, he also shames them by consideration of what all agreed on, and what was every where drawn out in form; which topic also here he hath set down, saying,

Ver. 36. *What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only?*

Thus he brings in the other Churches also as holding this law, both abating the disturbance by consideration of the

**HOMIL.** novelty of the thing, and by the general voice making his  
xxxvii. saying acceptable. Wherefore also elsewhere he said, *Who  
 shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in*

<sup>1</sup> *1 Cor. Christ, as I teach every where in all the Churches*<sup>1</sup>. And  
 4. 17. again, *God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in*

<sup>2</sup> *c. 14. all the Churches of the saints*<sup>2</sup>. And here, *What? came the  
 33. word of God out from you? or reached it unto you only?*

i. e. "neither first, nor alone are ye believers, but the whole  
 world." Which also writing to the Colossians he said, *As it*

<sup>3</sup> *Coloss. bringeth forth fruit and increaseth in all the world*<sup>3</sup>, speak-  
 1. 6. ing of the Gospel.

But he turns it also in another way to the encouragement  
 of his hearers; as when he saith, that theirs were the first  
 fruits, and were manifest unto all. Thus, writing to the Thes-  
 salonians he said, *For from you sounded out the word of God,*

<sup>4</sup> *1 Thes. and in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad*<sup>4</sup>.  
 1. 8. And again to the Romans, *Your faith is published in the*

<sup>5</sup> *Rom. 1. whole world*<sup>5</sup>. For both are apt to shame and stir up, as  
 8. ~~εγγιλ-~~  
~~αγγιλ-~~  
~~λαται.~~ well the being commended of others, as that they have others  
 partakers in their judgment. Wherefore also here he saith;

*What? came the word of God out from you? or reached  
 it unto you only?* "For neither can ye say this," saith he;  
 "we were made teachers to the rest, and it cannot be right  
 for us to learn of others;" nor, "the faith remained in this  
 place only, and no precedents from other quarters ought to be  
 received." Seest thou by how many arguments he put them  
 to shame? He introduced the law, he signified the shameful-  
 ness of the thing, he brought forward the other Churches.

(2.) [3.] Next, what is strongest of all he puts last, saying,  
 "God ordains these things even at this time by me."

Ver. 37. Thus: *if any man think himself to be a prophet,  
 or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things which I  
 write unto you are the commandments of the Lord.*

Ver. 38. *But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.*

And wherefore did he add this? Intimating that he is not  
 using violence, nor contention, which is a sign of them who  
 wish not to set up their own things, but who aim at what is  
 profitable to others. Wherefore also in another place he  
 saith, *But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no*

<sup>6</sup> *1 Cor. such custom*<sup>6</sup>. But he doth not this every where, but only  
 11. 16.

where the offences are not very great, and then chiefly as to <sup>1 Cor.</sup> shaming them. Since when he discourses of other sins, <sup>14. 40.</sup> he speaks not thus. But how? *Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor effeminate, shall inherit the kingdom of God*<sup>1.</sup> <sup>1 Cor. 6. 9, 10.</sup> And again, *Behold, I Paul say unto you, that, if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing*<sup>2.</sup> But here, since <sup>3 Gal. 5. 2.</sup> his discourse was of silence, he doth not very keenly inveigh against them, by this very thing attracting them the more. Then, as he is ever wont to do, unto the former subject, whence he digressed to say these things, he brings back his discourse as follows:

Ver. 39. *Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.*

For this too is his wont, not only to work out what is before him, but also starting from that, to set right whatever seems to him in any way akin to it, and again to return to the former, so as not to appear to wander from the subject. For so when he was discoursing of their concord in their banquets, he digressed to their Communion in the Mysteries, and having thence put them to shame, he returns again to the former, saying, *Wherefore, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another*<sup>3.</sup>

And here, accordingly, having discoursed of good order in their gifts, and of its being a duty neither to faint in the lesser, nor to be puffed up on account of the greater; then having made an excursion from thence to the sobriety becoming women, and having established it, he returns again to his subject, saying, *Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.* Seest thou how to the end he preserved the difference of these? And how he signifies that the one is very necessary, the other not so? Wherefore of the one he saith, *covet*<sup>4</sup>, but of the other, *forbid not*. <sup>3 1 Cor. 11. 33.</sup> <sup>4 ζηλεῖ</sup>

[4.] Then, as in brief summary, setting all things right, he adds the words,

Ver. 40. *Let all things be done decently, and in order.*

Again giving a blow to them who chose to behave themselves unseemly without cause, and to incur the imputation of madness; and who keep not their proper rank. For nothing doth so build up, as good order, as peace, as love; even as their contraries tend to pull down. And not only in

HOMIL. things spiritual, but also in all others one may observe this.  
xxxvii. Thus whether it be in a dance, or a ship, or in a chariot, or a camp, if thou shouldest confound the order, and casting the greater out of their proper place, shouldest bring in the lesser into their rank, thou destroyest all, and thus things are turned upside down. Neither let us then destroy our order, nor place the head below, and the feet above: now this is done, when we cast down right reason, and set our lusts, passion, and anger, and pleasure, over the rational part: whence violent are the billows, and great the confusion, and intolerable the tempest, all things being wrapt in darkness.

And, if thou wilt, let us first examine the unseemliness which arises herefrom, and then the loss. How then may this be clear to us, and thoroughly known? Let us bring forward a man in that frame of mind; enamoured of a harlot, and overcome by a dishonourable passion; and then we shall see the mockery which this comes to. For what can be baser than a man watching the doors before the harlots' chambers, and beaten by a whorish woman, and weeping, and lamenting, and turning his glory into shame? And if thou wilt also see the loss, call to mind, I pray, the expenditure of money, the extreme risks, the contests with the rival lovers, the wounds, the stripes received in such affrays.

Such also are they who are holden by the lust of wealth; or rather they behave themselves more unseemly. For whereas these are wholly occupied about one person; the covetous busy themselves about all men's substance alike, both poor, and rich, and long for things that are not; a thing which above all denotes the wildness of their passion. For they say not, "I would fain have the substance of such a person, or of such another," only, but they want the very mountains to be gold, and the houses and all that they see; and they go forth into another world, and this passion they feel without bounds, and at no point cease from their lusting. What discourse can set before us the tempest of those thoughts, the waves, the darkness? And where the waves and tempest are so great, what can the pleasure be? There is not any; but tumult, and anguish, and black clouds

instead of rain bringing with them great sorrow of heart: the kind of thing which is wont to happen in the case of those who are enamoured of beauty not their own. See then if they who have no passionate love at all are not in more pleasure than any lovers.

[5.] This however no man would gainsay. But to me even he who loves, but restrains his passion, seems to live more pleasurable than he who continually enjoys his unlawful love. For though the proof be rather difficult, nevertheless even at that disadvantage the argument must be ventured on: the cause of the increased difficulty, not being the nature of the thing, but because of the want of meet hearers for this high morality. Thus: whether is it pleasanter, tell me, (3.) to the lover, to be despised by his beloved, or to be valued, and to look down upon her? Evidently the latter. Whom then, tell me, will the harlot value more? Him that is a slave to her, and is already led captive at her will, or him that is above her nets, and soareth higher than her arrows? Every one must see, the latter. And about whom will she take more thought, the fallen, or him that is not yet so? Him that is not yet so, of course. And which will be more an object of desire, he who is subdued, or he who is not yet taken? He who up to this time is not yet taken. And if ye disbelieve it, I will produce my proof from what takes place within yourselves. As thus: of which woman would a man be more enamoured; one that easily submits herself, and gives herself up to him, or one that denies him, and gives him trouble? Evidently of this last: since hereby the longing is more vehemently kindled. Of course then in the woman's case also exactly the same thing will happen. And him will they honour and admire more who looks down upon them. But if this be a true saying, so likewise is that other, that he enjoys greater pleasure who is more honoured and beloved. Since the general too lets alone the city that hath been once taken, but that which stands out and maintains the struggle he besets with all diligence: and the hunter, when the animal is caught, keeps it shut up in darkness, as the harlot doth her lover, but pursues that which flies from him.

But I shall be told, "the one enjoys his desire, the other not so." But freedom from disgrace, and from being a slave

**526 Chastity and Uncleanness compared as to Pleasure.**

HOMIL. under her tyrannical commands, the not being led and dragged  
xxxvii. about by her as a drudge, beaten, spit upon, smitten on the head ; dost thou consider this to be a small pleasure, tell me ? Nay, if one would accurately examine these things, and were able to gather into one their insults, complaints, everlasting quarrels, some arising from their tempers, some from their self-indulgence, their enmities, and all the rest, such as they only that feel them know ;—he will find that there is no war but hath more truces than this wretched life of theirs. What pleasure then meanest thou, tell me ? The temporary and brief enjoyment of lust ? But this speedily doth strife overtake, and storms, and rage, and the same madness again.

[6.] And these things have been said by us, as one would speak discoursing with licentious youths, who do not very patiently submit to hear our discourses of the kingdom and of hell.

And now that we are bringing forward these topics also, it is not even possible to say how great is the pleasure of the continent ; if one frame in one's own mind his crowns, his rewards, his converse with the angels, the proclaiming of him before the world, his boldness, those blessed and immortal hopes of his.

“ But lust hath a certain pleasure : ” for this they are continually repeating : “ neither can the continent continually go on contending with the tyranny of nature.” Nay, but one shall find just the contrary result. For this violence and tumult is present with the unchaste rather : there being in his body a violent tempest, and no sea in a storm so grievously vexed as he ; never notwithstanding his passion, but ever receiving blows from it ; as the possessed, and they that are continually rent in the midst by evil spirits. Whereas the temperate, like a noble champion continually giving blows to it, reaps the best of pleasures, and sweeter than ten thousand of that kind ; and this victory and his good conscience, and those illustrious trophies, are ornaments for him continually to deck himself withal.

As to the other, if after his lust he hath a little respite, it must be counted nothing. For again the storm comes on, and again there are waves. But he that commands himself doth not suffer this tumult to lay hold of him at all, nor the sea to arise, nor the wild beast to roar. And even if he

endure some violence in the restraint of such an impulse, yet 1 Cor. so doth the other also, continually receiving blows and stabs, 14. 40. and unable to endure the sting: and it is like as if there were a wild horse furious and struggling, and one should check with the bridle, and hold him in with all skill: while another giving him the rein to escape the trouble, were dragged along by him, and carried hither and thither.

If I have spoken these things more plainly than is becoming, let no man blame me. For I desire not to make a brave shew by gravity of words, but to make my hearers grave.

Therefore also the prophets spare no such words, wishing (4.) to extirpate the licentiousness of the Jews, but do even more nakedly inveigh against them, than we do now in the things we have spoken. For so a physician wishing to remove an ulcer, doth not consider how he may keep his hands clean, but how he may rid the patient of the ulcer; and he who would raise on high the lowly, first makes himself lowly; and he who seeks to slay the conspirator stains himself also with blood as well as the other, and this makes him the more brilliant. Since if one were to see a soldier returning from the war, stained with gore, and blood, and brains, he will not loathe him, nor turn from him on this account, but will even admire him the more. So then let us do, when we see any one returning, covered with blood after the slaughter of his evil desire, let us the more admire him, and become partakers of his battle and victory, and say to those who indulge this wild love, "shew us the pleasure you derive from lust; for the continent hath that which comes of his victory, but thou, none from any quarter. But if ye should mention that which is connected with the criminal act, yet the other is more manifest, and satisfactory. For thou hast from the enjoyment something brief and hardly apparent; but he from his conscience, hath both a greater, and enduring, and a sweeter joy. The company of a woman hath surely no such power as self-command, to preserve the soul undisturbed, and give it wings."

Well then: the continent man, as I said, thus evidently makes his pleasure out to us: but in thy case I see the dejection arising from defeat, but the pleasure, desiring to see, I find not. For what dost thou consider the

HOMIL. moment of pleasure? That before the criminal action!

xxxvi. Nay, it is not so, for it is a time of madness and delirium and frenzy: to grind the teeth and be beside one's self, not being any pleasure: and if it were pleasure, it would not produce the same effects on you, which they who are in pain endure. For they who strike with their fists and are stricken, grind their teeth, and women in travail distracted with pains, do the same. So that this is no pleasure, but frenzy rather, and confusion, and tumult. Shall we say then, the time after this? Nay, neither is this. For neither could we say that a woman just delivered is in pleasure, but in release from certain pains. But this is not of course pleasure, but weakness rather and falling away: and there is a great interval between these two. What then is the time of pleasure, tell me? There is none. But if there be any, it is so brief, as not even to be apparent. At least, having zealously sought in a great many ways to detect and apprehend it, we have not been able. But the time of the chaste man's pleasure is not such, rather it is wide, and evident to all. Or rather, all his life is in pleasure, his conscience crowned, the waves laid, no disturbance from any quarter arising within him.

Since then this man's life is more in pleasure, while the life spent in love of pleasure is in dejection and disquiets; let us flee from licentiousness, let us keep hold on chastity, that we may also obtain the good things to come, through the grace and mercy, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XXXVIII.

---

1 COR. xv. 1, 2.

*Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you concerning the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye received, and wherein ye stand; by which also ye are saved<sup>1</sup>: by what discourse I preached it unto you.*

HAVING finished the discourse of spiritual gifts, he passes to that which is of all most necessary, the argument of the resurrection. For in this too, they were greatly unsound. And as in men's bodies, when the fever lays actual hold of their solid parts, I mean the nerves and the veins and the primary elements, the mischief becomes incurable, unless it receive much attention; just so at that time also it was like to happen. Since to the very elements of godliness the mischief was proceeding. Wherefore also Paul uses great earnestness. For not of morals was his discourse henceforth, nor about one man's being a fornicator, another covetous, and another having his head covered; but about the very sum of all good things. For touching the resurrection itself they were at variance. Because, this being all our hope, against this point did the devil make a vehement stand, and at one time he was wholly subverting it, at another his word was that it was *past already*: which also Paul writing to Timothy, called a gangrene, I mean, this wicked doctrine, and those that brought it in he branded, saying, *Of whom is Hymenæus and Philetus, who concerning the faith have erred, saying, that the resurrection is past already, and overthrow the faith of some<sup>2</sup>.* At one time then they said thus,<sup>2</sup> 2 Tim.  
<sup>2. 17.</sup> but at another that the body rises not again, but the purification of the soul is the resurrection.

M m

HOMIL. But these things that wicked dæmon persuaded them to say,  
xxxviii. not wishing to overturn the resurrection only, but also to shew

that all the things done for our sakes are a fable. For if they were persuaded that there is no resurrection of bodies, after a little while he would have persuaded them that neither was Christ raised. And thereupon he would introduce also this in due course, that He had not come, nor had done what He did. For such is the craft of the devil. Wherefore also Paul

<sup>1 μῆτ-</sup>  
<sup>δίας.</sup>  
Eph. 4.  
14. calls it *cunning craftiness*<sup>1</sup>, because he doth not straight-way signify what he intends to effect, for fear of being detected, but dressing himself up in a mask of one kind, he fabricates arts of another kind: and, like a crafty enemy attacking a city with walls, he secretly undermines it from below: so as thereby to be hardly guarded against, and to succeed in his endeavours. Therefore such snares on his part being continually detected, and these his crafty ambuses hunted out by this admirable and mighty man, he said, *For*

<sup>2 2 Cor.</sup>  
<sup>2. 11.</sup> *we are not ignorant of his devices*<sup>2</sup>. So also here he unfolds his whole guile, and points out all his stratagems, and whatsoever he would fain effect, Paul puts before us, with much exactness going over all. Yea, and therefore he put this head after the rest, both because it was very extremely necessary, and because it involves the whole of our condition.

And observe his consideration: how first having secured his own, he then proceeds even beyond in his discourse, and them that are without he doth over and above reduce to silence. Now he secures his own, not by reasonings, but by things which had already happened, and which themselves had received, and believed to have taken place: a thing which was most of all apt to shame them, and capable of laying hold on them. Since if they were unwilling to believe after this, it was no longer Paul, but themselves they would disbelieve: which thing was a censure on those who had once for all received it, and changed their minds. For this cause then he begins also from hence, implying that he needs no other witnesses to prove his speaking truth, but those very persons who were deceived.

[2.] But that what I say may become clearer, we must needs in what follows attend to the very words. What then are these? *I declare unto you, brethren, saith he, the gospel*

*which I preached unto you.* Seest thou with what modesty <sup>1 COR.</sup> he commences? Seest thou how from the beginning he points <sup>15. 1, 2.</sup> out, that he is bringing in no new nor strange thing? For he who *declareth* that which is already known, but afterwards had fallen into oblivion, *declareth* by recalling it into memory.

And when he called them *brethren*, even from hence he laid the foundation of no mean part of the proof of his assertions. For by no other cause became we *brethren*, but by the dispensation of Christ according to the flesh. And this is just the reason why he thus called them, at the same time soothing and courting them, and likewise reminding them of their innumerable blessings.

And what comes next again is demonstrative of the same. What then is this? *The gospel.* For the sum of the gospels hath its original hence, from God having become man, and having been crucified, and having risen again. This gospel also Gabriel preached to the Virgin, this also the prophets to the world, this also the apostles all of them.

*Which I preached unto you, which also ye received, and wherein ye stand. By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory by what word I preached unto you; unless ye have believed in vain.*

Seest thou how he calls themselves to be witnesses of the things spoken? And he saith not, "which ye have heard," but, *which ye have received*, demanding it of them as a kind of deposit, and shewing that not in word only, but also by deeds and signs and wonders, they received it, and that they should hold it safe.

Next, because he was speaking of the things long past, he sets before them also the present time, saying, *and wherein ye stand*, taking the vantage ground of them, that disavowal might be out of their power, though they wished it never so much. And this is why at the beginning he said not, "I teach you," but, "*I declare unto you* what hath already been made manifest."

And how saith he that they, who were so tossed with waves, *stand?* He feigns ignorance, to profit them; which also he doth in the case of the Galatians, but not in like manner. For inasmuch as he could not in that case affect ignorance, he frames his address in another way, saying,

**HOMIL.** *I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be*  
xxxviii. *none otherwise minded*<sup>1</sup>. He said not, “that ye were none  
1 Gal. 5.  
10. otherwise minded,” because their fault was acknowledged  
and evident, but he answers for the future; and yet this too  
was uncertain; but it was to draw them to him more effectually. Here however he doth feign ignorance, saying, *and wherein ye stand.*

Then comes the advantage; *whereby also ye are saved, by what word I have preached it unto you.* “So then, this present exposition is for clearness, and interpretation. For the doctrine itself ye need not,” saith he, “to learn, but to be reminded of, and corrected.” And these things he saith, leaving them no room to plunge into recklessness once for all.

But what is, *by what word I preached it unto you?* “After what manner did I say,” saith he, “that the resurrection takes place? For that there is a resurrection, I would not say that ye doubt: but ye seek perhaps to obtain a clearer knowledge of that saying. This then will I provide for you: for indeed I am well assured, that ye hold the doctrine.” Next, because he was directly affirming, *wherein also ye stand;* that he might not thereby make them more remiss, he alarms them again, saying, *If ye keep in memory, unless ye have believed in vain;* intimating that the stroke is on the chief head, and the contest for no common things, but in behalf of the whole of the faith. And for the present he saith it with reserve, but as he goes on and waxes warm, he throws off the veil,  
<sup>2 γεμοῦ</sup>  
<sup>λαυτὸν</sup>  
<sup>τὴν κηρύξανθη βοῶτι.</sup> and proceeds to cry out<sup>2</sup>, and say, *But if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain:* *ye are yet in your sins:* but in the beginning not so: for thus it was expedient to proceed, gently and by degrees.

Ver. 3. *For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I also received.*

Neither here doth he say, “I said unto you,” nor “I taught you,” but uses the same expression again, saying, *I delivered unto you that which I also received:* nor again here doth he say “I was taught,” but, *I received:* establishing these two things, first, that one ought to introduce nothing from one's self; next, that by demonstration from his deeds they were fully persuaded, not by bare words: and by degrees, while he is rendering his argument credible, he refers the

whole to Christ, and signifies that nothing was of man in <sup>1 Cor. 15. 3.</sup> these doctrines.

But what is this, *For I delivered unto you first of all*<sup>1</sup>? for <sup>τις πρώτη</sup> that is his word. “In the beginning, not now.” And thus <sup>τις πρώτη</sup> saying, he brings the time for a witness, and that it were the greatest disgrace for those who had so long time been persuaded now to change their minds: and not this only, but also that the doctrine is necessary. Wherefore also it was *delivered* among *the first*, and from the beginning straightway. And what didst thou so deliver? tell me. But this he doth not say straightway, but first, *I received*. And what didst thou receive? *That Christ died for our sins*. He said not immediately, that there is a resurrection of our bodies, yet this very thing in truth he doth establish, but afar off, and by other topics, saying that *Christ died*, and laying before a kind of strong base and irrefragable foundation of the doctrine concerning the resurrection. For neither did he simply say, that *Christ died*; although even this were sufficient to declare the resurrection, but with an addition, *Christ died for our sins*.

[3.] But first it is worth while to hear what those who are infected with the Manichæan doctrines say here, who are both enemies to the truth, and war against their own salvation. What then do these allege? By death here, they say, Paul means nothing else than our being in sin; and by resurrection, our being delivered from our sins. Seest thou how nothing is weaker than error? And how it is taken by its own wings, and needs not the warfare from without, but by itself it is pierced through? Consider, for instance, these men, how they too have pierced themselves through by their own statements. Since if this be death, and Christ did not take a body, as ye suppose, and yet died, He was in sin, according to you. For I indeed say that He took unto Himself a body, and His death, I say, was that of the flesh; but thou, denying this, wilt be compelled to affirm the other. But if He was in sin, how saith He, *Which of you convinceth Me of sin?*<sup>2</sup> And, *The prince of this world cometh,*<sup>2 John 8.</sup> *and hath nothing in Me?*<sup>2</sup> And again, *Thus it becometh Us*<sup>46; 14.</sup> *to fulfil all righteousness*<sup>3</sup>. Nay, how did He at all die for <sup>3 Mat. 3.</sup> <sup>15.</sup>

**HOMIL.** sinners, if Himself were in sins? For he who dies for  
 ——————  
 sinners, ought himself to be without sin. Since if he himself also sin, how shall he die for other sinners? But if for others' sins He died, He died being without sin: and if being without sin He died, He died—not the death of sin: for how could He, being without sin?—but the death of the body. Wherefore also Paul did not simply say, *He died*, but added, *for our sins*: both forcing those heretics against their will to the confession of His bodily death, and signifying by this also, that before death He was without sin: for he that dies for others' sins, it followeth must himself be without sin.

- Neither was he content with this, but added, *according to*  
 (3.) *the Scriptures*: hereby both again making his argument credible, and intimating what kind of death he was speaking of: since it is the death of the body which the Scriptures every where proclaim. For, *they pierced My hands and My*

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 21. *feet*<sup>1</sup>, saith He, and *they shall look on Him Whom they*  
 18. *pierced*<sup>2</sup>. And many other instances too, not to name all

<sup>2</sup> John 19. 37. one by one, partly in words, and partly in types, one may Zech.  
 12. 10. see in them stored up, setting forth His slaughter in the flesh, and that He was slain for our sins. For, *for the*

<sup>3</sup> οὐ. *sins of my people*, saith one, *is He come<sup>3</sup> to death*: and, LXX, *the Lord hath delivered Him up for our sins*: and, *He was*  
 ήχθν.

<sup>4</sup> Is. 53. *wounded for our transgressions*<sup>4</sup>. But if thou<sup>5</sup> dost not

<sup>5</sup> As a Mani- chæan. endure the Old Testament, hear John crying out, and declaring both, as well His slaughter in the body, as the cause of it: thus, *Behold, saith he, the Lamb of God, Who*

<sup>6</sup> John 1. 29. *taketh away the sin of the world*<sup>6</sup>: and Paul saying, *For Him Who knew no sin, He hath made sin for us, that we might be*

<sup>7</sup> 2 Cor. 5. 21. *made the righteousness of God in Him*<sup>7</sup>: and again, *Christ*

<sup>8</sup> Gal. 3. 13. *hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us*<sup>8</sup>: and again, *having spoiled principalities and powers, He made a show of them openly, triumphing over*

<sup>9</sup> Col. 2. 15. *them*<sup>9</sup>; and ten thousand other sayings, to shew what hap-

<sup>10</sup> John 17. 19. pened at His death in the body, and because of our sins.

<sup>11</sup> John 16. 11. *Yea, and Christ Himself saith, for your sakes I sanctify myself*<sup>10</sup>: and, *now is the prince of this world condemned*<sup>11</sup>;

<sup>12</sup> xata- rec. text. *shewing that having no sin, He was slain.*

<sup>13</sup> xingrav. [4.] Ver. 4. *And that He was buried.*

rec. text. And this also is confirmative of the former topics, for that  
 xingrav.

which is buried, is doubtless a body. And here he no longer <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
adds, *according to the Scriptures*. He had wherewithal, <sup>15. 4.</sup>  
nevertheless he adds it not. For what cause? Is it either  
because the burial was evident unto all, both then and now?  
or that the expression, *according to the Scriptures*, is set  
down of both in common? Wherefore then doth he add,  
*according to the Scriptures*, in this place, *and that He rose*  
*on the third day according to the Scriptures*, and is not  
content with the former clause, so spoken in common?  
Because this also was to most men obscure: wherefore here  
again he brings in *the Scriptures* by inspiration, having so  
conceived this thought, so wise and divine.

How is it then that he doth the same in regard of His  
death<sup>a</sup>? Because in that case too, although the cross was  
evident unto all, and in the sight of all He was stretched upon  
it; yet the cause was no longer equally so. The fact indeed  
of His death all knew, but that He suffered this for the sins  
of the world, this was no longer equally known to the mul-  
titude. Wherefore he brings in the testimony from the  
Scriptures.

This however hath been sufficiently proved by what we  
have said. But where have the Scriptures said that He was  
buried, and on the third day shall rise again? By the type  
of Jonah, which also Himself alleges, saying, *As Jonah*  
*was three days and three nights in the whale's belly, so shall*  
*also the Son of man be three days and three nights in the*  
*heart of the earth*<sup>1</sup>. By the bush in the desert. For even <sup>1</sup> Mat.  
as that burned, yet was not consumed<sup>2</sup>, so also that body<sup>12. 40.</sup>  
died indeed, but was not holden of death continually<sup>b</sup>. And <sup>3. 2.</sup>  
the dragon also in Daniel shadows out this. For as the

<sup>a</sup> The Benedictines insert a negative here, which contradicts the sense, and is not in Savile.

<sup>b</sup> This sign is variously yet without contradiction interpreted by the Fathers. St. Augustine considers it a type of the glory of God, inhabiting the Jewish people, yet not consuming the thorny hardness of their heart t. v. p. 25. St. Cyril (in Exod. t. i. p. 263.) of the Divine Nature inhabiting the Human, yet not consuming it, in the Person of our Lord. Theodoret (in loc.) says, "The power and mercy of God

are proclaimed by the circumstance, that the bush being mere brushwood was not consumed by the unquenchable fire: I think however that other intimations are conveyed by this circumstance: as that Israel, plotted against by the Egyptians, should not be consumed, but overcome his enemies; and that the Only-begotten, being made incarnate and dwelling in the Virgin's womb, shall keep that virginity inviolate." Tertull. (adv. Gnost. c. 1.) alludes to it, as representing the Church in the fire of persecution.

**HOMIL.** dragon having taken the food which the prophet gave, burst  
 XXXVIII.

<sup>1</sup> Bel asunder in the midst<sup>1</sup>; even so hell<sup>2</sup> having swallowed down  
 and the that Body, was rent asunder, the Body of itself cutting  
 Dragon, asunder its womb, and rising again.  
 v. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Isa. 53.* Now if thou desirest to hear also in words those things  
 which thou hast seen in types, listen to Isaiah, saying, *His*

<sup>3</sup> *life is taken from the earth*<sup>3</sup>, and, *it pleaseth the Lord to*  
 8, 10, 11. *cleanse Him from His wound . . . to shew unto Him light*<sup>2</sup>:  
*LXX.* in our and David before him, *Thou wilt not leave My soul in hell,*  
 vers. "it pleased nor suffer Thy Holy One to see corruption<sup>4</sup>.

the Lord Therefore Paul also sends thee on to the Scriptures, that  
 to bruise Him.... thou mayest learn that not without cause nor at random were  
 He shall these things done. For how could they, when so many pro-

and be phets are describing them beforehand, and proclaiming, that  
 satisfied.

<sup>4</sup> Ps. 16. no where doth the Scripture mean the death of sin, when it  
 10. makes mention of our Lord's death, but that of the body, and  
 a burial and resurrection of the same kind?

[5.] Ver. 5. *And that He was seen of Cephas:* he names  
 immediately the most credible of all. *Then of the twelve.*

Ver. 6. *After that, He was seen of above five hundred*  
*brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this*  
*present, but some are fallen asleep.*

Ver. 7. *After that, He was seen of James; then of all the*  
*Apostles.*

Ver. 8. *And last of all He was seen of me also, as of one*  
*born out of due time.*

Thus, since he had mentioned the proof from the Scriptures,  
 he adds also that by the events, producing as witnesses of the  
 resurrection, after the prophets, the apostles, and other faithful  
 men. Whereas if he meant that other resurrection, the de-  
 liverance from sin, it were idle for him to say, He was seen  
 of such and such an one; for this is the argument of one who  
 is establishing the resurrection of the body, not of one ob-

(4.) surely teaching deliverance from sins. Wherefore neither  
 said he once for all, *He was seen*, although it were sufficient  
 for him to do so, setting down the expression in common:  
 but now both twice and thrice and almost in each several  
 case of them that had seen Him he employs it. For *He was*  
*seen*, saith he, *of Cephas, He was seen of above five hundred*  
*brethren, He was seen of me also.* Yet surely the Gospel

saih the contrary, that He was seen of Mary first<sup>1</sup>. But <sup>1 Cor. 15. 8.</sup> among men He was seen of him first, who did most of all <sup>1 Mark 16. 9.</sup> long to see Him.

But of what twelve apostles doth he here speak? For after He was received up, Matthias was taken into the number, not after the resurrection immediately. But it is likely that He appeared even after He was received up. At any rate this our apostle himself after His ascension was both called, and saw Him. Therefore neither doth he set down the time, but simply and without defining, he recounts the appearances. For indeed it is probable that many took place; wherefore also John said, *This third time He shewed Himself*<sup>2</sup>. <sup>2 John 21. 14.</sup>

*After that He was seen of above five hundred brethren.* Some say that *above*<sup>3</sup>, is above from heaven: that is, “not <sup>3</sup> ~~in~~ <sup>above</sup> walking upon earth, but above, and overhead, He was seen of them:” adding, that it was Paul’s purpose to confirm, not the resurrection only, but also the ascension. Others say that the expression, *above five hundred*, means, *more than five hundred*.

*Of whom the greater part remain unto this present.* Thus, “though I relate events of old,” saith he, “yet have I living witnesses.” *But some are fallen asleep.* He said not, “are dead,” but *are fallen asleep*, by this expression also again confirming the resurrection. *After that, He was seen of James.* I suppose, His brother. For the Lord is said to have Himself ordained him, and made him Bishop in Jerusalem first. *Then, of all the apostles.* For there were also other apostles, as the seventy.

*And last of all, He was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.* This is rather an expression of modesty than any thing else. For not because he was the least, therefore was He seen of him after the rest. Since even if He did call him last, yet he appeared more illustrious than many which were before him, yea rather than all. And the five hundred brethren too were not surely better than James, because He was seen of them before him.

Why was He not seen of all at the same time? That He might first sow the seeds of faith. For he that saw Him first, and was exactly and fully assured, told it unto the residue: then their report coming first, placed the hearer in expectation

HOMIL. of this great wonder, and made way before for the faith of  
xxxviii. sight. Therefore neither was He seen by all together, nor in the beginning by more in number, but by one alone first, and him the leader of the whole company, and the most faithful: since indeed there was great need of a most faithful soul to be first to receive this sight. For those who, after others had seen and heard, got a sight by their means, had in their testimony what contributed in no small degree to their own faith, and tended to prepare their mind beforehand; but he who was first counted worthy to see Him, had need, as I before said, of great faith, not to be confounded by a sight so contrary to expectation. Therefore he shews Himself to Peter first. For he that first confessed Him to be Christ, was justly also counted worthy first to behold His resurrection. And not on this account alone doth He appear to him first, but also because he had denied Him, more abundantly to comfort him, and to signify that he is not abandoned, before the rest He vouchsafed him even this sight, and to him first entrusted His sheep. Therefore also He appeared to the women first. Because this sex was made inferior, therefore both in His birth and in His resurrection this first tastes of His grace.

But after Peter, He is seen also of each dispersedly, and at one time of fewer, at another of more, hereby making them witnesses and teachers of each other, and rendering His apostles trustworthy in all that they said.

[6.] *And last of all He was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.* What mean here his expressions of humility, or wherein are they seasonable? For if he wishes to shew himself worthy of credit, and to enrol himself among the witnesses of the resurrection, he is doing the contrary of what he wishes: since it were meet that he exalt himself and intimate that he was great, which in many places he doth; the occasion calling for it. Well, the very reason why he here also speaks modestly, is his being about to do this. Not straightway, however, but with his own peculiar good sense: in that having first spoken modestly, and heaped up against himself many charges, he then magnifies the things concerning himself. What may the reason be? That, when he comes to utter that great and lofty expression concerning himself, *I laboured more abundantly than all*, his discourse may be rendered more

acceptable, both hereby, and by its being spoken as a consequence of what went before, and not as a leading topic. <sup>1 Cor. 15. 9.</sup> Therefore also writing to Timothy, and intending to say great things concerning himself, he first sets down his charges against himself. For so all persons, when speaking in high terms of others, speak out freely and with boldness: but he that is compelled to praise himself, and especially when he also calls himself to witness, is disconcerted and blushes. Therefore also this blessed man first declares his own misery, and then utters that lofty expression. This then he doth, partly to abate the offensiveness of speaking about himself, and partly that he might hereby recommend to their belief what he had to say afterwards. For he that truly states what things are discreditable to him, and conceals none of them, such as, that he persecuted the Church, that he laid waste the faith, doth hereby cause the things that are honoured in him also to be above suspicion.

And consider the exceeding greatness of his humility. For (5.) having said, *and last of all, He was seen of me also*, he was not content with this: *For many that are last shall be first*, saith He, *and the first last*<sup>1</sup>. Therefore he added, *as of one born out of due time*. <sup>1 Mat. 20. 16.</sup> Neither did he stop here, but adds also his own judgment, and with a reason, saying,

Ver. 9. *For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.*

And he said not, of the twelve alone, but also of all the other apostles. And all these things he spake, both as one speaking modestly, and because he was really so disposed as I said, making arrangements also beforehand for what was intended to be spoken, and rendering it more acceptable. For had he come forward and said, "Ye ought to believe me, that Christ rose from the dead; for I saw Him, and of all I am the most worthy of credit, inasmuch as I have laboured more," the expression might have offended the hearers: but now by first dwelling on the humiliating topics, and those which involve accusation, he both took off what might be grating in such a narrative, and prepared the way for their belief in his testimony.

On this account therefore neither doth he simply, as I said,

**HOMIL.** declare himself to be the last, and unworthy of the appellation  
xxxviii. of an apostle, but also states the reason, saying, *because I persecuted the Church.* And yet all those things were forgiven, but nevertheless he himself never forgot them, desiring to signify the greatness of God's favour: wherefore also he goes on to say,

[7.] Ver. 10. *But by the grace of God I am what I am.*

<sup>1</sup> *Irigas* <sup>conj.</sup> *Savile.* Seest thou again another<sup>1</sup> excess of humility? in that the defects he imputes to himself, but of the good deeds nothing; *Irigas* rather he refers all to God. Next, lest he might hereby render Bened. his hearer supine, he saith, *And His grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain.* And this again with reserve: in that he said not, "I have displayed a diligence worthy of His grace," but, *it was not in vain.*

*But I laboured more abundantly than they all.* He said not, "I was honoured," but, *I laboured*, and when he had perils and deaths to speak of, by the name of labour he again abates his expression.

Then again practising his wonted humility, this also he speedily passes by, and refers the whole to God, saying, *Yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.* What can be more admirable than such a soul? who having in so many ways depressed himself, and uttered but one high sort of word, not even this doth he call his own; on every side finding ways, both from the former things, and from them that follow after, to contract this lofty expression, and that too, although it was of necessity that he came to it.

But consider how he abounds in the expressions of humility. For so, *of me last of all He was seen*, saith He. Wherefore neither doth he with himself mention any other, and saith, *as of one born out of due time*, and that himself is *the least of the apostles*, and not even worthy of this appellation. And he was not content even with these, but that he might not seem in mere words to be humble-minded, he states both reasons and proofs: of his being *one born out of due time*, his seeing Jesus last; but of his being unworthy even of the name of an apostle, *his persecuting the Church.* For he that is simply humble-minded, doeth not this: but he that also sets down the reasons, utters all from a contrite mind. Wherefore also he elsewhere makes mention of these same things,

saying, *And I thank Christ, Who hath enabled me, for that He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry; who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious*<sup>1.</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim.  
1.12,13.

But wherefore did he utter at all that same lofty expression, *I laboured more abundantly than they?* He saw that the occasion compelled him. For had he not said this, had he only depreciated himself, how could he with boldness call himself to witness, and number himself with the rest, and say,

Ver. 11. *Whether it were I or they, so we preach.*

For the witness ought to be trustworthy of credit, and a great man. But how he *laboured too more abundantly than they*, he indicated above, saying, *Have we not power to eat and to drink, as also the other Apostles?* And again, *to them that are without law as without law.* Thus, both where exactness was to be displayed, he overshot all: and where there was need to condescend, he displayed again the same great superiority.

But some cite his being sent to the Gentiles, and his overrunning the larger part of the world. Whence it is evident that he enjoyed more grace. For if he laboured more, the grace was also more: but he enjoyed more grace, because he displayed also more diligence. Seest thou how by those particulars, whereby he contends and strives to throw into shade the things concerning himself, he is signified to be first of all?

\* [8.] And these things when we hear, let us also make open shew of our defects, but of our excellencies let us say nothing. (6.)

Or if the opportunity force it upon us, let us speak of them with reserve, and impute the whole to God's grace: which accordingly the Apostle also doth, ever and anon putting a bad mark upon his former life, but his after-state imputing to grace, that he might signify the mercy of God from every circumstance: from His having saved him such as he was, and when saved making him again such as he is. Let none accordingly of those who are in sin despair, let none of those in virtue be confident, but let the one be exceeding fearful, and the other forward. For neither shall any slothful man be able to abide in virtue, nor one that is diligent be weak to escape from evil. And of both these the blessed David is an example, who after he slumbered a little, had a great downfall:

HOMIL. and when he was pricked in his heart, again hastened up to his former height. Since in fact both are alike evils, both despair and slothfulness; the one quickly casting a man down from the very arch of the heavens; the other, not suffering the fallen to rise again. Wherefore with respect to the one, Paul said, *Let him that thinketh he standeth, take*

<sup>1</sup> *1 Cor. heed lest he fall*<sup>1</sup>: but unto the other, *To-day if ye will hear*

<sup>10. 12.</sup>

<sup>2</sup> *Heb. 4. His voice, harden not your hearts*<sup>2</sup>: and again, *Lift up the*

<sup>7.</sup>

<sup>3</sup> *Heb. hands that hang down, and the feeble knees*<sup>3</sup>. And him too

<sup>12. 12.</sup> that had committed fornication, but repented, he therefore quickly refreshes, *that such an one might not be swallowed*

<sup>4</sup> *2 Cor. up of overmuch sorrow*<sup>4</sup>?

<sup>2. 7.</sup>

Why then in regard of other griefs art thou cast down, O man? Since if for sins, where only grief is beneficial, excess works much mischief, much more for all other things. For wherefore grievest thou? That thou hast lost money? Nay, think of those that are not even filled with bread, and thou shalt very speedily obtain consolation. And in each of the things that are grievous to thee mourn not the things that have happened, but for the disasters that have not happened give thanks. Hadst thou money, and didst thou lose it? Weep not for the loss, but give thanks for the time when thou didst enjoy it. Say like Job, *Have we received good at the hand of the Lord, and shall we not*

<sup>5</sup> *Job 2. receive evil*<sup>5</sup>? And together with this use the following

<sup>10.</sup>

argument also; that even if thou didst lose thy money, yet thy body thou hast still sound, and thou hast not with thy poverty to grieve that it also is maimed. But hath thy body too endured some rudeness? Yet is not this the bottom of human calamities, but in the middle of the cask thou art as yet carried along. For many along with poverty and maiming, both wrestle with some devil, and wander in deserts: others again endure other things more grievous than these. For may it never be our lot to suffer all that it is possible for one to bear.

These things then ever considering, bear in mind them that suffer worse, and be vexed at none of those things: but when thou sinnest, then only sigh, then weep; I forbid thee not, nay, I injoin thee rather; though even then with moderation, remembering that there is returning, there is reconciliation. But seest thou others in luxury, and thy-

self in poverty; and another in goodly robes, and in pre-<sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
eminence? Look not however on these things alone, but 15. 11.  
also on the miseries that arise out of these. And in thy  
poverty too, consider not the beggary alone, but the pleasure  
also thence arising do thou take into account. For wealth  
hath indeed a cheerful mask, but its inward parts are full of  
gloom; and poverty the reverse. And shouldest thou unfold  
each man's conscience, in the soul of the poor thou wilt see  
great security and freedom: but in that of the rich, confusions,  
disorders, tempests. And if thou grievest, seeing him rich,  
he too is vexed much more than thou, when he beholds one  
richer than himself. And as thou fearest him, even so doth  
he another, and he hath no advantage over thee in this. But  
thou art vexed to see him in office, because thou art in a  
private station, and one of the governed. Recollect however  
the day of his resignation too. And even before that day the  
tumults, the perils, the fatigues, the flatteries, the sleepless  
nights, and all the miseries.

[9.] And these things we say to those who have no mind for  
high morality: since if thou knowest this, there are other and  
greater things, whereby we may comfort thee: but for the present  
we must use the coarser topics to argue with thee. When  
therefore thou seest one that is rich, think of him that  
is richer than he, and thou wilt see him in the same condition  
with thyself. And after him look also on him that is poorer  
than thyself, consider how many have gone to bed hungry,  
and have lost their patrimony, and live in a dungeon, and  
pray for death every day. For neither doth poverty breed  
sadness, nor wealth pleasure, but both the one and the other  
our own thoughts are wont to produce in us. And consider,  
beginning from beneath: the scavenger grieves and is vexed,  
that he cannot be rid of this his business so wretched and  
esteemed so disgraceful: but if thou rid him of this, and  
cause him, with security, to have plenty of the necessaries of  
life, he will grieve again that he hath not more than he  
wants: and if thou grant him more, he will wish to double  
them again, and will therefore vex himself no less than  
before: and if thou grant him twofold or threefold, he will be  
out of heart again, because he hath no part in the state: and if  
you provide him with this also, he will count himself a

HOMIL. wretched man, that he is not one of the highest officers of state.  
XXXVIII. And when he hath obtained this honour, he will mourn that he is not ruler; and when he shall be ruler, that it is not of a whole nation; and when of a whole nation, that it is not of many nations; and when of many nations, that it is not of all. When he becomes a deputy, he will vex himself again, that he is not a king; and if a king, that he is not so alone; and if alone, that he is not also of barbarous nations, and of the whole world even: and when of the whole world, why not likewise of another world? And so his course of thought going on without end, suffers him not ever to be really delighted at any time. Seest thou, how even if from being mean and poor thou shouldest make a man a king, thou dost not remove his dejection, without first correcting his turn of thought, enamoured as it is of unfair gain?

(7.) Come, let me shew thee the contrary too, that even if from a higher station thou shouldest bring down to a lower one that hath consideration, thou wilt not cast him into dejection and grief. And if thou wilt, let us descend the same ladder, and do thou bring down the satrap from his throne, and in supposition deprive him of that dignity. I say, that he will not on this account vex himself, if he choose to bear in mind the things, of which I have spoken. For he will not reckon up the things of which he hath been deprived, but what he hath still, the glory arising from his office. But if thou take away this also, he will reckon up them who are in private stations, and have never ascended to such sway, and for consolation his riches will suffice him. And if thou also cast him out again from this, he will look to them that have a moderate estate. And if thou shouldest take away even moderate wealth, and shouldest allow him to partake only of necessary food, he may think upon them that have not even this, but wrestle with incessant hunger, and live in prison. And even if thou shouldest bring him into that prison-house, when he reflects on them that lie under incurable diseases, and irremediable pains, he will see himself to be in much better circumstances. And as the scavenger before mentioned, not even on being made a king will reap any cheerfulness, so neither will this man ever vex himself, no not if he become a prisoner. It is not then wealth that is

the foundation of pleasure, nor poverty of sadness, but our own <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
determination, and the fact, that the eyes of our mind are not <sup>15.11.</sup>  
pure, nor are fixed any where and abide, but without limit  
they flutter abroad. And as healthy bodies, if they be nou-  
rished with bread alone, are in good and vigorous condition :  
but those that are sickly, even if they enjoy a plentiful and  
varied diet, become so much the weaker ; so also it is wont  
to happen in regard of the soul. The mean spirited, not  
even in a diadem and unspeakable honours can they find  
pleasure ; but the self-denying, even in bonds, and fetters,  
and poverty, will enjoy a pure pleasure.

[10.] These things then bearing in mind, let us ever look to  
them that are beneath us. There is indeed, I grant, another  
consolation, but of a high strain in morality, and mounting  
above the grossness of the multitude. What is this ? That  
wealth is nought, poverty is nought, disgrace is nought,  
honour is nought, but in brief time they come to differ from  
each other in mere words. And along with this there is  
another soothing topic also, greater than it ; the consider-  
ation of the things to come, both evil and good, the things  
which are really evil and really good, and the being com-  
forted by them. But since many, as I said, stand aloof from  
these doctrines, therefore were we compelled to dwell on those  
topics, that in course we might lead on to them the receivers  
of what had been said before.

Let us then, taking all these things into account, by every  
means frame ourselves aright, and we shall never grieve at  
these unexpected things. For neither if we should see men  
rich in a picture, should we say they were to be envied, any  
more than on seeing poor men there depicted, we should call  
them wretched and pitiable: although those are surely more  
abiding than they whom we reckon wealthy. Since one  
abides rich in the picture longer than in the nature itself of  
things. For the one often lasts, appearing such, even to a  
hundred years, but the other sometimes, not having had so  
much as a year to live at his ease in his possessions, hath  
been suddenly stripped of all. Meditating then on all these  
things, let us from all quarters build up cheerfulness, as  
an outwork against our irrational sorrow, that we may  
both pass the present life with pleasure, and obtain the good

**HOMIL.** things to come, through the grace and mercy of our Lord  
**xxxviii.** Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father with the Holy  
Ghost, be glory, power, honour, now and for ever, and world  
without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXIX.

---

1 COR. xv. 11.

*Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.*

HAVING exalted the Apostles, and abased himself, then again having exalted himself above them, that he might make out an equality: (and we see that equality is what he hath made out:) having intimated that he had advantages over them as well as they over him, and thereby proved himself worthy of credit; neither so doth he dismiss them, but again ranks himself with them, pointing out their concord in Christ. Nevertheless he doth it not so as that it should seem to have been cast at them<sup>1</sup> in the way of reproach, but <sup>reproach</sup> as himself also to appear in the same rank. For so it was <sup>profitable</sup>. profitable for the Gospel. Wherefore also he was equally earnest, on the one hand, that he might not seem to overlook them, on the other, that he might not be, on account of the honour paid to them, held cheap by those that were under his authority. Therefore he also now makes himself equal again, saying,

*Whether therefore it were I or they, so we preach.* “From whomsoever,” saith he, “ye choose to learn, learn; there is no difference at all between us.” And he said not, “if ye will not believe me, believe them;” but while he makes himself worthy of credit, and saith that he is of himself sufficient, he affirms the same also of them by themselves. For the difference of persons took no effect, their dignities being equal. And in the Epistle to the Galatians also he doth this, taking them with him, not as standing in need of them, but saying indeed that even himself was sufficient: *For they*

**HOMIL.** *who seemed to be somewhat added nothing to me<sup>1</sup>:* nevertheless even so I follow after agreement with them. *For* <sup>1 Gal. 2.</sup> *they gave unto me,* saith he, *their right hands<sup>2</sup>.* For <sup>2 Gal. 2.</sup> if the credit of Paul were always to depend on others, and to be confirmed by testimony from others, the disciples would hence have received infinite injury. It is not therefore to exalt himself that he doeth this, but fearing for the Gospel. Wherefore also he here saith, making himself equal, *Whether it were I or they, so we preach.*

Well did he say, *we preach*, indicating his great boldness <sup>3 οὐ πατεῖσθαι.</sup> of speech. For we speak not secretly <sup>4</sup>, nor in private, but we <sup>εὐφωνέστεροι.</sup> utter a voice clearer than a trumpet. And he said not, "we preached," but "even now *so we preach. And so ye believed.*" Here he said not, "ye believe," but, *ye believed*. Because they were shaken in mind, therefore he ran back to the former times, and proceeds to add the witness from themselves.

[2.] Ver. 12. *Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?*

Seest thou how excellently he reasons, and proves the resurrection from the fact of Christ's being raised, having first established the former in many ways? "For both the prophets spake of it," saith he, "and the Lord Himself shewed it by His appearing, and we preach, and ye believed;" weaving thus his fourfold testimony; the witness of the prophets, the witness of the issue of events, the witness of the apostles, the witness of the disciples; or rather a five-fold. For this very cause too itself implies the resurrection; viz. his dying for others' sins. If therefore this be proved, it is evident that the other also follows, viz. that the other dead likewise are raised. And this is why, as concerning an admitted fact, he challenges and questions them, saying, *Now if Christ be raised, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?*

Hereby also again abating the boldness of the gainsayers:

<sup>a</sup> The *παραβόλειον* was one of the inferior courts at Athens, so called because it had cognizance only of trivial and obscure matters, and because it was situate in *ἀραιῇ τόπῳ τῆς πόλεως*, in an obscure part of the city. Hence the phrase. Pausan. Attic. c. 28; Demosth. cont. Timocr. p. 715. Ed. Reiske.

in that he said not, “ how say ye,” but, *how say some among you.* And neither doth he bring a charge against all, nor declare openly the very persons whom he accuses, in order not to make them more reckless; neither on the other hand doth he conceal it wholly, that he may correct them. For this purpose accordingly, separating them from the multitude, he strips himself for the contest with them, by this both weakening and confounding them, and holding the rest in their conflicts with these firmer to the truth, nor suffering them to desert to those that were busy to destroy them: he being in fact prepared to adopt a vehement mode of speech.

Further, lest they should say, “ this indeed is clear and evident unto all, that Christ is raised, and none doubts it; this doth not however necessarily infer the other also, to wit, the resurrection of mankind:”—for the one was both before proclaimed and came to pass, and was testified of by his appearing; the fact, namely, of Christ’s resurrection; but the other is yet in hope, i. e. our own part:—see what he doeth; from the other side again he makes it out: which is a proof of great power. Thus, *why do some say,* saith he, *that there is no resurrection of the dead?* Of course then the former also in its turn is subverted by this, the fact, namely, that Christ is raised. Wherefore also he adds, saying,

Ver. 13. *But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.*

Seest thou Paul’s energy, and his spirit for the combat, so invincible? how not only from what is clear he demonstrates what is doubtful, but also from what is doubted of, to such as contradict hitherto, endeavours to demonstrate the former evident proposition? Not because what had already taken place required demonstration, but that he might signify this to be equally worthy of belief with that.

[3.] “ And what kind of consequence is this,” saith one? (2.) “ For if Christ be not raised, that then neither should others be raised, doth follow: but that if others be not raised, neither should Christ be raised, what reason can there be in this?” Since then this doth not appear to be very reasonable, see how he works it out fully, scattering his seeds beforehand, from the beginning, even from the very purpose of the Gospel: as,

550. *Our Resurrection implied in the whole Economy:*

HOMIL. that *having died for our sins*, he was raised; and that he XXXIX. is *the first-fruits of them that slept*. For the first-fruits—of what can they be the first-fruits, except of them that are raised? And how can they be first-fruits, if they rise not of whom they are first-fruits? How then are they not raised?

Again, if they be not raised, wherefore was Christ raised? Wherefore came He? Wherefore did He take upon Him flesh, if He were not about to raise flesh again? For He stood not in need of it Himself, but for our sakes. But these things he afterward sets down as he goes on; for the present he saith, *If the dead be not raised, neither is Christ risen*, as though that were connected with this. For had He not intended to raise Himself, He would not have wrought that other work. Seest thou by degrees the whole economy overthrown by those words of theirs, and by their unbelief in the resurrection? But as yet he saith nothing of the incarnation, but of the resurrection. For not His having become incarnate, but His having died, took away death; since while He had flesh, the tyranny of death still had dominion.

Ver. 14. *And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.*

Although what followed in due course would have been, “but if Christ be not risen, ye fight against things evident, and against so many prophets, and the truth of facts.” But he states what is much more fearful to them: *then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.* For he wishes to shake thoroughly their mind: “we have lost all,” saith he, “all is over, if He be not risen.” Seest thou how great is the mystery of the œconomy? As thus: if after death He could not rise again, neither is sin loosed, nor death taken away, nor the curse removed. Yea, and not only have we preached in vain, but ye also have believed in vain.

[4.] And not hereby alone doth he shew the impiety of these evil doctrines, but he further contends earnestly against them, saying,

Ver. 15. *Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God: because we have testified of Him that He raised up Christ; whom He raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.*

But if this be impious, (for it is a charge against God and a <sup>1 Cor.</sup> calumny,) and He raised Him not, as ye say, not only this, 15. 18. but other impieties too will follow.

And again he establishes it all, and takes it up again, saying,

Ver. 16. *For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.*

For had He not intended to do this, He would not even have come into the world. And he names not this, but the end, to wit, His resurrection; through it drawing them all on.

Ver. 17. *And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain.*

With whatever is clear and confessed, he keeps on surrounding the resurrection of Christ, by means of the stronger point making even that which seems to be weak and doubtful, strong and clear.

*Ye are yet in your sins.* For if He be not raised, neither did He die; and if He died not, neither did He take away sin: His death being the taking away of sin. *For behold,* saith one, *the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sins of the world*<sup>1</sup>. But how *taketh away?* By His death. Wherefore also he called him a Lamb, as in the act of being slain. <sup>1 John 1. 29.</sup> But if He rose not again, neither was He slain: and if He was not slain, neither was sin taken away: and if it was not taken away, ye are in it: and if ye are in it, we have preached in vain: and if we have preached in vain, ye have believed in vain. And besides death remains immortal, if He did not arise. For if He too was holden of death, and loosed not its pains, how released He all others, being as yet Himself holden of it? Wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 18. *Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished.*

"And why speak I of you," saith he, "when all those also are perished, who have done all, and are no longer subject to the uncertainty of the future?" But by the expression, *in Christ*, he means either "in the faith," or "they who died for His sake, who endured many perils, many miseries, who walked in the narrow way."

Where now are those foul-mouthed Manichees, who say that by the resurrection he here means, the liberation from sin<sup>b</sup>?

<sup>b</sup> The Manicheans say, "that Christ bodies but souls." St. Aug. de Hæres. came in the last times, to deliver not §. 46. They argued against the re-

**HOMIL.** For these compact and continuous syllogisms, holding as they xxxix. do also conversely, indicate nothing of what they say, but what we affirm. It is true, the term “rising again” is spoken of one who is but fallen: and this is why he keeps on explaining, and saith not only, that He was raised, but adds this also, *from the dead*. And the Corinthians too doubted not of the forgiveness of sins, but of the resurrection of bodies.

But what necessity is there at all, that except mankind be not without sin, neither should Christ Himself be so? Whereas, if He were not to raise men up, it were natural to say, “wherefore came He, and took our flesh, and rose again?” But on our supposition not so. Yea, and whether men sin or do not sin, there is ever with God an impossibility of sinning, and what happens to us reaches not to Him, nor doth one case answer to the other by way of conversion, as in the case of the resurrection of the body<sup>c</sup>.

[4.] Ver. 19. *If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.*

What sayest thou, O Paul? How *in this life only have we hope*, if our bodies be not raised, the soul abiding and being immortal? Because even if the soul abide, even if it be infinitely immortal, as indeed it is, without the flesh it shall not receive those hidden good things, as neither truly shall it be punished. For all things shall be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ, *that every one may receive the things done in the body, according to that he hath done,*

<sup>a</sup> 2 Cor. 5. 10. *whether it be good or bad*<sup>1</sup>. Therefore he saith, *if in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.*

For if the body rise not again, the soul abides uncrowned without that blessedness which is in heaven. And if this be so, we shall enjoy nothing then *at all*: and if nothing then, in the present life is our recompense. “What then in this respect can be more wretched than we,” saith he?

surrection of the body from such texts as 1 Cor. v. 5; xv. 50: see Epiph. Hæres. 66. §. 86, 87. They as well as the old Gnostics, of course, took this line, holding as they did the inherent corruption of matter.

<sup>c</sup> His argument may be thus briefly stated. The Apostle had in the former verses made use of the resurrection of

Christ and our resurrection as terms implying one another. If (according to the Manichees) the word resurrection mean only liberation from sin, the terms no longer imply one another. For Christ by His divine nature cannot sin. It doth not therefore follow that, if we be not raised, Christ is not risen.

But these things he said, as well to confirm them in the doctrine of the resurrection of the body, as to persuade them concerning that immortal life, in order that they might not suppose that all our concerns end with the present world. For having sufficiently established what he purposed by the former arguments, and having said, *if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised, but if Christ be not raised, we are perished, and we are yet in our sins*; again he also subjoins this, thoroughly demolishing their arrogance. For so, when he intends to introduce any of the necessary doctrines, he first shakes thoroughly their hardness of heart by fear: which accordingly he did here, having both above scattered those seeds, and made them anxious, as those who had fallen from all: and now again after another manner, and so as they should most severely feel it, doing this same thing, and saying, “*we are of all men most miserable*, if after so great conflicts and deaths, and those innumerable evils, we are to fall from so great blessings, and our happiness is limited by the present life.” For in fact all depends on the resurrection. So that even hence it is evident, that his discourse was not of a resurrection from sins, but of bodies, and of the life present and to come.

[5.] Ver. 20. *But now is Christ risen from the dead, the first-fruits of them that slept.*

Having signified how great mischiefs are bred from not believing the resurrection, he takes up the discourse again, and says, *But now is Christ risen from the dead*; continually adding *from the dead*, so as to stop<sup>1</sup> the mouths of the heretics. *The first-fruits of them that slept.* But if their first-fruits, then themselves also, must needs rise again. Whereas if he were speaking of the resurrection from sins, and none is without sin;—for even Paul saith, *I am conscious to myself of nothing, yet am I not hereby justified*<sup>2</sup>;—how shall there be<sup>3</sup> any who rise again, according to you? Seest thou that his discourse was of bodies? And that he might make it worthy<sup>4</sup> of credit, he continually brings Christ before them, who rose again in the flesh.

Next he also assigns a reason. For, as I said, when one asserts, but does not state the reason, his discourse is not easily received by the multitude. What then is the reason?

554 All St. Paul's Arguments imply a bodily Resurrection.

HOMIL. Ver. 21. *For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.*

But if by a man, doubtless by one having a body. And observe his thoughtfulness, how on another ground also he makes his argument inevitable. As thus: "he that is defeated," saith he, "must in his own person also recover by conflict the nature which was cast down, must in his own person also gain the victory. For so the reproach was wiped away."

But let us see what kind of death he is speaking of.

Ver. 22. *For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*

What then? tell me; did all die in Adam the death of sin<sup>d</sup>? How then was Noah righteous in his generation? and how Abraham? and how Job? and how all the rest? And what, I pray? shall all be made alive in Christ? Where then are those who are led away into hell fire? Thus, if this be said of the body, the doctrine stands: but if of righteousness and sin, it doth so no longer.

Further, lest, on hearing that the revival is common to all, thou shouldest suppose that sinners also are saved, he adds,

Ver. 23. *But every man in his own order.*

For do not, because thou hearest of a resurrection, imagine that all enjoy the same benefits. Since if in the punishment all will not suffer alike, but the difference is great; much more where there are sinners and righteous men, shall the separation be yet wider.

*Christ the first-fruits, afterwards they that are Christ's; i. e. the faithful, and approved.*

Ver. 24. *Then cometh the end.*

For when these shall have risen again, all things shall have an end, not as now, when after Christ's resurrection things abide yet in suspense. Wherefore he added, *at His coming*, that thou mayest learn that he is speaking of that time, *when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God even the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.*

<sup>d</sup> This may seem at first sight, especially to the English reader, inconsistent with such texts as Ephes. 2. 1; Coloss. 2. 12, &c. But it will be found that the term *mixtus* used in those texts, is applied rather to each person's actual

sin and its effects, than to the general result of Adam's transgression; and that *mixtus*, when applied to the latter, relates to the death of the body: as in Rom. 5. 15, which is so expounded by St. Aug. de Nupt. ii. 46.

[6.] Here, give heed to me carefully, and see that no part escape you of what I say. For our contest is with enemies<sup>e</sup>: wherefore first we must practise the *reductio ad absurdum*, which also Paul often doeth. Since in this way shall we find what they say most easy of detection. Let us ask them then first, what is the meaning of the saying, *When he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father?* For if we take this just as it stands, and not in a sense becoming Deity, He will not after this retain it. For he that hath delivered up to another, ceases any longer to retain a thing himself. And not only will there be this absurdity, but that also the other person who receives it, will be found not to be possessor of it before he hath so received it. Therefore, according to them, neither was the Father a King before, governing our affairs; nor will it seem that the Son, after these things, will be a King. How then, first of all, concerning the Father doth the Son Himself say, *My Father worketh hitherto, and I work*<sup>1</sup>: and of Him<sup>1</sup> *John 5.* Daniel, *That His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, which shall not pass away*<sup>2</sup>? Seest thou how many absurdities are<sup>3</sup> *Dan. 7.* produced, and repugnant to the Scriptures, when one takes<sup>14</sup> the thing spoken after the manner of men?

But what rule, then, doth he here say that Christ *putteth down*? That of the angels? Far from it. That of the faithful? Neither is it this. What rule then? That of the devils, concerning which he saith, *We wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world*<sup>3</sup>. For now it is not as<sup>3</sup> *Ephes. 6. 12.* yet *put down* perfectly, they working in many places; but then shall they cease.

Ver. 25. *For He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His feet.*

Again from hence also another absurdity is produced, unless we take this also in a way becoming Deity. For the

The partisans of Marcellus of Antioch, who about the middle of the fourth century taught that the Personal Kingdom of the Son, and indeed His Personality, will cease at the last day, He being as such an emanation from the Father as shall be again absorbed into the Father. See S. Cyril, Catech. xv. 27. and others

quoted by Bp. Pearson on the Creed, Art. vi. part 2. This error is supposed to have occasioned the insertion at Constantinople of the words, "Of whose kingdom there shall be no end," in the Nicene Creed. It appears that Marcellus alleged this text.

556 *Difficulties in the Statement about Christ's final Triumph.*

HOMIL. expression, *until*, is one of end and limitation : but in reference xxxix to God, this does not exist.

Ver. 26. *The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.*

How the last? After all, after the devil, after all the other things. For so in the beginning also death came in last; the counsel of the devil having come first, and our disobedience, and then death. Virtually then indeed it is even now put down: but actually, at that time.

[7.] Ver. 27. *For He hath put all things under His feet. But when He saith, All things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him.*

Ver. 28. *And when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him.*

And yet before he said not that it was the Father who *put things under Him*, but He Himself who *makes void*. For *when He shall have made void*, saith he, *all rule and authority*: and again, *for He must reign until He hath put all His enemies under His feet*. How then doth he here say, *the Father?*

And not only is there this apparent perplexity, but also that he is afraid with a very unaccountable fear, and uses a correction, saying, *He is excepted, which did put all things under Him*, as though some would suspect, whether the Father might Himself not be subject unto the Son; than which what can be more irrational? nevertheless he fears this.

How then is it? for in truth there are many questions following one upon another. Well, give me then your earnest attention; since in fact it is necessary for us first to speak of the scope also of Paul and his mind, which one may find every where shining forth, and then to subjoin our solution: this being itself an ingredient in our solution.

What then is Paul's mind, and what is his custom? He speaks in one way, when he discourses of the Godhead alone, and in another, when he falls into the argument of the economy. Thus having once taken hold of our Lord's Flesh, he freely thereafter uses all the sayings that humiliate Him; without fear, as though that were able to bear all such expressions. Let us see therefore here also, whether his

discourse is of the simple Godhead, or whether along with 1 Cor. 15. 24. the economy he asserts of Him those things which he saith: or rather let us first point out, where he did this of which I have spoken. Where then did he this? Writing to the Philippians he saith, *Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and being found in fashion as a man, he humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Phil. 2.  
6, 7, 8, 9.

Seest thou how, when he was discoursing of the Godhead alone, he uttered those great things, that He *was in the form of God*, and that He *was equal with* Him that begat Him, and to Him refers the whole? But when he shewed Him to thee made flesh, he lowered again the discourse. For except thou distinguish these things, there is great variance between the things spoken. Since, if He were *equal with God*, how did He highly exalt one equal with Himself? If He were *in the form of God*, how *gave* He Him *a name*? for he that giveth, giveth to one that hath not, and he that exalteth, exalteth one that is before abased. He will be found then to be imperfect, and in need, before He hath received the *exaltation and the Name*; and many other absurd corollaries will hence follow. But if thou shouldest add the economy, thou wilt not err in saying these things. These things then here also consider, and with this mind receive thou the expressions.

[8.] Now together with these we will state also other reasons. (5.) But at present it is necessary to mention this: first, that Paul's discourse was of the resurrection, a thing counted to be impossible and greatly disbelieved: next, he was writing to Corinthians, among whom the majority were the philosophers, who mocked at such things always. For although in other things wrangling one with another, in this they all, as with one mouth, conspired, dogmatically declaring that there is no resurrection. Contending therefore for such a subject, so disbelieved and ridiculed, both on account of the prejudice which had been formed, and on account of the difficulty of the thing; and wishing to demonstrate its possibility, he first effects this from the resurrection of Christ. And having proved

**HOMIL.** it both from the prophets, and from those who had seen, and  
xxxix from those who had believed: when he had obtained an admitted *reductio ad absurdum*, he proves in what follows the resurrection of mankind also. *For if the dead rise not*, saith he, *then is not Christ raised.*

Further; having closely urged these converse arguments in the former verses, he tries it again in another way, calling Him the *first-fruits*, and pointing to His *putting down all rule, and all authority, and power, and death last*. “How then should death be put down,” saith he, “unless he first lose the bodies which he held?” Since then he had spoken great things of the Only-begotten, that He *gives up the kingdom*, i. e. that He Himself brings these things to pass, and Himself is victor in the war, and *putteth all things under His feet*, he adds, to correct the unbelief of the multitude, *for He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His feet*. Not as putting an end to the kingdom, did he use the expression *until*, but to render what was said worthy of credit, and induce them to be confident. For “do not,” saith he, “because thou hast heard that He will put down *all rule, and all authority, and power*, to wit, the devil, and the bands of daemons, (many as there are,) and the multitudes of unbelievers, and the tyranny of death, and all evils; do not thou fear, as though His strength were exhausted. For until He shall have done all these things, *He must reign*:” not saying this, that, after He hath brought it to pass, He doth not reign; but establishing this other, that even if it be not now, undoubtedly it will be. For His kingdom is not cut off: yea, He rules and prevails and abides until He shall have set to right all things.

And this manner of speech one might find also in the Old Testament; as when it is said, *But the word of the Lord*

<sup>1</sup> Ps.119. *abideth for ever*<sup>1</sup>; and, *Thou art the same, and Thy years 89.*

<sup>2</sup> Ps.102. *shall not fail*<sup>2</sup>. Now these and such like things the Prophet

27. saith, when he is telling of things which a long space of time must achieve, and which must by all means come to pass; casting out the fearfulness of the duller sort of hearers.

But that the expression, *until*, spoken of God, and *unto*, do not signify an end, hear what one saith: *From everlasting*

<sup>3</sup> Ps. 90. *unto everlasting Thou art God*<sup>3</sup>: and again, *I am, and even*

<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Isa.46. *to your old age I am He*<sup>4</sup>.

4. For this cause indeed doth he set death last, that from the

victory over the rest this also might be easily admitted by the unbeliever. For when He destroys the devil who brought in death, much rather will He put an end to His work.

[9.] Since then he referred all to Him, the *putting down rule and authority*, the perfecting of His kingdom, I mean the salvation of the faithful, the peace of the world, the taking away of evils, (for this is to perfect His kingdom, to put an end to death;) and he said not "the Father by Him," but "Himself shall put down, and Himself shall put under His feet," and he no where mentioned Him that begat Him; he was afraid afterward, lest on this account among some of the more irrational persons, either the Son might seem to be greater than the Father, or to be a certain distinct principle, unbegotten<sup>1.</sup> <sup>ἀρχὴ</sup> And therefore, gently guarding himself, he qualifies the magnitude of his expressions, saying, *for He hath put all things under His feet*, again referring to the Father<sup>2.</sup> these high achievements; not as though the Son were without power. For how could He be, of whom he testified so great things before, and referred to Him all that was said? But it was for the reason which I mentioned, and that he might shew all things to be common to Father and Son which were done in our behalf. For that Himself alone was sufficient to *put all things under Him*, hear again Paul saying, <sup>2.</sup> *Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body, according to the working whereby He is able even to subdue all things unto Himself.*

Then also he uses a correction, saying, *But when He saith, all things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him*, testifying even thence no small glory to the Only-begotten. For if He were less, and much inferior, this fear would never have been entertained by him. Neither is he content with this, but also adds another thing, as follows. I say, lest any should doubtingly ask, "And what if the Father hath not been *put under Him*? this doth not at all hinder the Son from being the more mighty;" fearing this impious supposition, because that expression was not sufficient to point out this also, he added, going very much beyond it, *But when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject;* shewing His great concord with the Father, and that He is the principle of all other good things, and the first Cause, who

## 560 Earnestness of Scripture against wrong Notions of God's Nature.

HOMIL. hath begotten One, so great in power and in achievements.  
xxxix.

(6.) [10.] But if he said more than the subject-matter demanded, marvel not. For in imitation of his Master he doeth this: since He too purposing to shew His concord with Him that begat Him, and that He hath not come without His mind, descends so far, I say not, as the proof of concord demanded, but as the weakness of the persons present required. For He prays to His Father for no other cause but this; and stating the reason He saith, *that they may believe that Thou hast sent Me*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> John 11. 42. In imitation therefore of Him, Paul here in his manner of speech goes beyond what was required; not that thou mightest have any suspicion of a forced servitude, far from it; but that he might the more entirely cast out those impious doctrines.

For so, when he is minded to pull up any thing by the roots, he is wont to do it, and abundantly more with it<sup>2</sup>. Thus too, for example, when he spake of a believing wife and an unbelieving husband, companying with one another by the law of marriage, that the wife might not consider herself defiled by that intercourse, and the embraces of the unbeliever, he said not, "the wife is not unclean," nor,

"she is no wise harmed, by the unbeliever," but, which was much more, "the unbeliever is even *sanctified* by her," not meaning to signify this, that the heathen was made holy through her, but by the very great strength of the expression anxious to remove her fear. So also here, his zeal to take away that impious doctrine, by saying over and above what he needed, was the cause of his expressing himself as he did. For as to suspect the Son of weakness, is extreme impiety: (wherefore he corrects it, saying, *He shall put all enemies under His feet:*) so on the other hand is it more impious to consider the Father inferior to Him. Wherefore he takes it also away with exceeding force. And observe how he puts it. For he said not simply, *He is excepted which put all things under Him*, but, *it is manifest*, "for even if it be admitted," saith he, "nevertheless I make it sure<sup>3</sup>."

<sup>3</sup> επει. ομαι. And that thou mayest learn, that this is the reason of the things spoken, I would ask thee this question: Doth an additional *subjection* at that time befall the Son? And how can this be other than impious and unworthy of God? For the greatest subjection and obedience is this, that He who is

God took the form of a servant. How then will He then be *subject*? <sup>1 Cor. 15. 27.</sup> Seest thou, that to take away the impious notion, he used this expression? and this too in a suitable though reserved sense? For as becomes a Son and a divine Person, so He obeys; not humanly, but as one acting freely, and having all authority. Otherwise how is he co-enthroned? How, *as the Father raiseth up, even so He, whom He will*<sup>1</sup>? How are *all things that the Father hath, His*, and all that He hath, the <sup>John 5. 21.</sup> Father's? <sup>2</sup> For these phrases indicate to us an authority <sup>John 16. 15.</sup> exactly measured by <sup>3</sup> that of Him that begat Him. <sup>3 &c.</sup>

[11.] But what is this, *When He shall have delivered up the kingdom*? The Scripture acknowledges two kingdoms of God, the one by appropriation<sup>4</sup>, the other by creation<sup>5</sup>. Thus, <sup>4 &c.</sup> He is king over all, both Greeks, and Jews, and devils, and <sup>5</sup>. His adversaries, in respect of His creation: but He is king of the faithful, and willing, and subject, in respect of His making them His own. This is the kingdom, which is said also to have a beginning. For concerning this He saith also in the second Psalm, *Ask of Me, and I shall give Thee the heathen for Thine inheritance*<sup>5</sup>. Touching this also, He Himself said to His disciples, *All power is given unto Me by My Father*<sup>6</sup>, referring all <sup>6 Matt. 28. 18.</sup> to Him that begat Him, not as though of Himself He were not sufficient, but to signify that He is a Son, and not unbegotten. This kingdom then he doth *deliver up*, i. e. “ bring to a right end.”

“ What then,” saith one, “ can be the reason why He spake nothing of the Spirit?” Because of Him he was not discoursing now, nor doth he confound all things together. Since also where he saith, *There is one God the Father, and one Lord Jesus*, undoubtedly not as allowing the Spirit to be inferior, is he therefore silent, but because for the time it was not urgent, he so expressed himself. For he is wont also to make mention of the Father only, yet we must not therefore cast out the Son: he is wont to speak also of the Son and of the Spirit only, yet not for this are we to deny<sup>7</sup> the Father. <sup>7 &c.</sup>

But what is, *that God may be all in all?* That all things <sup>soever.</sup> may be dependent upon Him, that none may suppose two beginnings without a beginning, nor another kingdom sepa-

<sup>f</sup> This distinction, in these terms, is on 47 (48) Psalm, v. 1; on 1 Tim. 6. 11: found elsewhere in St. Chrysostom; as as quoted by Suicer, v. *βασιλία*.

HOMIL. rated off. For when the enemies shall be lying under the feet of the Son, and He having them cast under His feet be at no variance with His Father, but at concord with Him in entire perfection, then He shall Himself *be all in all*.

But some say that he spake this to declare the removal of wickedness, as though all would yield thenceforth, and none would resist, nor do iniquity. For when there is no sin, it is evident that *God shall be all in all*.

[12.] But if bodies do not rise again, how are these things true? For the worst enemy of all, death, remains, having wrought whatever he listed. "Nay," saith one, "for they shall sin no more." And what of that? For he is not discoursing here of the death of the soul, but of that of the body? How then is he *put down*? For victory is this, the winning of those things which have been carried off and detained. But if men's bodies are to be detained in the earth, it follows that the tyranny of death remains, these bodies for their part being holden, and there being no other body for him to be vanquished in. But if this, which Paul spake of, ensue, as undoubtedly it will ensue, God's victory will appear, and that a glorious one, in His being able to raise again the bodies which were holden thereby. Since an enemy too is then vanquished, when a man takes the spoils, not when he suffers them to remain in the other's possession: but unless one venture to take what is his, how can we say that he is

(7.) vanquished? After this manner of victory doth Christ Himself say in the Gospels that He hath been victorious, thus speaking, *When he shall bind the strong man, then shall he also spoil his goods*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Matt. 12. 29. Since if this were not so, it would not be at all a manifest victory. For as in the death of the soul,

<sup>2</sup> Rom. 6. 7. *he that is dead is freed from sin*<sup>2</sup>; (and yet we cannot say that this is a victory, for he is not the victor, who adds no more to his wickedness, but he who hath done away the former captivity of his passions;) just so in this instance also, I should not call death's being stayed from feeding on the bodies of men a splendid victory, but rather that the bodies heretofore holden by him should be snatched away from him.

But if they should still be contentious, and should say that these things were spoken of the soul's death, how is this *destroyed last?* since in the case of each one at his Baptism

it hath been destroyed perfectly. If however thou speakest <sup>1 Cor.</sup> of the body, the expression is admissible; I mean, such a 15. 27. saying as that it will be *last destroyed*.

But if any should doubt why, discoursing of the resurrection, he did not bring forward the bodies which rose again in the time of our Lord, our answer might be the following: that this could not be alleged in behalf of the resurrection. For to point out those who had risen dying again, suited not one employed in proving that death is entirely destroyed. Yea, this is the very reason why he said that he is *destroyed last*, that thou mightest never more suspect his rising again. For when sin is taken away, much more shall death cease: it being out of all reason, when the fountain is dried up, that the stream flowing from it should still subsist; and when the root is annihilated, that the fruit should remain.

[13.] Since then in the last day the enemies of God shall be destroyed, together with death, and the devil, and the evil spirits, let us not be dejected at the prosperity of the enemies of God. For the enemies of the Lord, in the moment of their glory and exaltation, fail; *yea, like smoke have they failed away*<sup>1</sup>. When thou seest any enemy of God wealthy, with <sup>1 Ps. 37.</sup> armed attendants, and many flatterers, be not cast down, but <sup>20.</sup> lament, weep, call upon God, that He may enrol him amongst His friends: and the more he prosters being God's enemy, so much the more do thou mourn for him. For sinners we ought always to bewail, but especially when they enjoy wealth, and abundance of good days; even as one should the sick, when they eat and drink to excess.

But there are some, who, when they hear these words, are of so unhappy a disposition, as to sigh bitterly thereupon, and say, "Tears are due to me, who have nothing." Thou hast well said, "who have nothing," not because thou hast not what another hath, but because thou accountest the thing such, as to be called happy; yea, for this cause art thou worthy of infinite lamentations: even as, if a person living in health, should count happy him that is sick, and lying on a soft couch, this latter is not near so wretched and miserable as he, because he hath no sense of his own advantages. Just such a result one may observe in these men's case also: nay, and hereby our whole life is confounded and disordered. For

HOMIL. these sayings have undone many, and betrayed them to the  
xxxix. devil, and made them more pitiable than such as are wasted  
 with famine. Yea, that those who long after more, are more  
 wretched than mendicants, as being possessed with a greater  
 and bitterer sorrow than they, is evident from what follows.

A drought once overtook our city, and all were trembling for  
 the last of evils, and were beseeching God to rid them of this fear.  
 And one might see then that which was spoken of by Moses ;  
<sup>1 Deut.</sup> <sup>28. 23.</sup> <sup>1</sup> *the heavens become brass, and a death, of all deaths the most*  
*horrible, waited for every day.* But afterwards, when it seemed  
 good to the merciful God, beyond all expectation there was wafted  
 down from heaven a great and plentiful rain, and thenceforth all  
 were in holiday and feasting, as having come up from the very  
 gates of death. But in the midst of so great blessings, and  
 the common gladness of all, one of these exceeding wealthy  
 people, with a gloomy and downcast countenance, went  
 about quite dead with sorrow ; and when many enquired the  
 reason, wherefore in the common joy of all men he alone is  
 sorrowful, he could not even keep within him this savage  
 passion, but goaded by the tyranny of the disease, he declared  
 before them all the reason. " Why," saith he, " having in  
 my possession ten thousand measures of wheat, I have no  
 means of disposing of them left." Shall we then count him  
 happy, tell me, for these words, for which he deserved to be  
 stoned ? Him that was more cruel than any wild beast, the  
 common enemy ? What sayest thou, man ? Art thou sad  
 because all did not perish, that thou mightest gather gold ?

<sup>2 Prov.</sup> <sup>11. 26.</sup> Hast thou not heard what Solomon saith<sup>2</sup>, *He that with-*  
*holdeth<sup>3</sup> corn, the people shall curse him?* but goest about a  
 common enemy of the blessings of the world, and a foe to the  
 liberality of the Lord of the world, and a friend of Mammon,  
 or rather his slave ? Nay, doth not that tongue deserve to be  
 cut out, and the heart to be quenched, that brought forth  
 these words ?

(8.) [14.] Seest thou how gold doth not suffer men to be men, but  
 wild beasts and fiends ? For what can be more pitiful than  
 this rich man, whose daily prayer is, that there may be famine,  
 in order that he may have a little gold ? Yea, and his passion  
 by this time is come round to the contrary of itself : he not  
 even rejoicing in his abundant store of the fruits of the earth,

but on this very account grieving the rather, (to such a pass <sup>1 COR.</sup> ~~15. 27.~~) is he come,) that his possessions are infinite. Although one who hath much, ought to be joyful: but this man on that very account is dejected. Seest thou that, as I said, the rich do not reap as much pleasure from what is present, as they endure sorrow for what hath not yet been added? For he that had innumerable quantities of wheat did more grieve and lament than he who suffered hunger. And while the one, on merely having his necessary food, was crowning himself, and leaping for joy, and giving thanks to God; the other, who had so much, was fretting, and thought he was undone. It is not then the superfluity which causes our pleasure, but a self-controlling mind: since without this, though one obtain and have all, he will feel as one deprived of all, and will mourn accordingly: inasmuch as this man too, of whom we are now speaking, even if he had sold all he had for as large a sum as he wished, would again have grieved that it was not for more; and if he could have had more, he would again have sought another advance; and if he had disposed of the bushel for one pound, he would even then have been distracted for sorrow, that the half bushel could not be sold for as much. And if the price were not set so high at first, marvel not. Since drunkards also are not at first inflamed, but when they have loaded themselves with much wine, then they kindle the flame into greater fierceness: so these men, by how much more they have grasped, in so much the greater poverty do they find themselves, and they who gain more than others, are the very persons to be most in want.

[15.] But I say these things, not only to this man, but also to each one of those who are so diseased; those, I say, who raise the price of their wares, and make a traffic of the poverty of their neighbours. For of humanity none any where makes account; but every where the covetous desire brings out many at the time of sale. And oil and wine is sold by one quicker, by another more slowly, but by neither out of regard to others; rather the one seeks gain, the other to avoid loss by the spoiling of his produce. Thus, because most men, not making much account of the laws of God, shut up and keep all in doors, God, by other means leading them to humanity,—that, were it but of necessity, they may do something kind,—hath infused into them the fear of greater loss,

**HOMIL.** not allowing the fruits of the earth to keep any long time,  
xxxix. in order that out of mere dread of the damage from their spoiling, they may expose for sale to the needy, even against their will, such things as they wickedly bury at home and keep. However, after all this, some are so insatiable, as not even thereby to be corrected. Many, for example, have gone so far as to empty whole casks, not giving even a cup-full to the poor man, nor a piece of silver's worth to the needy, but after it hath become vinegar, they dash it all upon the ground, and destroy besides their casks together with the fruit. Others again who would not give a part of a single cake to the hungry, have thrown whole granaries into some river; and because they listened not to God, who bade them give to the needy, at the bidding of the moth, even unwillingly, they exhausted all they had in their houses in most utter destruction and waste; drawing down upon their own heads, together with this loss, much scorn, and many a curse.

And such is the course of their affairs here; but the hereafter, what words shall set before us? For as these men in this world cast their moth-eaten grain, become useless, into rivers; even so the doers of such things, on this very account become useless, God casts into the river of fire. Because, as the grain by the moth and the worm, so are their souls devoured by cruelty and inhumanity. And the reason of these things is, their being nailed to things present, and gaping after this life only. Whence also such men are full of infinite sadness; for name whatever pleasure thou wilt, the fear of their end is enough to annihilate all, and such an one *is dead, while he*

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. *is yet alive*<sup>1</sup>.

5. 6. Now then, that unbelievers should have these feelings, is no marvel; but when they who have partaken of so great mysteries, and learned such high rules of self-denial concerning things to come, delight to dwell in things present, what indulgence do they deserve?

[16.] Whence then arises their loving to dwell in present things? From giving their mind to luxury, and fattening their flesh, and making their soul delicate, and rendering their burden heavy, and their darkness great, and their veil thick. For in all luxury, the better part is enslaved, but the worse prevails; and the former is blinded on every side, and dragged on in its maimed condition; while the other draws and leads men

about every where, though it ought to be in the rank of things <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
that are led. <sup>15. 27.</sup>

Since great indeed is the bond between the soul and the body; the Maker having contrived this, lest any should induce us to abhor it as alien. For God indeed bade us love our enemies; (9.) but the devil hath so far prevailed, as to induce some<sup>d</sup> even to hate their own body. Since, when a man saith that it is of the devil, he proves nothing else than this; which is the extreme of dotage. For if it be of the devil, what is this so perfect harmony, such as to render it meet in every way for the energies of the self-controlling soul? "Nay," saith one, "if it be meet, how doth the body blind it?" It is not the body which blinds the soul; far from it, O man; but the luxury. But whence do we desire the luxury? Not from our having a body, by no means; but from an evil choice. For the body requires feeding, not high feeding<sup>1</sup>, the body needs nourishing,<sup>1</sup> ῥεοφήσις, not breaking up and falling apart. You see that not to the φύσις soul only, but to the very body also, which receives the nourishment, the luxury is hostile. For it becomes weaker instead of strong, and softer instead of firm, and sickly instead of healthful, and heavier instead of light, and slighter instead of compact, and illfavoured instead of handsome, and unsavoury instead of fragrant, and impure instead of clean, and full of pain instead of being at ease, and useless instead of useful, and old instead of young, and decaying instead of strong, and slow and dull instead of quick, and maimed instead of whole. Whereas if it were of the devil, it ought not to receive injury from the things of the devil, I mean, from sin.

[17.] But neither is the body, nor meats, of the devil, but luxury alone. For by means of it that malignant fiend brings to pass his innumerable evils. Thus did he make victims of<sup>2</sup> a<sup>3</sup> ἤγρηστοι, whole people. *For the beloved waxed fat*, saith one, *and καὶ θάνατοι. grew thick, and was enlarged, and kicked*<sup>4</sup>. And thence<sup>5</sup> Deut. 32. 15. was the beginning of those thunderbolts also on Sodom. And to declare this, Ezekiel said, *But this was the iniquity<sup>6</sup> εἰδονίας, of Sodom, in pride, and fulness of bread, and refinements<sup>7</sup> they<sup>8</sup> LXX. Ezek. waxed wanton<sup>8</sup>.* Therefore also Paul said, <sup>9</sup>*She that liveth<sup>10</sup> 16. 4. in pleasure<sup>11</sup>, is dead while she liveth.* How should this be? <sup>11</sup>*1 Tim. 5. 6.*

<sup>a</sup> The Manichæans, and Gnostic sects.

<sup>7</sup> σωτατα-  
<sup>8</sup> λῶσι.

**HOMIL.** Because as a sepulchre she bears about her body, bound close  
xxxix. to innumerable evils\*. And if the body so perish, how will the soul be affected; what disorder, what waves, what a tempest will she be filled with? Hereby, you see, she becomes unfitted for every duty, and will have no power easily to speak, nor hear, nor take counsel, nor do any thing that is needful. But as a pilot, when the storm hath got the better of his skill, is plunged into the deep, vessel and sailors and all: so also the soul together with the body is drowned in the grievous abyss of insensibility.

For, in fact, God bath set the stomach in our bodies as a kind of mill, giving it a proportionate power, and appointing a set measure, which it ought to grind every day. If therefore one cast in more, remaining unground it doth injury to the whole body. Hence diseases, and weaknesses, and deformities: since in truth luxury makes the beautiful woman not only sickly, but also foul to look upon. For when she is continually breathing out foul exhalations, and out of her mouth come fumes of stale wine, and her countenance is more florid than it ought to be, and she tramples on the order that beseems a woman, and loses all her seemliness, and her body becomes flabby, her eyelids bloodshot and distended, and her bulk unduly great, and her flesh an useless load; consider what a disgust it all produces.

Moreover, I have heard physicians say, that many have been hindered from reaching their proper height by nothing so much as luxurious living. For the breath being obstructed by the multitude of things which are cast in, and being occupied in the digestion of such things, that which ought to serve for growth, is spent on this digestion of superfluities. Why need one speak of gout, rheum dispersed every where, the other diseases hence arising, the whole abomination? For nothing is so disgusting, as a woman pampering herself with much food. Therefore among the poorer women one may see more of beauty: the superfluities being consumed, and not cleaving to them, like some superfluous clay, of no use and benefit. For their daily exercise, and labours, and

\* “ It is thy own soul, wretched woman, that thou hast lost; the spiritual life gone, thou for a while leadest on a life of thine own, and movest about, wearing thy death upon thee.” S. Cypr. *of the Lapsed*, c. 19.

hardships, and their frugal table, and spare diet, minister <sup>1 Cor.</sup> unto them much soundness of body, and thence also much <sup>15. 27.</sup> bloom.

[18.] But if thou talkest of the pleasure of luxury, thou wilt find it to go no farther than the throat: since as soon as it hath passed the tongue, it is flown away, leaving behind in the body much that is disgusting. For do not I pray look on the voluptuaries at table only, but when you see them rise up, then follow them, and you will see bodies rather of wild beasts and irrational creatures, than of human beings. You will see them with headache, distended, bound up, needing a bed, and a couch, and plenty of rest, and like men who are tossed in a great tempest, and require others to save them, and long for that condition in which they were before they were swelled even to bursting<sup>1</sup>: they carrying their bellies about with a burden like that of women with child, <sup>τερπη-</sup> <sup>διαφέ-</sup> <sup>γνασ.</sup> and can scarce step forward, and scarce see, and scarce speak, and scarce do any thing. But if it should chance that they sleep a little, they see again strange dreams, and full of all manner of fancies.

What should one say of that other madness of theirs? the madness of lust, I mean, for this also hath its fountains from hence. Yea, as horses wild after the female, so they, goaded on by the sting of their drunkenness, leap upon all, more irrational than they, and more frantic in their boundings; and committing many more unseemlinesses, which but to name is unlawful. For they know not in fact any longer what they suffer, nor what they do.

But not so he that keeps from luxury: rather he sits in harbour, beholding other men's shipwrecks, and enjoys a pleasure pure and lasting, following after that life which becomes him that is free. Knowing therefore these things, let us flee from the evil banquets of luxury, and cleave to a spare table; that being of a good habit both of soul and body, we may both practise all virtue, and attain the good things to come, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XL.

---

1 COR. xv. 29.

*Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead? if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for the dead?*

HE takes in hand again another topic, establishing what he said at one time from what God doeth<sup>1</sup>, and at another from the very things which they practise<sup>2</sup>. And this also is no small plea for the defence of any cause, when a man brings forward the gainsayers themselves as witnessing by their own actions what he affirms. What then is that which he means? Or will ye that I should first mention, how they who are infected with the Marcionite heresy pervert this expression? And I know indeed that I shall excite much laughter; nevertheless, even on this account most of all I will mention it, that you may the more completely avoid this disease: viz. when any Catechumen departs among them, having concealed the living man under the couch of the dead, they approach the corpse, and talk with him, and ask him if he wishes to receive baptism; then, when he makes no answer, he that is concealed underneath saith in his stead, that of course he should wish to be baptized; and so they baptize him instead of the departed, like men jesting upon the stage\*. So great power hath the devil over the souls of careless sinners. Then being called to account, they allege this expression, saying, that even the apostle hath said, *They who are baptized for the dead*. Seest thou their extreme ridiculousness? Is it meet then to answer

\* Epiphanius relates the same thing of the followers of Cerinthus, another section of the Gnostics, and says it was continued in his time by a kind of tradition in Asia Minor and in Galatia. Hær. 28. §. 6.

these things? I trow not; unless it were necessary to dis- <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
course with madmen of what they in their frenzy utter. But <sup>15. 29.</sup>  
that none of the more exceedingly simple folk may be led  
captive, one must needs submit to answer even these men.  
As thus, if this was Paul's meaning, wherefore did God  
threaten him that is not baptized? For it is impossible that  
any should not be baptized henceforth, this being once  
devised: and besides, the fault no longer lies with the dead,  
but with the living. But to whom spake he, *unless ye eat  
My flesh, and drink My blood, ye have no life in you*<sup>1</sup>? To <sup>1 John</sup>  
<sup>6. 53.</sup> the living, or to the dead, tell me? And again, *unless a man  
be born again of water and of the Spirit, he cannot see the  
kingdom of God*<sup>2</sup>? For if this be permitted, and there be no <sup>2 John</sup>  
<sup>3. 5.</sup> need of the mind of the receiver, nor of his assent while  
he lives, what hinders both Greeks and Jews thus to become  
believers, other men after their decease doing these things in  
their stead?

But not to prolong fruitless toil in cutting asunder their  
petty spiders' webs<sup>3</sup>, come let us unfold unto you the force <sup>3 θεοχρι-</sup>  
of this expression. What then is Paul speaking of?  
<sup>δια δια-</sup>  
<sup>κτετον-</sup>

[2.] But first I wish to remind you who are initiated of the  
response, which on<sup>4</sup> that evening they who introduce you to <sup>4 πίστις.</sup>  
the mysteries bid you make; and then I will also explain  
the saying of Paul: so this likewise will be clearer to you;  
we, after all other things ended, adding this, which Paul  
now saith. And I desire indeed expressly to utter it, but  
I dare not, on account of the uninitiated; for these add a  
difficulty to our exposition, compelling us either not to speak  
clearly, or to declare unto them the ineffable mysteries.  
Nevertheless, as I may be able, I will speak as through  
a veil<sup>5</sup>.

As thus: after the enunciation of those mystical and fear-  
ful words, and the awful rules of the doctrines which have  
come down from heaven, this also we add at the end, when  
we are about to baptize, bidding them say; *I believe in the  
resurrection of the dead*, and upon this faith we are baptized.  
I say, after we have confessed this together with the rest,  
then at last are we let down into the fountain of those sacred  
streams. This therefore Paul recalling to their minds, said,

\* Probably Easter Eve. Vid. Bingham's Antiquities, ii. 6. s. 7. S. Cyril, Lect. 19. 1.

**HOMIL.** *if there be no resurrection, why art thou then baptized for the dead?*<sup>b</sup> i. e. the dead bodies. For in fact, with a view to this art thou baptized, affirming a resurrection of thy dead body, that it no longer remains dead. And thou indeed in the words makest mention of a resurrection of the dead; but the priest, as in a kind of image, signifies to thee by very deed, the things which thou hast believed and confessed in the appointed words. When without a sign thou believest, then he gives thee the sign also; when thou hast done thine own part, then also doth God fully assure thee. How, and in what manner? By the water. For the being baptized and immersed, and then emerging, is a symbol of the descent into hell, and the return thence. Wherefore also Paul calls baptism a burial, saying, *Therefore we are buried with him*

<sup>1</sup> Rom. 6. 4. *by baptism into death*<sup>1</sup>. By this he makes that also which

is to come credible, I mean, the resurrection of our bodies. For the blotting out sins is a much greater thing than the raising up of a body. And this Christ declaring, said, *For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Take up thy bed, and walk*<sup>2</sup>?

<sup>2</sup> Mat. 9. 5. “The former is the more difficult,” saith He, “but since ye disbelieve it, as being hidden, and make the easier instead of the more difficult the demonstration of my power, neither will I refuse to afford you this proof. *Then saith He to the paralytic, Arise, take up thy bed, and go into thine house.*”

(2.) “And how is this difficult,” saith one, “when it is possible to kings also, and rulers? For they too forgive adulterers and homicides.” Thou art jesting, O man, who sayest these things. For to forgive sins, with God only is possible. But rulers and kings, whether it is adulterers whom they forgive, or homicides, release them indeed from the present punishment; but their sin they do not purge out. Though they should advance to offices them that have been forgiven, though they should invest them with the purple itself, though they should set the diadem upon their heads, yet so they would only make them kings, but could not free them from their sin. It being God alone who doeth this; which accord-

<sup>b</sup> See before, Hom. 23. §. 3. p. 312. resurrection of thine own body. cf. Rom.

<sup>c</sup> i. e. the very act of immersion and vi.3—5. as quoted below, and the parallel emersion affirms the spiritual death and places.

ingly in the Laver of Regeneration He will bring to pass. 1 COR. 15. 31. For His grace touches the very soul, and thence plucks up the sin by the root. Here is the reason why he that hath been forgiven by the king may be seen with his soul yet impure, but of him that is baptized no longer so, rather the very sun-beams are less pure than it, and it is such as it was originally formed, nay rather much better than that. For it is blessed with a Spirit, on every side enkindling it, and making its holiness intense. And as when thou art recasting iron or gold, thou makest it pure and new once more, just so the Holy Ghost also, recasting the soul in baptism as in a furnace, and consuming its sins, causes it to glisten with more purity than all purest gold.

Further, the credibility of the resurrection of our bodies he signifies to thee again from what follows: viz. that since sin brought in death, now that the root is dried up, one must not after that doubt of the destruction of the fruit. Therefore having first mentioned *the forgiveness of sins*, thou dost next confess also *the resurrection of the dead*; the one guides thee, as by hand, on to the other.

Yet again, because the term Resurrection is not sufficient to indicate the whole: for many, after rising, have again departed, as those in the Old Testament, as Lazarus, as they at the time of the crucifixion: one is bid to say, *and the life everlasting*, that none may any longer have a notion of death, after that resurrection.

These words therefore Paul recalling to their minds, saith, *What shall they do which are baptized for the dead?* “For if there be no resurrection,” saith he, “these words are but scenery. If there be no resurrection, how persuade we them to believe things which we do not bestow?” Just as if a person bidding another to sign and deliver a document, to the effect that he had received so much, should never give the sum named therein, yet after the subscription, should demand of him the specified monies. What then will remain for the subscriber to do, now that he hath made himself responsible, without having received what he admitted he had received? This then he here saith of those who are baptized also. *What shall they do which are bap-*

574 *The Resurrection proved by the Apostles' Sufferings:*

HOMIL. tized, saith he, “having subscribed to the resurrection of dead bodies, and not receiving it, but suffering fraud? And what need was there at all of this confession, if the fact did not follow?”

[3.] Ver. 30. *And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?*

Ver. 31. *I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.*

See again whence he endeavours to establish the doctrine, from his own suffrage: or rather not from his only, but from that also of the other apostles. And this too is no small thing; that the teachers, whom you produce were full of vehement conviction, and signified the same not by words only, but also by very deeds. Therefore, you see, he doth not say simply, “we are persuaded,” for this alone was not sufficient to persuade them, but he also furnishes the proof by facts: as if he should say, “in words to confess these things, haply seems to you no marvel; but if we should also produce unto you the voice which deeds send forth, what can ye have to say against that? Hear ye then, how by our perils also day by day we confess these things?” And he said not, “I,” but *we*, taking along with him all the apostles together, and thereby at once speaking modestly, and adding credibility to his discourse.

For what can ye have to say? that we are deceiving you, when we preach these things, and that our doctrines come of vain-glory? Nay, our perils suffer you not to pass such a sentence. For who would choose to be in continual jeopardy to no purpose and with no effect? Wherefore also he said, *And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?* For if one should even choose it through vain-glory, such his choice will be but for once and again, not all his life long, like ours. For we have assigned our whole life to this purpose.

*I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily:* by rejoicing here, meaning their advancement. Thus, since he had intimated that his perils were many, lest he might seem to say this by way of lamentation, “far from grieving,” saith he, “I even rejoice in suffering this for your sake.” And doubly, he saith, he takes

delight in it, both as being in jeopardy for their sakes, and as <sup>1 Cor.</sup> beholding their proficiency. Then doing what is usual with 15. 31. him, because he had uttered great things, he refers both to Christ.

But how doth he *die daily?* by his readiness, and preparation for that event. And wherefore saith he these words? Again, by these also, to establish the doctrine of the resurrection. “For who would choose,” saith he, “to undergo so many deaths, if there be no resurrection, nor life after this? Yea, if they who believe in the resurrection would scarcely put themselves in jeopardy for it except they were very noble of heart: much more would not the unbeliever (so he speaks) choose to undergo so many deaths, and so terrible.” Thus, see by degrees how very high he mounts up. He had said, *we stand in jeopardy*, he added, *every hour*, then, *daily*, then, I not only *stand in jeopardy*, saith he, but I even *die*: he concludes accordingly by pointing out also what kind of deaths they were; thus saying,

Ver. 32. *If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me?*

What is, *if after the manner of men?* As far as pertains to (3.) men, I fought with beasts: for what if God snatched me out of those dangers? So that I am he who ought most to be in care about these things; I, who endure so great dangers, and have not yet received any return. For if no time of recompense is at hand, but our reward is shut up in this present world, ours is the greater loss. For ye have believed without jeopardy, but we are slaughtered every day.”

But all these things he said, not because he had no advantage even in the very suffering, but on account of the weakness of the many, and to establish them in the doctrine of the resurrection: not because he himself was running for hire; for it was a sufficient recompense to him, to do that which was pleasing to God. So that when he adds, *If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable*, it is there again for their sakes, that he might by the fear of this misery overthrow their unbelief of the resurrection. And in condescension to their weakness, he thus speaks. Since in truth, the great reward is to please Christ

**HOMIL.** at all times: and without the recompense, it is a very great  
**XL.** return to be in jeopardy for His sake.

[4.] *If the dead rise not, let us eat and drink; for to-morrow we die.*

This word, be sure, is spoken in mockery: wherefore neither did he bring it forward of himself, but summoned that prophet, of loftiest sound, Isaiah, who, discoursing of certain insensible and reprobate persons, made use of these words, *Who slay oxen and kill sheep, to eat flesh and drink wine: who say, let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die.* These things are revealed to the ears of the Lord of Hosts,

<sup>1</sup> Is. 22. and this iniquity shall not be forgiven you, till ye die<sup>1</sup>. Now  
<sup>13, 14.</sup> if then they were deprived of pardon, who spake thus, much  
LXX. more in the time of Grace.

Then, that he might not make his discourse too rough, he dwells, not long upon his *reductio ad absurdum*, but again turns his discourse to exhortation, saying,

Ver. 33. *Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.*

And this he said, both to rebuke them, as without understanding, (for here he by a charitable expression, calls *good* that which is easily deceived,) and also, as far as he could, to make some allowance for them in respect of what he had mentioned, and to remove from them and transfer to others the greater part of his charges, and so by this way also to allure them to repentance. Which he doth likewise in the Epistle to the Galatians, saying, *But he that troubleth you shall bear*

<sup>2</sup> Gal. 5. *his judgment, whosoever he be<sup>2</sup>.*

<sup>10.</sup> <sup>3</sup> *Ver. 34. Awake up righteously<sup>3</sup>, and sin not.*

As if he were speaking to drunkards and madmen. For suddenly to cast every thing out of their hands, was the part of drunkards and madmen, in not seeing any longer what they saw, nor believing what they had before confessed. But what is, *righteously?* with a view to what is profitable and useful. For it is possible to awake up unrighteously, when a man is thoroughly roused up to the injury of his own soul. And well did he add, *sin not*, implying that hence were the seeds of their unbelief. And in many places he covertly signifies this, that a corrupt life is the parent of evil doctrines; as

when he saith, *The love of money is the root of all evil, which 1 COR.  
while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith<sup>1.</sup>* <sup>15. 34.  
1 Tim. 6. 10.</sup> Yea, and many of those who are conscious of wickedness, would fain not pay its penalty, are by this fear damaged also in their faith of the resurrection: even as they who do very virtuously desire even daily to behold it.

*For some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.*

See how again he transfers his accusations to others. For he said not, *Ye have not the knowledge*, but, *some have not the knowledge*. Because disbelieving the resurrection is the temper of one not fully aware that the irresistible power of God is sufficient for this also. For if, out of the things which are not, He made the things that are, much more will He be able to raise again those which have been dissolved.

And because he had touched them to the quick, and exceedingly mocked them, accusing them of gluttony, of folly, of madness; mitigating those expressions, he saith, *I speak to your shame*, that is, to set upright, to bring back, to make you better, by this shame of yours. For he feared, lest, if he cut too deep, he should cause them to start away.

[5.] But let us not consider these things as spoken to them only, but as addressed now also to all who labour under the same disease, and live a corrupt life. Since in truth not they who hold corrupt doctrines only, but they too who are holden of grievous sins, are both drunken and frantic. Wherefore also to them may it be justly said, *Awake*, and especially to those who are weighed down by the lethargy of avarice; who rob wickedly. For there is a robbery which is good, the robbery of Heaven, which injures not. And although in respect of money it is impossible for one to become rich, unless another first become poor: yet in spiritual things this is not so, but wholly the reverse: it is impossible that any should become rich without making another's store plentiful. For if thou help no one, thou wilt not be able to grow wealthy. Thus, whereas in temporal things imparting causes diminution: in spiritual things, on the contrary, imparting works increase, and the not imparting, this produces great poverty, and brings on extreme punishment. And this is signified by him who buried the talent. Yea, and he too who hath a word of

(4.)

**HOMIL.** wisdom, by imparting to another, increases his own abundance, <sup>XL.</sup> by making many wise: but he that buries it at home, deprives himself of his abundance, by neglecting to win the profit of the many. Again, he that had other gifts, by healing many augmented his own gift: and was neither himself emptied by the imparting, and filled many others with his own spiritual gift. And in all spiritual things this rule abides unshaken. Thus also in the Kingdom, he that makes many partakers with himself of the Kingdom, will hereby the more completely have the fruits of it in return: but he that studies not to have any partaker, will himself be cast out of those many blessings. For if the wisdom of this world of sense is not spent, though ten thousand are forcibly seizing it; nor doth the artificer, by making many artificers, lose his own skill; much less doth he who seizes the Kingdom make it less, but then will our riches be increased when we call many to us for that purpose.

Let us seize then the things which cannot be spent, but increase whilst we seize them: let us seize the things which admit of none to defraud us of them by false accusation, none to envy us for them. For so, if there were a place which had a fountain of gold gushing forth with continual flood, and so much the more it flowed on as more was drawn from it; and there were another place which had a treasure buried in the earth; from which wouldest thou desire to be enriched? would it not be from the first? Plainly. But that this may not be a mere fiction of ours in words, consider the saying in reference to the air and the sun. For these are seized hold of by all, and satisfy all. These, however, whether men enjoy, or do not enjoy them, abide the same undiminished: but what I spake of, is a much greater thing; for spiritual wisdom abides not the same distributed or not distributed: but it increases rather in the distribution.

But if any endure not what I have said, but still cleave to the poverty of worldly things, snatching at the things which endure diminution: even in respect of those again, let him call to mind the food of manna<sup>1</sup>, and tremble at the example of that punishment. For what happened in that instance, this same result may one now also see in the case of covetous men. But what then happened? worms were bred from their covet-

<sup>1</sup> Exod.  
16. 20.

ousness. This also now happens in their case. For the <sup>1 Cor.</sup> measure of the food is the same for all; we having but one <sup>15. 34.</sup> stomach to fill; only thou who feedest luxuriously hast more to get rid of. And as in that case they who in their houses gathered more than the lawful quantity, gathered not manna, but more worms and rottenness; just so both in luxury and in covetousness, the gluttonous and drunken gather not more dainties, but more corruption.

[6.] Nevertheless, so much worse than they are the men of our time, in that they underwent this once for all, and received correction; but these every day bringing into their own houses this worm much more grievous than that, neither perceive it, nor are satiated. For that these things do resemble those in respect of our useless labour on them: (for in regard of punishment these are much worse :) here is the proof for thee to consider.

Wherein, I ask, differs the rich man from the poor? Hath he not one body to clothe? one belly to feed? In what then hath he the advantage? In cares, in spending himself, in disobeying God, in corrupting the flesh, in wasting the soul. Yea, these are the things in which he hath the advantage of the poor: since if he had many stomachs to fill, perhaps he might have somewhat to say, as that his need was more, and the necessity of expense greater. But even "now they may," saith one, reply, "that they fill many bellies, those of their domestics, those of their hand-maidens." But this is done, not through need, nor for humanity's sake, but from mere pride: whence one cannot put up with their excuse.

For why hath he many servants? Since as in our apparel we ought to follow our need only, and in our table, so also in our servants. What need is there then? None at all. For, in fact, one master need only employ one servant; or rather two or three masters one servant. But if this be grievous, consider them that have none, and enjoy more prompt attendance. For God hath made men sufficient to minister unto themselves, or rather unto their neighbour also. And if thou believe it not, hear Paul saying, *These hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me*<sup>1</sup>. After <sup>1 Acts 20.</sup> that he, the teacher of the world, and worthy of heaven,<sup>34.</sup> disdained not to serve innumerable others; dost thou think it

**HOMIL.** a disgrace, unless thou carriest about whole herds of slaves,  
XL. not knowing that this in truth is what most of all brings shame upon thee? For to that end did God grant us both hands and feet, that we might not stand in need of servants. Since not at all for need's sake was the class of slaves introduced, else even along with Adam had a slave been formed; but it is the penalty of sin, and the punishment of disobedience. But when Christ came, he put an end also to this.

<sup>1</sup> Gal. 3. *For in Christ Jesus there is neither bond nor free<sup>1</sup>.* So that 28. it is not necessary to have a slave: or if it be at all necessary, let it be about one only, or at the most two. What mean the swarms of servants? For as the sellers of sheep, and the slave-dealers, so do our rich men take their round, in the baths and in the forum.

However, I will not be too exact. We will allow you to keep a second servant. But if thou collect many, thou dost it not for humanity's sake, but in self-indulgence. Since if it be in care of them, I bid thee occupy none of them in ministering to thyself, but when thou hast purchased them, and hast taught them trades whereby to support themselves, let them go free. But when thou scourgest, when thou puttest them in chains, it is no more a work of humanity.

And I know that I am giving disgust to my hearers. But what must I do? For this I am set, and I shall not cease to say these things, whether any thing come of them, or not. For what means thy clearing the way before thee in the market-place? Art thou walking then among wild beasts, that thou drivest away them that meet thee? Be not afraid; none of these bite who approach thee, and walk near thee. But dost thou consider it an insult to walk along side of other men? What madness is this, what prodigious folly, when a horse is following close after thee, to think not of his bringing on thee any insult; but if it be a man, unless he be driven an hundred miles off, to reckon that he disgraces thee. And why hast thou also servants to carry fasces, employing freemen as slaves, or rather thyself living more dishonourably than any slave? For, in truth, meaner than any servant is he who bears about with him so much pride.

Therefore they shall not so much as have a sight of the real liberty, who have enslaved themselves to this grievous

passion. Nay, if thou must drive and clear away, let it not <sup>1 Cor.</sup> be them that come nigh thee, but thine own pride which <sup>15. 34.</sup> thou drivest away; not by thy servant, but by thyself: not with this scourge, but with that which is spiritual. Since now thy servant drives away them that walk by thy side, but thou art thyself driven from thine high place more disgracefully, by thine own self-will, than any servant can drive thy neighbour. But if, descending from thy horse, thou wilt drive away pride by humility, thou shalt sit higher, and place thyself in greater honour, needing no servant to do this. I mean, that when thou art become modest, and walkest on the ground, thou wilt be seated on the car of humility, which bears thee up to the very heavens, that car which hath winged steeds<sup>d</sup>: but if falling from it, thou pass into that of arrogance, thou wilt be in no better state than the reptiles which trail along the ground, nay even much more wretched and pitiable than they; since them the imperfection of their bodies compels thus to trail along, but thee the disease of thine own arrogance. *For so every one that exalteth himself, saith He, shall be abased*<sup>1</sup>. That we then may not be abased, but exalted, let us approach towards that exaltation. For thus also shall we *find rest for our souls*, according to the divine oracle, and shall obtain the true and most exalted honour; the which may we all obtain, through the grace and mercy, &c. &c.

<sup>d</sup> Alluding perhaps to the story of Bellerophon,

## HOMILY XLI.

---

1 COR. xv. 35, 36.

*But some man will say, How are the dead raised up ? and with what body do they come ? Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die.*

GENTLE and lowly as the apostle is, to a great degree, every where, he here adopts a style which may be called rather pungent, because of the impiety of the gainsayers. He is not however content with this, but he also employs reasons and examples, subduing thereby even the very contentious. And above he saith, *Since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead;* but here he solves an objection brought in by the Gentiles. And see how again he abates the vehemence of his censure; in that he said not, “but perhaps ye will say,” but he set down the objector indefinitely, in order that, although employing his impetuous style with all freedom, he might not too severely wound his hearers. And he states two difficulties, one touching the manner of the resurrection, the other, the kind of bodies. For of both, they on their part made a question, saying, “*How* is that which hath been dissolved *raised up?*” and, “*with what body do they come?*” But what means, *with what body?* It is as if they had said, “*with this which hath been wasted, which hath perished, or with some other?*”

Then, to point out that the objects of their enquiry are not questionable, but admitted points, he at once meets them more sharply, saying, *Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die.* Which kind of thing we also are wont to do in the case of those who gainsay things acknowledged.

[2.] And wherefore did he not at once fly to the power

of God? Because he is discoursing with unbelievers. For 1 Cor. when his discourse is addressed to believers, he hath not 15. 36. much need of reasons. Wherefore having said elsewhere, *He shall change your vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body*<sup>1</sup>, and having indicated somewhat more<sup>1</sup> Phil. 3. than the resurrection, he stated no analogies, but instead of<sup>21</sup>. any demonstration, he brought forward the power of God, going on to say, *according to the mighty working whereby He is able to subdue all things to Himself.* But here he also urges reasons. That is, having established it from the Scriptures, he adds also, in what comes after, these things over and above, with an eye to them who do not obey the Scriptures; and he saith, *O fool, that which THOU sowest:* i. e. “from thyself thou hast the proof of these things, by what thou doest every day, and doubtless thou yet? Therefore do I call thee a fool, because of the things daily done by thine own self thou art ignorant, and being thyself an artificer of a resurrection, thou doubtless concerning God.” Wherefore very emphatically he said, *what THOU sowest*<sup>2</sup>, thou who art mortal<sup>2</sup> ~~et 3~~ <sup>et 3</sup> and perishing<sup>4</sup>.

And see how he orders his expressions in a way appropriate to the purpose he had in view: thus, *it is not quickened*, saith he, *except it die.* Leaving, you see, the expressions appropriate to seeds, as that “it buds,” and “grows,” and “is dissolved,” he adopts those which correspond to our flesh, viz. *it is quickened*, and, *except it die;* which do not properly belong to seeds, but to bodies.

And he said not, “after it is dead it lives,” but, which is a greater thing, “therefore it lives, because it dies.” Seest thou, what I am always observing, that he continually gives their argument the contrary turn? Thus, what they made a sure sign of our not rising again, the same he makes a demonstration of our rising. For they said, “the body rises not again, because it is dead.” What then doth he, retorting their argument, say?

<sup>1</sup> “Our apostle’s inference is as firm and strong, as it is emphatical; *Stulte!* *Tu quod seminas &c.* *O fool!* *That which THOU sowest &c.* The force or emphasis may be gathered thus. If God doth give a body unto that seed which thou sowest for thine own use and benefit,

much more will the same God give a body unto the seed which He Himself doth sow, seeing the end why He sows it, is not thy temporal benefit or commodity, but His own immortal glory.” Dr. Jackson’s Works, vol. iii. 438. See also vol. iii. 433—443.

HOMIL. XLI. "Nay, but unless it were dead, it could not rise again: and therefore it rises again, because it is dead." For as Christ more clearly signifies this very thing, in the words, *Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit*<sup>1</sup>: thence also Paul, drawing this example, said not, "it doth not live," but, *is not quickened*; again assuming the power of God, and implying, that not the nature of the ground, but God himself, brings it all to pass.

And what can be the reason that he did not bring that forward, which was more akin to the subject: I mean, the seed of mankind? (For our generation too begins from a sort of decay, even as that of the corn.) Because it was not of equal force, but the latter was a more complete instance: for he wants a case of something that perished entirely, whereas this was but a part; wherefore he rather alleges the other. Besides, that proceeds from a living body, and falls into a living womb; but here it is no flesh, but the earth, into which the seed is cast, and into the same it is dissolved, like the body which is dead. You see that on this account too the example was more appropriate.

[3.] Ver. 37. *And he who soweth, soweth not that body that shall be<sup>b</sup>.*

For the things before spoken meet the question, *how they are raised*; but this, the doubt, *with what body they come*. But what is, *thou sowest not that body which shall be?* Not an entire ear of corn, nor new grain. For here his discourse no longer regards the resurrection, but the manner of the resurrection, what is the kind of body which shall rise again; as whether it be of the same kind, or more excellent, and more glorious. And he takes both from the same analogy, intimating that it will be much more excellent.

(2.) But the heretics, considering none of these things, dart in upon us and say, "one body falls, and another body rises again. How then is there a resurrection? For the resurrection is of that which was fallen. But where is that wonderful and surprising trophy over death, if one body fall and another rise again? For he will no longer appear to

<sup>b</sup> This seems like a different reading: quotes it therefore here in substance, not but it appears afterwards that S. Chrysostom read the verse as it stands. He

have given back that which he took captive. And how can 1 Cor.  
the alleged analogy suit the things before mentioned?" Why, <sup>15. 37.</sup>  
it is not one substance that is sown, and another that is raised,  
but the same substance improved. Else neither will Christ  
have resumed the same body, when He became the first-fruits  
of them that rise again: but according to you He threw aside  
the former body, although it had not sinned, and took another.  
Whence then is that other? For this body was from the  
Virgin, but that, whence was it? Seest thou to what absurdity  
the argument hath come round? For wherefore shews He  
the very prints of the nails? Was it not with purpose of  
proving this, that it is that same body which was crucified,  
and the same again that rose from the dead? And what  
means also His type of Jonah? For surely it was not one  
Jonah that was swallowed up, and another that was cast out  
upon dry land. And why did He also say, *Destroy this  
temple, and in three days I will raise it up?* For that which  
was destroyed, the same, clearly, He raised again. Wherefore  
also the Evangelist added, that *He spake of the temple of His  
body*<sup>1</sup>.

What is that then which he saith, *Thou sowest not that  
body that shall be?*<sup>2</sup> i. e. not the ear of corn: for it is the  
same, and not the same; the same, because the substance is  
the same; but not the same, because this is more excellent,  
the substance remaining the same, but its beauty becoming  
greater, and the same body rising up new. Since if this  
were not so, there were no need of a resurrection, I mean  
if it were not to rise again improved. For why did He at  
all pull down His house, except He were about to build  
it more glorious?

This now, you see, he said to them who think that it is  
utter corruption<sup>2</sup>. Next, that none again might suspect<sup>3</sup>, from this place that another body is spoken of, he qualifies<sup>4</sup> the dark saying, and himself interprets what he had spoken, The not allowing the hearer to turn his thoughts from hence in any other direction. What need is there then of our reasonings? Hear himself speaking, and explaining the phrase, *Thou sowest not that body that shall be.* For he straightway adds, *but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain;* i. e. it is not the body that shall be; not so

<sup>1</sup> John  
<sup>2. 19,</sup>  
<sup>21.</sup>

**HOMIL.** clothed, for instance; not having a stalk and beard, but **bare**  
**XLI.** *grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.*

Ver. 38. *But God giveth it a body, as it hath pleased him.*

“ Yes,” saith one, “ but in that case it is the work of nature.” Of what nature, tell me? For in that case likewise God surely doeth the whole; not nature, nor the earth, nor the rain. Wherefore also he making these things manifest, leaves out both earth and rain, atmosphere, sun, and hands of husbandmen, and subjoins, *God giveth it a body as it hath pleased Him.* Do not thou therefore curiously inquire, nor busy thyself with the how, and in what manner, when thou hearest of the power and will of God.

*And to every seed his own body.* Where then is the alien matter, which they speak of? For He giveth to each *his own.* So that when he saith, *Thou sowest not that which shall be,* he saith not this, that one substance is raised up instead of another, but that it is improved, that it is more glorious. For *to each of the seeds,* saith he, *his own body.*

[4.] From hence, in what follows, he introduces also the difference of the resurrection which shall then be. For do not suppose, because grain is sown, and all come up ears of corn, that therefore there is also in the resurrection an equality of honour. For in the first place, neither in seeds is there only one rank, but some are more valuable, and some inferior. Wherefore also he added, *to every seed his own body.*

However, he is not content with this, but seeks another difference greater and more manifest. For that thou mayest not, when hearing, as I said, that all rise again, suppose that all enjoy the same reward; he laid before even in the preceding verses the seeds of this thought, saying, *But every man in his own order.* But he brings it out here also more clearly, saying,

Ver. 39. *All flesh is not the same flesh.* For why speak I, saith he, in respect of seeds? In respect of bodies let us agitate this point, concerning which we are discoursing now. Wherefore also he addeth, and saith,

*But there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of birds, and another of fishes.*

Ver. 40. *There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terres-*

*trial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.* 1 Cor.  
15. 41.

Ver. 41. *There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.*

And what means he by these expressions? Wherefore (3.) from the resurrection of the body did he throw himself into the discourse of the stars and the sun? He did not throw himself out, neither did he break off from his purpose; far from it: but he still keeps to it. For whereas he had established the doctrine concerning the resurrection, he intimates in what follows, that great will be then the difference of glory, though there be but one resurrection. And for the present he divides the whole into two: into *bodies celestial*, and *bodies terrestrial*. For that the bodies are raised again, he signified by the corn: but that they are not all in the same glory, he signifies by this. For as the disbelief of the resurrection makes men supine, so again it makes them indolent to think that all are vouchsafed the same reward. Wherefore he corrects both. And the one in the preceding verses he had completed; but this he begins now. And having made two ranks, of the righteous, and of sinners, these same two he subdivides again into many parts, signifying that neither righteous nor sinners shall obtain the same; neither righteous men, all of them, alike with other righteous, nor sinners with other sinners.

Now he makes, you see, first, one separation between righteous and sinners, where he says, *bodies celestial, and bodies terrestrial*: by the *terrestrial* intimating the latter, and by the *celestial*, the former. Then farther he introduces a difference of sinners with sinners, saying, *All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kind of flesh of fishes, another of birds, and another of beasts.* And yet all are bodies; but some are in more, and some in lesser vileness. And that in their manner of living too, and in their very apparel.

And having said this, he ascends again to the heaven, saying, *There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon.* For as in the earthly bodies there is a difference, so also in the heavenly; and that difference no ordinary one, but reaching even to the uttermost: there being not only a

**HOMIL.** difference between sun and moon, and between moon and **XLI.** stars, but also between stars and stars. For what though they be all in the heaven? yet some have a larger, others a less share of glory. Observe now: what do we learn from hence? That although they be all in God's kingdom, all shall not enjoy the same reward; and though all sinners be in hell, all shall not endure the same punishment. Wherefore he added,

Ver. 42. *So also is the resurrection of the dead.*

So, in a manner, with considerable difference. Then leaving this doctrine as sufficiently proved, he again comes to the proof itself of the resurrection, and the manner of it, saying,

[5.] *It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.* And observe his consideration. As in the case of seeds, he used the term proper to bodies, saying, *it is not quickened, except it die:* so in the case of bodies, the expression belonging to seeds, saying, *it is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.*<sup>1</sup> He said not, "is produced<sup>1</sup>," that thou mightest not think it a work of the earth, but *is raised.* And by sowing here, he means not our generation in the womb, but the burial in the earth of our dead bodies, their dissolution, their ashes. Wherefore having said, *it is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption,* he adds,

Ver. 43. *It is sown in dishonour.* For what is more unsightly than a corpse in dissolution? *It is raised in glory.*

*It is sown in weakness.* For before thirty days the whole is gone, and the flesh cannot keep itself together, nor hold out for one day. *It is raised in power.* For there shall nothing prevail against it for all the future.

Here is why he stood in need of those former analogies, lest many on hearing of these things, that they are *raised in incorruption, and in glory, and in power,* might suppose that there is no difference among those who rise again. For all indeed rise again, both in power, and in incorruption, and in this glory of their incorruption; yet are not all in the same state of honour and safety.

Ver. 44. *It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body.* *There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.*

What sayest thou? Is not *this* body too spiritual? It is indeed spiritual, but that will be much more so. For now oftentimes both the abundant grace of the Holy Ghost flies away, on men's committing great sins;—and again, the Spirit continuing present, the animal<sup>c</sup> life fleets away:—from our flesh: and the result in such case is a void, without the Spirit<sup>d</sup>. But in that day not so: rather He abides continually in the flesh of the righteous, and the victory shall be His, the natural soul also being present<sup>e</sup>.

For either it was some such thing which he intimated, by saying, *a spiritual body*, or that it shall be lighter and more subtle, and such as even to be wafted upon air; or rather he meant both these. And if thou disbelieve the doctrine, behold the heavenly bodies which are so glorious and (for this time) so durable, and abide in undecaying tranquillity; and believe thou from hence, that God can also make these corruptible bodies, incorruptible, and much more excellent than those which are visible.

[6.] Ver. 45. *And so it is written<sup>1</sup>, the first man Adam was<sup>2</sup> Gen. 2. made a living soul: the last Adam was made a quickening<sup>7</sup>. Spirit.*

And yet the one indeed is written, but the other not written. How then said he, *it is written?* He modified the expression according to the issue of events: as he is wont continually to do: and indeed as it is the way of every prophet. For so Jerusalem, the prophet said, should be *called the city of righteousness*<sup>2</sup>; yet it was not so called. What then? Did <sup>2</sup>Is.1.26. the prophet speak false? By no means. For he is speaking of the issue of events. And that Christ too should be called Emmanuel<sup>3</sup>; yet was he not so called. But the facts utter <sup>3</sup>Is.7.14. this voice; so also here, *the last Adam was made a quickening Spirit.*

And these things he said, that thou mayest learn, that the

<sup>c</sup> τῆς ψυχῆς ἡ ζωὴ: the life of the animal soul;" alluding to the threefold being of the perfect man, in spirit, and soul, and body: cf. 1 Thess. 5. 23.

<sup>d</sup> τούτου χαρά. i. e. the remains, when deprived of the natural life, are an empty vessel without the Holy Ghost, in that Its quickening Power is not put forth in them for the time.

<sup>e</sup> i. e. It is true the body may be

called spiritual, because of the Spirit's indwelling: but it is not wholly and entirely so. For sometimes the Spirit leaves men when they sin, and even when the Spirit does not leave them, vitality leaves the body, which then becomes untenanted; whereas at the resurrection the body being quickened, the Spirit remains in them for ever.

**HOMIL.** signs and pledges both of the present life and of that which **XLI.** is to come have already come upon us; to wit, of the present life, Adam, and of the life to come, Christ. For since he sets down the better things as matters of hope, he signifies that their beginning hath already come to pass, and their root and their fountain been brought to light. But if the root and the fountain be evident to all, there is no need to doubt of the fruits. Wherefore he saith, *The last Adam was made a quickening Spirit.* And elsewhere too, He shall quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in

<sup>1</sup> Rom. 8. 11. *you*<sup>1</sup>. It is the Spirit's work then, to quicken.

Further, lest any should say, "why are the worse things the elder? and why hath the one sort, to wit, the natural, come to pass, not merely as far as the first-fruits, but altogether; the other as far as the first-fruits only?"—he signifies that the principles also of each were so ordered<sup>1</sup>.

Ver. 46. *For, that was not first, saith he, which is spiritual, but that which is natural, and afterward that which is spiritual.*

And he saith not, why, but is content with the ordinance of God, having the evidence from the facts, testifying to that most excellent economy of God, and implying that our state is always going forward to the better; at the same time by this also adding credibility to his argument. For if the lesser have come to pass, much more ought we to expect the better.

[7.] Since then we are to enjoy so great blessings, let us take our station in this array, and bewail not the departed, but rather those that have ended their life ill. For so the husbandman, when he sees the grain dissolving, doth not mourn; rather, as long as he beholds it continuing solid in the ground, he is in fear and trembling, but when he sees it dissolved, rejoices. For the beginning of the future crop is its dissolving. So let us also then rejoice, when the corruptible house falls, when the man is sown. And marvel not, if

<sup>1</sup> i. e. Why does the worst principle come first? Why is the natural principle wholly developed, not only in Adam, the first-fruits, but in us and all mankind? And why is the spiritual principle, which is to produce the resurrection, not yet developed in us, but only in Christ our first-fruits? The answer is, So is the will of God, by whose ordinance it is, that the natural should come first, the spiritual afterwards.

he called the burial “a sowing:” for, in truth, this is the better sowing: inasmuch as that sowing is succeeded by deaths, and labours, and dangers, and cares; but this, if we live well, by crowns and rewards; and that, by corruption and death; but this by incorruption, and immortality, and those infinite blessings. To that kind of sowing, there went embraces, and pleasures, and sleep: but to this, only a voice coming down from heaven, and all is at once brought to perfection. And he that rises again is no more led for the future to a life full of toil, but to a place where anguish, and sorrow, and sighing are fled away.

If thou requirest protection, and therefore mournest thy husband, betake thyself to God, the common Protector and Saviour and Benefactor of all, to that irresistible alliance, to that ready aid, to that abiding shelter, which is every where present, and is as a wall unto us on every side.

“But your intercourse was a thing desirable and lovely.” I too know it. But if thou wilt trust sound reason with this grief, and wilt consider with thyself who hath taken him away, and that by nobly bearing it thou offerest thy mind as a sacrifice to our God, even this wave will not be too strong for thee to stem. And that which time brings to pass, the same do thou by thy self-command. But if thou shalt yield to weakness, thine emotion will cease indeed in time, but it will bring thee no reward.

And together with these reasons collect also examples, some in the present life, some in the Holy Scriptures. Consider that Abraham slew his own son, and neither shed a tear, nor uttered a bitter word. “But he,” you say, “was Abraham.” Nay, thou surely hast been called to a nobler field of action<sup>1</sup>. And Job grieved indeed, but so much as was proper for a father, who loved his children, and was very solicitous for the departed; whereas what we now do, is surely the part of haters and enemies. For if, when a man was taken up to court, and crowned, thou wert smiting thyself and lamenting, I should not say that thou wast a friend of him who was crowned, but a great enemy and adversary unto him. “Nay,” say you, “not even as it is do I mourn for him, but for myself.” Well, but this is not the part of an affectionate person, to wish for thine own sake that he were still in the conflict, and subject to the uncertainty of the

**HOMIL.** future, when he might be crowned and come to anchor; or  
**XLI.** that he should be tossed in mid ocean, when he might have been in port.

[8.] "But I know not whither he hath gone," say you. Wherefore knowest thou not, tell me? For according as he lived well or otherwise, it is evident whither he will go. "Nay, on this very account I lament," say you, "because he departed with sin remaining<sup>g</sup>." This is a mere pretext and excuse. For if this were the reason of thy mourning for the departed, thou oughtest to have reformed and corrected him, when he was alive. The fact is, thou dost every where look to what concerns thyself, not him.

But grant that he departed with sin upon him, even on this account one ought to rejoice, that he was stopped short in his sins, and added not to his iniquity; and to help him as far as possible, not by tears, but by prayers, and supplications, and alms, and offerings. For not unmeaningly have these things been devised, nor do we in vain make mention of the departed in the course of the divine mysteries, and approach God in their behalf, beseeching the Lamb, Who is before us, Who taketh away the sin of the world;—not in vain, but that some refreshment may thereby ensue to them. Nor in vain doth he that standeth by the altar cry out, when the tremendous mysteries are being celebrated, "For all that have fallen asleep in Christ, and for those who perform commemorations in their behalf<sup>h</sup>." For if there were no commemorations for them, these things would not have been spoken: since our service is not mere scenery, God forbid! yea, it is by ordinance of the Spirit that these things are done.

(5.) Let us then give them aid, and perform commemoration for them. For if the children of Job were purged by the

<sup>g</sup> Bingham observes, lib. xv. cap. 3. sect. 16. "Another reason for praying for the dead was, they conceived all men to die with some remainders of frailty and corruption, and therefore desired that God would deal with them according to his mercy, and not in strict justice according to their merits." "These prayers," he proceeds to say, see lib. xxiii. cap. 3. sect. 3. and 13. "are not made upon the Romish supposition of the soul's being in purgatory or any place of torment, but on principles that perfectly overthrow it." For

they call those for whom they offer, Saints; including among them the Blessed Virgin, the Apostles and Prophets: and they represent them as having "pleased God," "being at rest," "sleeping in Christ," "departed in His Faith," and other equivalent expressions. Vid. Brett's Liturgies, p. 270—272. Ed. 1838. See also Bp. Bull, vol. ii. 261. Oxford Ed.

<sup>h</sup> These expressions are not *verbatim* either in St. Chrysostom's or in any other of the Liturgies translated by Brett: but in substance they are in all,

sacrifice of their father, why dost thou doubt, that when we <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
too offer for the departed, some consolation arises to them? <sup>15. 46.</sup>  
since God is wont to grant the petitions of those who ask for  
others. And this Paul signified, saying, *that in a manifold*  
*Person<sup>1</sup> your gift towards us, bestowed by many, may be*  
*acknowledged with thanksgiving for your good<sup>1</sup>.* Let us not <sup>12 Cor.</sup>  
then be weary in giving aid to the departed, and of offering <sup>1. 11.</sup>  
prayers for them: for the common Expiation of the world is <sup>compare with the</sup>  
even before us. Therefore with boldness do we then intreat <sup>Hom. xlii. p. 603.</sup>  
for the whole world, and name their names with those of  
martyrs, of confessors, of priests. For in truth one body are  
we all, though some members are more glorious than others;  
and it is possible from every source to gather pardon <sup>2</sup> for <sup>every-</sup>  
them, from our prayers, from our gifts in their behalf, from <sup>yearn.</sup>  
those whose names are named with theirs. Why therefore  
dost thou grieve? Why mourn, when it is in thy power  
to gather so much pardon for the departed?

[9.] Is it then that thou art become desolate, and hast lost a  
protector? Nay, never mention this. For thou hast not surely  
lost thy God. And so, as long as thou hast Him, He will be  
better to thee than husband, and father, and child, and  
kinsman: since even when they were alive, He it was who  
did all things.

These things therefore think upon, and say with David,  
*The Lord is my light and my Saviour<sup>3</sup>, whom shall I fear?* <sup>3 cor. v.</sup>  
Say, *Thou art a Father of the fatherless, and a Judge of* <sup>LXX.</sup> *Ps. 27.*  
*the widows<sup>5</sup>:* and draw down His aid, and thou shalt <sup>1.</sup> <sup>5 Ps. 68.</sup>  
have Him to care for thee now, more than before, by how <sup>5.</sup>  
much thou art in a state of greater difficulty.

Or hast thou lost a child? Thou hast not lost it, say  
not so. This thing is sleep, not death; removal, not  
destruction; a journeying from the worse unto the better<sup>4</sup>.  
Do not then provoke God to anger; but propitiate Him.

<sup>1</sup> οὐλλαγὴ προσωπῶν: “in a great Person,” “the Person of a manifold Being, i. e. of the whole Church.” The common reading is οὐλλαγὴ προσώπων. St. Chrysostom may have thought that the Apostle was alluding to the Liturgical Service as the voice of the whole mystical Body of Christ. See his comment on the place in Hom. 2. on 2 Cor. §. 3, 4. Ed. Bened.

<sup>2</sup> The same idea is thus expressed by Tertullian. “Why mourn, if thy faith be that he hath not perished? Why bear impatiently *his* being withdrawn for a while, of whom thou believest that he will return? It is but a journey, which thou accountest death. It is not meet to mourn for him who is gone before, but simply to miss him and long for him.” *De Patient.* c. 9.

**HOMIL.** For if thou bearest it nobly, there will thence accrue  
XLI. some relief both to the departed and to thyself; but if  
the contrary, thou dost the more kindle God's anger. For  
if when a servant were chastised by his master, thou didst  
stand by and complain, thou wouldest the more exasperate  
the master against thyself. Do not then so; but give thanks,  
that hereby also this cloud of sadness may be scattered from  
thee. Say with that blessed one, *the Lord gave, and the*

<sup>1</sup> Job 1. *Lord hath taken away*<sup>1</sup>. Consider how many more well-  
21. pleasing in His sight have never received children at all,  
nor been called fathers. "Nor would I wish to have been  
so," say you, "for surely it were better not to have had  
experience, than after having tasted the pleasure, to fall  
from it." Nay, I beseech thee, say not so, provoke not  
thus also the Lord to wrath: but for what thou hast received,  
give Him thanks; and for what thou hast not to the end,  
give Him glory. Job said not, that which thou sayest un-  
thankfully, "it were better not to have received," but both  
for the one he gave thanks, saying, *The Lord gave*; and  
for the other he blessed God, saying, *The Lord hath taken  
away, blessed be the name of the Lord for ever*. And his  
wife he thus silenced, justifying himself against her, and  
uttering those admirable words, *have we received good at  
the hand of the Lord, and shall we not receive evil?* And  
yet after this a fiercer temptation befel him: yet was he  
not even thus unnerved, but in like manner bore it nobly,  
and glorified God.

This also do thou, and consider with thyself, that man  
hath not taken him, but God who made him, who more  
than thyself cares for him, and knows what is good for  
him: who is no enemy, nor lier-in-wait. See how many,  
living, have made life intolerable to their parents. "But  
seest thou not the right hearted ones?" say you. I see  
these too, but even these are not so safe as thy child is.  
For though they are now approved, yet it is uncertain  
what their end will be; but for him thou hast no longer  
any fear, nor dost thou tremble lest any thing should happen  
to him, or lest he experience any change.

These things also do thou consider respecting a good  
wife, and guardian of thine house, and for all things give

thanks unto God. And even if thou shalt lose a wife, 1 Cor.  
give thanks. Perhaps God's will is to lead thee to conti- 15. 46.  
nence, He calls thee to a nobler field of conflict, He was  
pleased to set thee free from this bond. If we thus command  
ourselves, we shall both gain the joy of this life, and obtain  
the crowns which are to come, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XLII.

---

1 COR. xv. 47.

*The first man is of the earth, earthly : the second man is the Lord from heaven.*

HAVING said that *the natural* was *first*, and *the spiritual afterward*, he again states another difference, speaking of *the earthly* and *the heavenly*. For the first difference was between the present life, and that which is to come : but this between that before grace, and that after grace. And he stated it with a view to the most excellent way of life, saying,—(for to hinder men, as I said, from such confidence in the resurrection as would make them neglectful of their practice, and of perfection, from this topic also again he renders them anxious, and exhorts to virtue, saying,)—*The first man is of the earth, earthly : the second man is the Lord from heaven*; calling the whole by the name of *man*<sup>a</sup>, and naming the one from the better, and the other from the worse part.

Ver. 48. *As is the earthly, such are they also that are earthly*: so shall they perish and have an end. *As is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly*: so shall they abide, immortal and glorious.

What then? Did not This Man too die? He died indeed, but received no injury therefrom, yea rather by this He put an end to death. Seest thou how, on this part of his subject also, he makes use of death to establish the doctrine of the resurrection? “For having, as I said before, the beginning and the head,” so he speaks, “doubt not of the whole body.”

<sup>a</sup> i. e. embodying as it were the whole Man: as in the phrase, Old and New of the two states of being which he is Man: &c. describing in the personal appellation of

Moreover also he frames hereby in the most excellent way <sup>1 Cor.</sup> 15.49. his advice concerning our conversation, setting down standards of a lofty and severe life, and of that which is not such, and bringing forward the principles of both these, of the one Christ, but of the other Adam. Therefore neither did he simply say, *of the earth*, but *earthy*, i. e. "gross, nailed down to things present;" and again with respect to Christ the reverse, *the Lord from heaven*.

[2.] But if any should say, "therefore the Lord hath not a body," because He is said to be *from heaven*, although what is said before is enough to stop their mouths: yet nothing hinders our silencing them from this consideration also: viz. what is, *the Lord from heaven*? Doth he speak of His nature, or His most perfect life? It is I suppose evident to every one, that he speaks of His life. Wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 49. *As we have borne the image of the earthly*, i. e. as we have done evil, *let us also bear<sup>b</sup> the image of the heavenly*: i. e. let us practise all goodness.

But besides this, I would fain ask thee, is it of nature that it is said, *he that is of the earth, earthly*, and, *the Lord from heaven*? "Yea," saith one. What then? Was Adam only *earthy*, or had he also another kind of substance congenial with heavenly and incorporeal beings, which the Scripture calls *soul*, and *spirit*? Every one sees, that he had this also. Therefore neither was the Lord from above only, although He is said to be *from heaven*, but He had also assumed our flesh. But Paul's meaning is such as this: *as we have borne the image of the earthly*, i. e. evil deeds, *let us also bear the image of the heavenly*, the conversation which is in the heavens. Whereas if he were speaking of nature, the thing needed not exhortation, nor advice. So that hence also it is evident, that the expression relates to our conversation.

Wherefore also he introduces the saying in the manner of advice, and calls it an *image*, here too again shewing that he is speaking of conduct, not of nature. For therefore are we

<sup>a</sup> As the Manichees did, and before them the Gnostic sects.

<sup>b</sup> *φειρόμενος*. This reading is supported, according to Scholz, by the Alexandrian and six other uncial MSS. It is found in several versions, and has the authority of Irenæus, Origen, Basil, Tertullian,

Cyprian, and other Fathers. In favour of the reading in our text, *φειρόμενος*, is the Vatican MSS. with others of less authority. Theodoret's words are remarkable; "*φειρόμενος*, He used the expression prophetically, not hortatively."

**HOMIL.** become earthy, because we have done evil: not because we XLII. were originally formed *earthy*, but because we sinned. And so sin came first, and then death, and the sentence, *Dust thou*  
<sup>1 Gen.3.</sup> *art, and unto dust shalt thou return*<sup>1</sup>. Then also entered in  
 19. the swarm of the passions. For it is not simply, the being born of *earth*, that makes a man *earthy*, (since the Lord also  
<sup>2 μάζης</sup> was of this mass and lump<sup>2</sup>), but the doing earthly things:  
<sup>καὶ θυ-</sup> even as also he is made *heavenly*, by performing things meet for heaven.

But enough: for why need I labour overmuch in the proof of this, when the apostle himself goes on to unfold the thought to us, thus saying,

Ver. 50. *Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*

Seest thou how he explains himself again, relieving us of the trouble? which he often doth: for by flesh, he here denotes men's evil deeds, which he hath done also elsewhere, as when he saith, *But ye are not in the flesh: and again, So*  
<sup>3 Rom.</sup> *then they that are in the flesh cannot please God*<sup>3</sup>. So that  
<sup>8. 8, 9.</sup> when he saith, *now this I say*, he means nothing else than this: "therefore said I these things, that thou mayest learn that evil deeds conduct not to a kingdom." Thus from the resurrection he straightway introduced also the doctrine of the kingdom also; wherefore also he adds, *neither doth corruption inherit incorruption*<sup>4</sup>, i. e. neither shall wickedness inherit that glory, and the enjoyment of the things incorruptible. For in many other places he calls wickedness by this name, saying, *He that soweth to the flesh, shall of the*  
<sup>5 Gal. 6.</sup> *flesh reap corruption*<sup>5</sup>. Now if he were speaking of the body,  
 8. and not of evil doing, he would not have said *corruption*. For he no where calls the body *corruption*, since neither is it corruption, but a thing corruptible: wherefore proceeding to discourse also of it, he calls it not "corruption," but *corruptible*, saying, *for this corruptible must put on incorruption.*

[3.] Next, having completed his advice concerning our conversation, according to his constant custom, blending closely subject with subject, he passes again to the doctrine of the resurrection of the body: as follows:

Ver. 51. *Behold, I shew you a mystery.*

It is something awful and ineffable, and which all know <sup>1 COR.</sup> not, which he is about to speak of; which also indicates the <sup>15.53.</sup> greatness of the honour he confers on them; I mean, his <sup>(2.)</sup> speaking mysteries to them. But what is this?

*We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed.* He means as follows: "we shall not all die, *but we shall all be changed*," even those who die not. For they too are mortal. "Do not thou therefore, because thou diest, on this account fear," saith he, "as if thou shouldest not rise again: for there are, there are some, who shall even escape this, and yet this suffices them not for that resurrection, but even those bodies which die not must be changed, and be transformed into incorruption."

Ver. 52. *In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump.*

After he had discoursed much of the resurrection, then opportunely he points out also its very marvellous character. As thus: "not this only," saith he, "is wonderful, that our bodies first turn to corruption, and then are raised; nor that the bodies which rise again after their corruption are better than these present ones; nor that they pass on to a much better state, nor that each receives back his own, and none that of another; but that things so many and so great, and surpassing all man's reason and conception, are done *in a moment*, i. e. in an instant of time: and to shew this more clearly, *in the twinkling of an eye*, saith he, "while one can wink one's eyelid." Further, because he had said a great thing, and full of astonishment; that so many and so great results should take place so quickly; he alleges, to prove it, the credibility of Him who performs it; as follows, *For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.* The expression, *we*, he uses not of himself, but of them that are then found alive.

Ver. 53. *For this corruptible must put on incorruption.*

Thus, lest any, hearing that *flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God*, should suppose that our bodies do not rise again; he adds, *this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.* Now the body is *corruptible*, the body is *mortal*: so that the body indeed remains, for it is the body which is put on; but its mortality and corruption vanish away, when immortality and incorruption come

**HOMIL.** upon it. Do not thou therefore question hereafter how it  
**XLII.** shall live an endless life, now that thou hast heard of its  
 becoming incorruptible.

[4.] Ver. 54. *But when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.*

Thus, since he was speaking of great and secret things, he  
<sup>1</sup> Hosea again takes prophecy<sup>1</sup> to confirm his word. *Death is swal-*  
<sup>13. 14.</sup> *lowed up in victory*<sup>2</sup>: i. e. utterly; not so much as a frag-  
<sup>2</sup> *τελείωσις*; i. e. ment of it remains, nor a hope of returning, incorruption  
*τελείωσις*; having consumed corruption.

Ver. 55. *O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?*

Seest thou his noble soul? how even as one who is offering sacrifices for victory, having become inspired, and seeing already things future as things past, he leaps and tramples upon death fallen at his feet, and shouts a cry of triumph over his head where it lies, exclaiming mightily, and saying, *O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?* It is clean gone, it is perished, it is utterly vanished away, and in vain hast thou done all those former things. For He not only disarmed death, and vanquished it, but even destroyed it, and made it quite cease from being.

Ver. 56. *Now the sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.*

Seest thou how the discourse is of the death of the body? therefore also of the resurrection of the body. For if these bodies do not rise again, how is death *swallowed up?* And not this only, but how is *the law the strength of sin?* For that *sin* indeed is *the sting of death*, and more bitter than it, and by it hath its power, is evident; but how is *the law also the strength* thereof? Because without the law sin was weak, being practised indeed, but not able so entirely to condemn: since although the evil took place, it was not so clearly pointed out. So that it was no small change which the law brought in, first causing us to know sin better, and then enhancing the punishment. And if, meaning to check sin, it did but develope it more fearfully, this is no charge against the physician, but against the abuse of the remedy. Since

even the presence of Christ made the Jews' burden heavier, <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
15. 57.  
yet must we not therefore blame it, but while we the more  
admire it, we must hate them the more, for having been  
injured by things which ought to have profited them? Yea, to  
shew that it was not the law of itself which gives strength to  
sin, Christ himself fulfilled it all, and was without sin.

But I would have thee consider, how from this topic also  
he confirms the resurrection. For if this were the cause of  
death, viz. our committing sin, and if Christ came and took  
away sin, and delivered us from it through baptism, and  
together with sin put an end also to the law, in the transgres-  
sion of which sin consists, why doubtest thou any more of  
the resurrection? For whence, after all this, is death to  
prevail? Through the law? Nay, it is done away. Through  
sin? Nay, it is clean destroyed.

*Ver. 57. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory,  
through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

For the trophy He Himself erected, but the crowns He (3.)  
hath caused us also to partake of. And this not of debt, but  
of mere mercy.

[5.] Ver. 58. *Therefore<sup>1</sup>, brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable.* <sup>μεν</sup>

Just and seasonable is this exhortation, after all that had <sup>εγένετο</sup>  
<sup>εργάσηται</sup> gone before. For nothing so disquiets as the thought that we <sup>εργάσηται</sup>  
are buffeted without cause or profit.

*Always abounding in the work of the Lord:* i. e. in the  
pure life. And he said not, "working that which is good,"  
but *abounding*; that we might do it abundantly<sup>2</sup>, and might<sup>3</sup> <sup>μετα-</sup>  
<sup>τριπλα-</sup>  
overpass the lists. <sup>επίστα-</sup>

*Knowing that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.*

What sayest thou? Labour again? But followed by  
crowns, and those above the heavens. For that former labour  
on man's expulsion from paradise, was the punishment of his  
transgressions; but this is the ground of the rewards to come.  
So that it cannot in fact be labour, both on this account, and  
by reason of the great help which it receives from above:  
which is the cause of his adding also, *in the Lord*. For the  
purpose of the former was, that we might suffer punishment;  
but of this, that we might obtain the good things to come.

Let us not therefore sleep, my beloved. For it cannot, it  
cannot be that any one by sloth should attain to the kingdom

**HOMIL.** of heaven, nor they that live luxuriously and softly. Yea it  
**XLII.** is a great thing, if straining ourselves and *keeping under*<sup>1</sup> the  
~~burdens~~ *body*, and enduring innumerable labours, we are able to  
 reach those blessings. See ye not how vast this distance  
 between heaven and earth? And how great a conflict is at  
 hand? And how prone a thing to evil man is? And how  
 easily sin *besets us*? And how many snares are in the way?

Why then do we draw upon ourselves so great cares over  
 and above those of nature, and give ourselves more trouble, and  
 make our burdens greater? Is it not enough, our having to  
 care for our food, and clothing, and houses? Is it not enough  
 to take thought for things necessary? Although even from  
 these Christ withdraws us, saying, *Take no thought for your  
 life, what ye shall eat, neither for your body, what ye shall  
 put on*<sup>2</sup>. But if one ought not to take thought for necessary  
<sup>7 Matt.</sup> food and clothing, nor for to-morrow; they who bring upon  
<sup>6. 25.</sup> themselves so great a mass of rubbish, and bury themselves  
 under it, when shall they have power to emerge? Hast thou  
 not heard Paul saying, *No man that warreth entangleth  
 himself with the cares of this life*<sup>3</sup>? But we even live luxu-  
<sup>2 Tim.</sup> riously, and eat and drink to excess, and endure buffeting for  
<sup>2. 4.</sup> ~~use, rec.~~ external things, but in the things of heaven behave ourselves  
<sup>μεγαλ.</sup> ~~τροπ.~~ *unmanly*. Know ye not, that the promise is too high for  
<sup>τροπ.</sup> man? It cannot be that one walking on the ground should  
 ascend the arches of heaven. But we do not even study to  
 live like men, but are become worse than the very brutes.  
 Know ye not before what a tribunal we are to stand? Do ye  
 not consider, that both of our words and thoughts, an account  
 is demanded of us. And we take no heed even to our  
 actions. *For whosoever looketh on a woman, saith He, to lust*

<sup>4 Matt.</sup> *after her, hath already committed adultery with her*<sup>4</sup>. And  
<sup>5. 28.</sup> yet they who must be accountable for a mere idle look, shrink  
 not nor refuse to lie rotting in that sin itself. *Whosoever*

<sup>5 Matt.</sup> *shall say to his brother, Thou fool, shall be cast into hell fire*<sup>5</sup>.  
<sup>5. 22.</sup> But we disgrace them with ten thousand reproaches, and plot  
 against them craftily, and draw not back. *He that loveth*

<sup>6 Matt.</sup> *another, loving him, is no better than the heathen*<sup>6</sup>: but we  
<sup>5. 46, 47.</sup> even envy them. What indulgence then shall we have, when  
 commanded as we are to pass over the old lines, we weave  
 ourselves a thread of life by a yet more scanty measure than

theirs? What plea shall deliver us? Who will stand up and help us when we are punished? There is no man; but it must needs be that in wailing, and weeping, and gnashing of teeth, we shall be led away tortured into that rayless gloom, those pangs which no prayer can avert, those punishments which cannot be assuaged.

Wherefore I entreat and beseech, and lay hold of your very knees, that whilst we have this scant viaticum of life, you would be pricked in your hearts by what has been said, that you would be converted, that you would become better men; that we may not, like that rich man, lament to no purpose in that world, after our departure, and continue thenceforth in incurable wailings. For though thou shouldest have father, or son, or friend, or any soever who hath confidence towards God, none of these shall ever deliver thee, thine own works having destroyed thee. For such is that tribunal: it judges by our actions alone, and in no other way is it possible there to be saved.

And these things I say, not to grieve you, nor to throw you into despair, but for fear of our finding vain and cold hopes to nourish us, and placing confidence in this person, or that, and so neglecting our own proper goodness. For if we be slothful, there will be neither righteous man, nor prophet, nor apostle, nor any one, to stand by us; but if we have been earnest, having in sufficiency the plea which comes from each man's own works<sup>1</sup>, we shall with freedom of heart partake of<sup>1</sup> the good things also laid up for them that love God; to which may we all attain, &c. &c.

τὴν ἄλλην τὸν τε γενεσθαι γέγονεν γείαν.

## HOMILY XLIII.

---

1 COR. xvi. 1.

*Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the Churches of Galatia, even so do ye.*

HAVING completed his discourse concerning doctrines, and being on the point of embarking upon that which belonged rather to morals, he dismisses every thing else, and proceeds to the chief of good things, discoursing about alms. And when he hath treated of this matter alone, he leaves off. A thing however obviously unlike what he hath done every where else. But of alms, and of temperance, and of meekness, and of long-suffering, and of all the rest, he treats in the other Epistles in the conclusion. For what reason then doth he handle here this part only of practical morality? Because the greater part also of what had been spoken before was rather nearly connected with morals: I mean, where he chastised the fornicator; where he was correcting those who go to law among Gentiles; where he terrified the drunkards and the gluttons; where he condemned the seditious, the contentious, and those who loved to have the preeminence; where those who unworthily approach the Mysteries were delivered over by him unto that intolerable sentence; where he discoursed concerning charity. For this cause, I say, the subject which most pressed on him, viz. the aid required for the saints, this he makes mention of alone.

And observe his consideration. When he had persuaded them concerning the resurrection, and made them more earnest, then and not till then he discusses this point also.

It is true indeed that on these matters he had spoken to them before, when he said, *If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great matter if we shall reap your carnal things?* And, *Who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof?* But because he knew the greatness of this moral achievement, he refuses not to add a fresh mention at the end of his letter.

And he calls the collection *λογιαν*, (a *contribution*,) immediately from the very first making out the thing to be easy. For when contribution is made by all together, that becomes light, which is charged upon each.

But having spoken about the collection, he did not say immediately, “Let every one of you lay up in store with himself;” although this of course was the natural consequence; but having first said, *As I have given order unto the Churches of Galatia*, he added this, kindling their emulation by the account of the well-doings of others, and putting it in the form of a narration. And this also he did when writing to the Romans; for to them also while appearing to narrate the reason why he was going away to Jerusalem, he introduces thereupon his discourse about alms; *But now I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the saints: for Macedonia and Achaia have been well pleased to make a certain distribution to the poor saints.* Only those he stimulates by mention of Macedonians and Corinthians; these of Galatians.<sup>1 Rom. 15. 25.</sup> For he saith, *As I have given order unto the Churches of Galatia, so also do ye:* for they would surely feel ashamed ever afterwards, to be found inferior to Galatians. And he saith not, “I have advised,” and, “I have counselled;” but *I have given order*, which is more authoritative. And he doth not bring forward a single city, or two, or three, but an entire nation: which also he doth in his doctrinal instructions, saying, *Even as also in all the Churches of the saints.* For if this be potent for conviction of doctrines, much more for imitation of actions.

[2.] “What then, I ask, didst thou give order about?”

Ver. 2. *On the first day of the week*, that is, the Lord’s day, *let each one of you lay up by himself in store whatever he may be prospering in.* Mark how he exhorts them even from the time: for indeed the day was enough to lead them

**HOMIL.** to almsgiving. Wherefore "call to mind," saith he, "what XLIII. ye attained to on this day: how all the unutterable blessings, and that which is the root and the beginning of our life, took place on this day. But not in this regard only is the season convenient for a zealous benevolence, but also because it hath rest and immunity from toils: the soul when released from labours becoming readier and apter to shew mercy. Moreover, the communicating also on that day in Mysteries so tremendous and immortal, instils great zealousness. On it, accordingly, *let each one of you*, not merely this or that individual, but *each one of you*, whether poor or rich; woman or man; slave or free; *lay up in store by himself*. He said not, "Let him bring it into the church," lest they might feel ashamed because of the smallness of the sum; but "having by gradual additions swelled his contribution, let him then produce it, when I am come: but for the present lay it up," saith he, "at home, and make thine house a church; thy little box, a treasury. Become a guardian of sacred wealth, a self-ordained steward of the poor. Thy benevolent mind assigns to thee this priesthood."

Of this our treasury<sup>a</sup> even now is a sign: but the sign remains, the thing itself no where.

[3.] Now I am aware that many of this congregation will again find fault with me when I treat of these subjects, and say, "Be not, I beseech you, be not harsh and disagreeable to your audience. Make allowances for their disposition; give some way to the mind of the hearers. For in this case you really do put us to shame; you make us blush." But I may not endure such words: since neither was Paul ashamed to be continually troublesome upon such points as these, and to speak words such as mendicants use. I grant indeed, that if

<sup>a</sup> τὰ γαζοφυλακία. Bingham, viii. 7.11. says, "The Church had her *gazophylacia*, or Treasuries, as well as the Temple; which appears from a Canon of the Fourth Council of Carthage," (93. ap. Harduin. i. 984.) "which forbids the offerings of persons at variance with one another to be received either in the Treasury or the Sanctuary. So that the Treasury was a distinct place from the Corban in the Sanctuary. . . . Here all such offerings of the people were laid up as were not thought pro-

per to be brought to the Altar." He further refers to the Apostolical Canons, 4 and 5, "That beside Bread and Wine, nothing should be brought to the Altar, save only new ears of corn and grapes, and oil for the lamps, and incense for the time of the oblation. But all other fruits should be sent *in similitudinem*, to the Repository, or Treasury it may be, as first-fruits for the Bishop and Presbyters, and not be brought to the Altar, but be by them divided among the Bishops and Clergy." See Harduin, i. 10.

I said, "give it me," and "lay it up in my house," there <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
<sup>16. 3.</sup> might perchance be something to be ashamed of in what I said: hardly however even in that case; for *they who wait at* <sup>1 c. 9. 13.</sup> *the altar*, we read, *are partakers with the altar*<sup>1</sup>. However, (2.) some one perhaps might find fault, as with one framing his argument for his own interest. But now it is for the poor that I make my supplication; nay, not so much for the poor, as for your sake who bestow the gift. Wherefore also I am bold to speak out. For what shame is it to say, Give unto thy Lord in His hunger: Put raiment on Him, going about naked; Receive Him, being a stranger? Thy Lord is not ashamed before the whole world to speak thus: *I was an hungry, and ye gave me not to eat*, He who is void of all want, and requires nothing. And am I to be ashamed and hesitate? Away with this. This shame is of the snare of the devil. I will not then be ashamed, but will say, and that boldly, "Give to the needy;" I will say it with a louder voice than the needy themselves. True it is, if any one can shew and prove that in saying these things we are drawing you over unto ourselves, and under the pretence of the poor are ourselves making gain, such a course would be worthy, I say not of shame, but even of ten thousand thunderbolts; and life itself would be more than persons so behaving would deserve. If, on the contrary, by the grace of God, we are in nothing troublesome about ourselves, but *have made the Gospel without cost* to you; labouring indeed in no wise like Paul, but being contented with our own;—with all boldness of speech I will say, "Give unto the needy:" yea, and I will not leave off saying it, and of those who give not I will be a severe accuser. For so, if I were a general and had soldiers, I should not feel ashamed at demanding food for my men: for I vehemently set my heart upon your salvation.

[4.] But that my argument may both be more forcible and more effective, I will take Paul for my comrade, and like him will discourse and say, *Let every one of you lay up by himself in store whatsoever he may prosper in*. Now observe also how he avoids being burthensome. He said not, "so much," or "so much," but *whatsoever he may have been prospered in*, whether much or little. Neither, said he, "what any one may have gained," but, *whatsoever he may have been pros-*

**HOMIL.** *pered in*: signifying that the supply is of God. And not XLIII. only so, but also by his not enjoining them to deposit all at once, he makes his counsel easy: since the gathering by <sup>λατρευτης</sup> little and little hinders all perception of the burthen<sup>1</sup> and <sup>για.</sup> the cost. Here you see the reason too for his not enjoining <sup>πολλαπλης</sup> them to produce it immediately, but giving them a long day<sup>2</sup>; <sup>την προσ-</sup> whereof adding the cause, he saith, *That there be no gatherings when I come*: which means, that ye may not when the season is come for paying in contributions, just then be compelled to collect them. And this too in no ordinary degree encouraged them again: the expectation of Paul being sure to make them more earnest.

Ver. 3. *But when I come, whomsoever ye may approve of by your letters, them will I send to carry back your kind gift<sup>3</sup> to Jerusalem.*

He said not, "this person," and "that," but, *whomsoever ye shall approve*, whomsoever you shall choose, thus freeing his ministration from suspicion. Wherefore to them he leaves the right of voting in the choice of those who are to convey it. He is far enough from saying, "The payment is yours, but the privilege of selecting those who are to carry it is not yours." Next, that they might not think him quite absent, he adds his letters, saying, *Whomsoever you approve, I will send by letters.* As if he had said, I also will be with them, and share in the ministration, by my letters. And he said not, "These will I send to bear your alms," but, *your kind liberal-gift<sup>4</sup>*; to signify that they were doing great deeds; to mark <sup>ity, Eng.</sup> that they were gainers themselves. And elsewhere he calls <sup>Version.</sup> it both *a blessing* and *a communication<sup>5</sup>*. The one that <sup>9. 5, 15.</sup> he might not make them less active, the other that he might not elate them. But in no case whatever hath he called it *alms*.

Ver. 4. *But if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.*

Here again he exhorts them to liberality. As thus: "if it be so much," saith he, "as to require my presence also, neither will I decline this." But he did not in the first instance promise this, nor say, "When I am come I will carry it." For he would not have made so much of it, if he had so set it down from the first. Afterwards however he adds it well

and seasonably. Here then you have the reason why he did not immediately promise, nor yet altogether hold his peace concerning it: but having said, *I will send*, then at length he adds himself also. And here too again he leaves it to their own decision, in saying, *If it is meet that I also should go*: whereas this rested with them, namely, to make their collection large; so large even, as to affect his plans, and cause him in person to make the journey.

[5.] Ver. 5. *But I will come to you*, saith he, *when I pass through Macedonia*. This he had said also above; then however with anger: at least he added, <sup>1</sup>*And I will know not the speech of them that are puffed up, but the power*: but here, more mildly; that they might even long for his coming. Then, that they might not say, “why is it that you honour the Macedonians above us?” he said not, “When I depart,” but, *When I shall pass through Macedonia: for I shall pass through Macedonia*.

Ver. 6. *And with you, it may be, I shall stay, or even spend the winter*. For I do not at all wish to take you merely in my way, but to continue among you, and spend some time.” For when he wrote this letter, he was in Ephesus, and it was winter; as you may know by his saying, *Until Pentecost I shall remain at Ephesus: but after this I shall go away to Macedonia, and after having gone through it, I will be with you in the summer; and perhaps I shall even spend the winter with you*.

But why did he say, *perhaps*; and did not positively affirm it? Because Paul did not foreknow all things; for good purposes. Wherefore neither doth he absolutely affirm, in order that if it came not to pass, he might have something to resort to; first his previous mention of it having been indefinite; and next, the power of the Spirit leading him wheresoever It willed, not where he himself desired. And this also he expresses in the second Epistle, when excusing himself on account of his delay, and saying, *Or the things which I counsel, do I counsel according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea yea, and nay nay?*<sup>2</sup>

*That ye may bring me on my journey, wheresoever I go.*<sup>2 Cor. 1. 17.</sup>  
This also is a mark of love, and great strength of affection.

Ver. 7. *For I do not wish now to see you as I pass through.*

**HOMIL.** *For I hope to remain some time with you, if the Lord*  
**XLIII.** *permit.*

Now these things he said, both to signify his love, and also to terrify the sinners, not however openly, but with outward demonstration of friendship.

Ver. 8. *But I shall abide at Ephesus until Pentecost.*

As we should expect, he tells them all exactly, informing them as friends. For this too is a mark of friendship, to say the reason why he was not with them, why he delayed, and where he was staying.

Ver. 9. *For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.*

Now if it was *great*, how could there be *adversaries*? Why, on this very account the adversaries were many, because men's faith was great; because the entrance was great and wide. But what means, *A great door*? There are many prepared to receive the faith, many ready to approach and be converted. There is a spacious entrance for me, things being now come to that point, that the mind of those approaching is at its prime for the obedience of the faith. On this account, vehement was the blast of the breath of the devil, because he saw many turning away from him.

You see then on both accounts it was needful for him to stay; both because the gain was abundant, and because the struggle was great. And herewith also he cheered them up, namely, by saying, that henceforth the word works every where, and springs up readily. And if there be many who plot against it, this also is a sign of the advance of the Gospel. For at no time doth that evil *dæmon* wax fierce, except on seeing his goods made spoil of abundantly<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> See

S. Mat.

12.

[6.] Let us then, when we desire to effect any thing great and noble, not regard this, the greatness of the labour which it brings, but let us rather look to the gain. Mark, for instance, Paul, not therefore lingering, not therefore shrinking back, because *there were many adversaries*; but because *there was a great door*, pressing on and persevering. Yea, and as I was saying, this was a sign that the devil was being stripped, for it is not, depend on it, by little and mean achievements, that men provoke that evil monster to wrath. And so, when thou seest a righteous man performing great and excellent deeds,

yet suffering innumerable ills, marvel not; on the contrary, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> one might well marvel, if the devil receiving so many blows <sup>15. 11.</sup> were to keep quiet and bear the wounds meekly. Even as you ought not to be surprised were a serpent, continually goaded, to grow fierce, and spring on the person that goaded it. Now no serpent steals on you so fierce as the devil, leaping up against all; and, like a scorpion with its sting raised, he raises himself upright. Let not this then disturb you: since of course he that returns from war and victory and slaughter must needs be bloody, and oftentimes also have received wounds. Do thou, then, for thy part, when thou seest any one doing alms, and performing numberless other good works, and so curtailing the power of the devil, and then falling into temptations and perils; be not troubled thereupon. This is the very reason why he fell into temptations, because he mightily smote the devil.

“And how did God permit it,” you will say? That he might be crowned more signally: that the other might receive a severer wound. For when after benefits conferred a man suffers, and that grievously, and yet continually gives thanks, it is a blow to the devil. For it is a great thing, even when our affairs are flowing on prosperously, to shew mercy, and to adhere to virtue: but it is far greater, in grievous calamity, not to desist from this noble occupation; this is he who may be most truly said to do so for God’s sake. So then, though we be in peril, beloved, though we suffer ever so greatly, let us with the greater zeal apply ourselves to our labours for virtue’s sake. For this is not at all the season for retribution.

Here then let us not ask for our crowns, lest when the crowns come in their season, we diminish our recompense. For as in the case of artificers, they who support themselves and work receive higher pay; while those who have their maintenance with their employers, are curtailed in no small part of the wages; so also in regard to the saints: he that doth immense good and suffers extreme evil hath his reward unimpaired, and a far more abundant recompense, not only for the good things which he hath done, but also for the evil which he hath suffered. But he that enjoys rest and luxury here, hath not such bright crowns there. Let us not then seek for our

HOMIL. recompense here. But *then* of all times let us rejoice, when XLIII. doing well we suffer ill. For God hath in store for us in that world not only the reward of our good deeds, but that of our temptations also.

(4.) But to explain myself more clearly: suppose two rich merciful men, and let them give to the poor: then let one continue in his riches and enjoy all prosperity: the other fall into poverty and diseases and calamities, and give God thanks. Now when these are gone away into the other world, which will receive the greater reward? Is it not quite plain that it will be he who is sick and in adversity, seeing that though he did well and suffered ill he felt not according to human infirmity? I suppose this is plain to every one. And in truth, <sup>1 See S.</sup> this is the adamantine statue, this is the considerate servant<sup>1.</sup> <sup>Matt.25.</sup> But if we ought not to do any thing good for the hope of the kingdom, but because it so pleaseth God, which is more than any kingdom; what doth he deserve, who because he doth not receive his recompense here, is become more remiss concerning virtue?

Let us then not be troubled, when we see that such an one who invited widows and made continual feasts lost his house by fire, or sustained some other such like disaster. Yea, for this very thing he shall receive his reward. For even Job was not so much admired for his almsdeeds as he was for his sufferings afterwards. For this reason his friends also are little esteemed, and deemed of no account; because they sought for the recompenses of the present world, and with a view to this gave sentence against the just man. Let us then not seek for our return here when we have become poor and needy; since surely it is of extreme meanness, when heaven is proposed, and things which are above the heaven, to be looking round on the things which are here. Let us not by any means do so; but whichsoever of His unexpected commands come upon us, hold we fast unto God continually, and obey the blessed Paul.

[7.] And let us make a little chest for the poor at home; and near the place at which you stand praying, there let it be put: and as often as you enter in to pray, first deposit your alms, and then send up your prayer; and as you would

not wish to pray with unwashen hands<sup>a</sup>, so neither do so without alms: since not even the Gospel hanging by our bed<sup>b</sup> is more important than that alms should be laid up for you; for if you hang up the Gospel and do nothing, it will do you no such great good. But if you have this little coffer, you have a defence against the devil, you give wings to your prayer, you make your house holy, having meat for the King<sup>11 S. Mat. 25. 34.</sup> there laid up in store. And for this reason let the little coffer be placed also near the bed<sup>c</sup>, and the night will not be troubled with fantasies. Only let nothing be cast into it, which is the fruit of injustice. For this thing is charity; and it cannot be that charity should ever spring out of hardheartedness.

Will you have mention also of the resources, out of which you should make your deposits, so as in this respect also to make this kind of contribution easy? The handicraft man, for instance, the sandal-maker, or the leather-cutter, or the brass-founder, or any other artificer,—when he sells any article of his trade, let him give the first-fruits of its price unto God; let him cast in a small portion here, and assign something to God out of his portion, though it be rather scanty<sup>2</sup>. For neither do I ask any great thing; but so much<sup>2 μητέτες</sup> as the childish ones among the Jews<sup>d</sup>, full as they are of innumerable evils, just so much let us cast in, we who look forward to heaven. And this I say not as laying down a law,<sup>μοίχεας</sup> neither as forbidding more, but as recommending a deposit of not less than a tenth part. And this also do thou practise not in selling only, but also in buying. Let those also who possess land observe this law in regard to their rents: yea, let it be a

<sup>a</sup> S. Chrys. on St. Matt. xv. Hom. 51. “We see this kind of custom prevailing in the Church with most people; they are anxious to come in with clean garments and to wash their hands, but make no account of presenting their soul clean unto God.” Ed. Sav. t. ii. 328; cf. Hom. 73. p. 861; in Eph. 3. p. 778. “Tell me, wouldest thou choose with unwashen hands to approach the Sacrifice? Far from it, to my thinking. Thou wouldest rather not come at all, than with defiled hands. Shall the next thing be, that while thou art so scrupulous in that which is but a trifle, thou

approachest with a soul defiled, and darest to touch It?”

<sup>b</sup> The custom here alluded to may perhaps explain the traditional wish or invocation,

“Matthew, Mark, Luke and John  
Bless the bed that I lie on.”

<sup>c</sup> The reading seems corrupt. It is rendered as if it were διὰ τοῦτο καὶ πρᾶγμα τῆς αἵμης πίσθια τὸ κυβόστιον.

<sup>d</sup> Among whom it was a common saying, “Tithes are the Hedge of the Law.” Hooker, E. P. v. 79. 8. See S. Luke xviii. 12.

HOMIL. law for all who gather their incomes in an honest way. For XLIII. with those who commend usury I have no concern, neither with soldiers who do violence to others, and turn to their own advantage their neighbours' calamities. Since from that quarter God will accept nothing. But these things I say to those who gather their substance by righteous labour.

Yea, and if we establish ourselves in this kind of habit, we are ever after stung by our conscience if ever we omit this rule ; and after a while we shall not even think it a hard thing ; and by degrees we shall arrive at the greater things, and by practising how to despise wealth, and by pulling up the root of evils, we shall first pass the present life in peace, and then obtain possession of the life to come ; which may it be the portion of us all to attain unto, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XLIV.

---

1 COR. xvi. 10.

*But if Timotheus come to you<sup>1</sup>, see that he may be with you<sup>1 προσεις</sup>  
without fear.*

<sup>προσεις</sup> not  
in rec.  
text.

PERHAPS some one may think there is something unworthy of Timothy's courage in this piece of advice. But not on Timothy's account is this said, but for the hearers' sake: lest by their design against him they should hurt themselves: since he for his part had his station always in the way of dangers<sup>2</sup>.

*For as a son with a father, saith he, he hath served with me in the Gospel<sup>3</sup>.* But lest from boldness towards the disciple <sup>παιδιον την μαθητηκην</sup> they should proceed also to the teacher, and become worse,<sup>3 Phil.2.νοει</sup> <sup>22.</sup> he checks them from afar off, saying, *that he may be with you without fear*; that is, that none of those desperate persons rise up against him. For he intended perhaps to rebuke them about the things, concerning which Paul also had written: and indeed Paul professed to send him for this very reason. *For I have sent Timothy unto you*, saith he<sup>4</sup>, <sup>4 c.4.17.</sup> *who shall bring you in mind of my ways in Christ, as every where in every Church I teach.* In order then that they might not through confidence in their high birth and wealth, and the support of the people, and the wisdom from without, attack him, and spit upon him, and plot against him, being grieved at the reproofs which came from him; or lest in revenge for the teacher's rebuke, they should demand satisfaction of him, so punishing the other; therefore he saith, *that he may be without fear among you.* As if he had said, "Tell me not of those who are without, the Gentiles and unbelievers. It is your part that I require, you for whom also the whole Epistle was composed," the persons also whom in

HOMIL. the beginning and the outset he had frightened. Wherefore XLIV. he saith, *among you.*

Then in virtue of his ministry he sets him forth as a person to be fully trusted ; saying, *For the work of the Lord he worketh.* That is ; “ look not,” saith he, “ to this, his not being rich, namely, nor highly educated, nor old : but what commands are laid upon him, what work he is doing. *For the work of the Lord he worketh.*” And this serves him instead of all nobility, and wealth, and age, and wisdom.

And he is not content with this, but adds, *Even as I also.* And some way above, *Who is my beloved son in the Lord; he shall bring you in remembrance of my ways in Christ.* Seeing then that he was both young, and had been singly entrusted with the improvement of so numerous a people, both of which things tended to bring him into contempt, he adds, as we might expect,

Ver. 11. *Let no one therefore despise him.*

And not this only doth he demand of them, but also greater honour ; wherefore also he saith, *but conduct him forth in peace;* that is, without fear ; causing no fightings or contentions, no enmities or hatreds, but subjection and honour ; giving heed as to a master.

*That he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.* This also was the language of one that would alarm them. That is, in order that they might become more considerate, as knowing that all would be told him whatever Timothy’s treatment might be, he adds therefore, *for I expect him.* And besides, hereby he both shews that Timothy is worthy of their confidence ; since being on the point of departing he waits for him ; and also signifies the love which he hath towards them, it appearing that for their sakes he sent away one so useful to him.

Ver. 12. *But concerning Apollos our brother, I greatly desired him to come unto you together with the brethren.*

This man appears to have been both well-educated, and also older than Timothy. Lest they should say then, “ For what possible reason did he not send the man grown, but the youth instead of him ?” observe how he softens down this point also, both calling him a brother, and saying that he had often desired him. For lest he should seem to have held

Timothy in higher honour than him, and on this account not <sup>1 COR.</sup> to have sent him, and cause their envy to burst out more 16. 13. abundantly, he adds, *I have often entreated him to come.* What then: did not the other yield, nor consent? did he resist and shew himself contentious? He saith not this, but that he might not excite prejudice against him, and also might make excuse for himself, he saith, *and his will was not at all to come at this time.* Then to prevent their saying that all this was an excuse and pretence, he added, *but he will come to you when he shall have convenient time.* This was both an excuse for him, and a refreshment to them, desiring to see him, by the hope which it gave of his coming.

[2.] Afterwards indicating, that not in the teachers but in themselves they ought to have their hopes of salvation, he saith,

Ver. 13. *Watch ye, stand fast in the faith.*

Not in the wisdom which is without: for there it is not possible to stand, but to be borne along; even as *in the faith* ye may stand. *Quit you like men, be strong. Let all your things be done in charity.* Now in saying these things, he seems indeed to advise; but he is reprimanding them as indolent. Wherefore he saith, *Watch*, as though they slept; *Stand*, as though they were rocking to and fro: *Quit you like men*, as though they were playing the coward: *Let all your things be done with charity*, as though they were in dissensions. And the first caution refers to the deceivers, viz. *Watch, stand*: the next, to those who plot against us, *Quit you like men*: the third, to those who make parties and endeavour to distract, *Let all your things be done with charity*; which thing is *the bond of perfectness*, and the root and the fountain of all blessings.

But what means, *All things with charity?* “Whether any one rebuke,” saith he, “or rule, or be ruled, or learn, or teach, let all be with charity;” since in fact all the things which have been mentioned arose from neglect of it. For if this had not been neglected, they would not have been puffed up, they would not have said, *I am of Paul, and I of Apollos.* If this had existed, they would not have gone to law before heathens, or rather they would not have gone to law at all. If this had existed, that notorious person would not have taken his father’s wife; they would not have despised the

**HOMIL.** weak brethren; there would have been no heresies among **XLIV.** them; they would not have been vain-glorious about their gifts. Therefore it is that he saith, *Let all things be done with charity.*

[3.] Ver. 15. *And I beseech you, brethren:—ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves unto the ministry of the saints.*

(2.) In the beginning too he mentions this man, saying, *I baptized also the house of Stephanas:* and now he speaks of him as *the first-fruits* not of Corinth only, but also of all Greece. And this too is no small encomium, that he was the first to come to Christ. Wherefore also in the Epistle to the Romans, praising certain persons on this account, he said,

<sup>1</sup> Rom. 16. 7. *Who also were in Christ before me<sup>1</sup>.* And he said not, that they were the first who believed, but were *the first-fruits*; implying that together with their faith they shewed forth also a most excellent life, in every way proving themselves worthy, as in the case of fruits. For so the first-fruits ought to be better than the rest of those things whereof they are the first-fruits: a kind of praise which Paul hath attributed to these also by this expression: namely, that they not only had a genuine faith, as I was saying, but also they exhibited great piety, and the prime of all virtue, and liberality in alms-giving.

And not from hence only, but from another topic likewise he indicates their piety, i. e. from their having filled their whole house also with godliness.

And that they flourished in good works also, he declares by what follows, saying, *They have addicted themselves unto the ministry of the saints.* Hear ye, how vast are the praises of their hospitality? For he did not say, “they minister,” but, *have addicted themselves:* this kind of life they have chosen altogether, this is their business in which they are always busy.

*That ye also submit yourselves unto such,* that is, “that ye take a share with them both in expenditure of money, and in your personal ministry; that ye be partakers with them.” For both to them the labour will be light when they have comrades, and the results of their active benevolence will extend to more.

And he said not merely, *be fellow-helpers*, but added, <sup>1 Cor. 16. 18.</sup> “whatsoever directions they give, obey;” implying the strictest sort of obedience. And that he might not appear to be favouring them, he adds, *and to every one that laboureth and worketh together with us.* “Let this,” saith he, “be a general rule: for I do not speak about them individually, but if there be any one like them, let him also have the same advantages.” And therefore when he begins to commend, he calls upon themselves as witnesses, saying, *I beseech you, ye know the house of Stephanas.* “For ye also yourselves are aware,” saith he, “how they labour, and have no need to learn from us.”

Ver. 17. *But I was glad of the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus, for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied.*

Ver. 18. *For they have refreshed my spirit and yours.*

Thus, since it was natural for them to be greatly irritated against these persons, for it was they who had come and shewed him all about the division, inasmuch as by them also they had written the questions about the virgins, and those about the married persons:—mark how he softened them down; both in the beginning of his Epistle by saying, *For it hath been shewed me by them which are of the house of Chloe;* thus at once concealing these and bringing forward the others; (for it should seem that the latter had given their information by means of the former;) and in this place again, *They have supplied your lack, and refreshed my spirit and yours:* signifying that they had come for all, and had chosen to undertake so great a journey on their behalf. How then may this, their peculiar praise, become common? “If you will solace me for what was wanting on your part by your kindness towards them; if you will honour, if you will receive them, if you will communicate with them in doing good.” Wherefore he saith, *Acknowledge ye then them that are such.* And while praising those that came, he embraces also the others in his praise, the senders together with the sent: where he saith, “*They have refreshed my spirit and yours, therefore acknowledge such as these,* because for your sakes they left country and home.” Dost thou perceive his consideration? He implies that they had obliged not Paul only, but the Co-

**HOMIL.** rinthians likewise, in that they bore about in themselves the XLIV. whole city. A thing which both added credit to them, and did not allow the others to sever themselves from them, inasmuch as in their persons they had presented themselves to Paul.

Ver. 19. *All the Churches of Asia salute you.* He is continually making the members combine and cleave together in one by means of the salutation.

*Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord;*—for with them he was lodging, being a tent-maker—*together with the Church which is in their house.* This thing too is no small excellency, that they had made their very house a Church.

[4.] Ver. 20. *All the brethren salute you. Salute ye one another with an holy kiss.* This addition of the *holy kiss* he makes only here. What may the reason be? They had been widely at variance with one another on account of their saying, *I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ;* on account of *one being hungry, and another drunken;* on account of their having contentions and jealousies and suits. And from the gifts there was much envying and great pride. Having then knit them together by his exhortation, he naturally bids them use the *holy kiss*\* also as a mean of union: for this unites, and produces one body. This is holy, when free from deceit and hypocrisy.

Ver. 21. *The salutation of me Paul by mine own hand;* intimates that the Epistle was composed with great seriousness; and therefore he added,

Ver. 22. *If any man love not our Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema.*

By this one word he strikes fear into all: those who made their members the members of an harlot; those who put stumbling-blocks in the way of their brethren by the things offered in sacrifice unto idols; those who named themselves after men; those who refuse to believe the resurrection. And he not only strikes fear, but also points out the way of all virtue, and the fountain of all vice, viz. that as when our love towards Him hath become intense, there is no kind of

\* That is, the kiss of peace, constantly used as part of the ceremonial of the holy Eucharist; as appears by all the Primitive Liturgies.

sin but is extinguished and cast out thereby; so when it is 1 Cor. 16. 24.

*Maranatha.* For what reason is this word used? And wherefore too in the Hebrew tongue? Seeing that arrogance was the cause of all the evils, and this arrogance the wisdom from without produced, and this was the sum and substance of all the evils, a thing which especially distracted Corinth; in repressing their arrogance he did not even use the Greek tongue, but the Hebrew: signifying that so far from being ashamed of that sort of simplicity, he even embraces it with much warmth.

But what is the meaning of *Maranatha*? “Our Lord is come.” For what reason then doth he use this phrase in particular? To confirm the doctrine of the Economy: out of which class of topics more than any other he hath put together those arguments which are the seeds of the Resurrection<sup>1</sup>. And not only this, but also to rebuke them: as if <sup>ἴτις ὁ</sup> he had said, “The common Lord of all hath condescended <sup>μάλιστα</sup> <sup>τὰ σπίρ-</sup> to come down thus far, and are ye in the same state, and do <sup>ματαρίς</sup> <sup>ἀναστά-</sup> ye abide in your sins? Are ye not thrilled with the excess of <sup>εἰδος εὐ-</sup> His love, the crown of His blessings? Yea, consider but <sup>εἰδος εὐ-</sup> this one thing,” saith he, “and it will suffice thee for progress in all virtue, and thou shalt be able to extinguish all sin.”

Ver. 23. *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.*

This is like a teacher, to help not only with advice, but also with prayers.

Ver. 24. *My love be with you all in Christ Jesus, Amen.*

Thus, to hinder them from thinking, that in flattery to them he so ended, he saith, *In Christ Jesus.* It having nothing in it human or carnal, but being of a sort of spiritual nature. Wherefore it is thoroughly genuine. For indeed the expression was that of one who loves deeply. As thus; because he was separated from them as regards place, as it were by the stretching out of a right hand he incloses them with the arms of his love, saying, *My love be with you all*; just as if he said, “With all of you I am.” Whereby he intimates that the things written came not of wrath or anger, but of provident care, seeing that after so heavy an accusation he doth not turn himself away, but rather loves them, and embraces them when they are afar off, by these epistles and writings throwing himself into their arms.

**HOMIL.** [5.] For so ought he that corrects to do: since he at least, who  
XLIV. acts merely from anger, is but satisfying his own feeling; but he  
 who after correcting the sinner, renders also the offices of love,  
 gives signification that those words also, whatsoever he spake  
 in reproof, were words of fond affection. Just so let us too  
 chasten one another; and let neither the corrector be angry,  
 (for this belongs not to correction, but to passion,) nor let he  
 that is corrected take it ill. For what is done is healing, not  
 despite. Now if physicians use cautery, and are not found  
 fault with, and that too, frequently, though they quite miss  
 their object; but even in their pain the subjects of the  
 cautery and amputation esteem as benefactors those who  
 excite this pain; much more ought he, who receives reproof,  
 to be so disposed, and as to a physician, so to give heed to  
 the corrector, and not as to an enemy. And let us also who  
 rebuke approach with great gentleness, with great prudence.  
 And if thou seest a brother committing sin, as Christ com-  
 manded, make not your rebuke public, but *between thee and  
 him alone*<sup>1</sup>: not reproaching nor insulting over him when  
<sup>18. 15.</sup>  
<sup>2</sup> *τηνό-*  
~~μίσος.~~ down, but in pain and with a melting heart<sup>2</sup>. And shew  
 thyself ready also to receive reproof, if thou commit error in  
 any thing.

Now that what I say may be plainer, let us put an  
 imaginary case, and so try our rule. For God forbid that in  
 very deed we should be provided with such an illustration of  
 it. Suppose any brother dwelling in the same house with a  
 virgin, in honour and chastity, and yet not even so quite  
 escaping evil report<sup>b</sup>. If then you should hear talk of this  
 their dwelling together, be not contemptuous, nor say, "Why,  
 hath he no understanding of his own? Doth he not himself  
 know what is for his good? Get love for nothing, but do not  
 for nothing get hatred. Why, what have I to do with taking

¶ St. Chrysostom “attacked in the first instance those ecclesiastics who, under pretence of charity, lived with virgins, whom they treated as adopted sisters, whom they called ‘subintroductæ’ or *ἀδικηθεῖται*. Their excuses were, to assist a maiden left desolate without relations or friends; to take care of her affairs, if rich, and to maintain her in charity, if poor. . . . On the other hand, the clergy said they cast on them the burden of their household, and those trifling cares for which

women are most proper, in order to be more at liberty for the offices of their ministry. For the rest, they affirmed that in this intimacy there was no sort of criminal liberty, not at all making the less profession of continence. St. Chrysostom maintained the contrary; and we have two whole discourses of his on this subject, which seem to have been written about this time,” the time of his promotion to the see of Constantinople. Fleury, E. H. b. 20. §. 38.

up a gratuitous enmity?" These are the doting words of wild <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
beasts, or rather of daemons: for it is not so, that he is hated <sup>16. 24.</sup>  
for nothing, who doth this for his brother's correction, rather  
it is for great blessings and crowns unutterable.

But if thou sayest, "What? hath he no understanding?" thou  
shalt hear from me that he hath not: drunken as he is with his  
passion. For if in the heathen courts of justice <sup>c</sup> those who  
are injured must not speak for themselves while glowing with  
wrath; (although there be no fault in that kind of sympathy;) how  
much more those whom evil habit holds in subjection.  
Wherefore I say, that manifold as his wisdom may be, he hath  
not his mind awake. For what can be wiser than David, the  
man who said, *The dark and the hidden things of Thy wisdom*  
*Thou hast made known unto me*<sup>1</sup>? But when he looked on the <sup>1 Ps. 51.</sup>  
wife of the soldier with unjust eyes, then according to what <sup>6. ap.</sup>  
<sup>LXX.</sup> he himself said <sup>2</sup>of those who sail on a raging sea, *all his* <sup>50. 6.</sup>  
*wisdom was swallowed up*; and he stood in need of others <sup>2 Ps.</sup>  
<sup>107. 27.</sup> to correct him, and did not even perceive amidst what evils  
he was. Wherefore also, bewailing his offences, he said, *As*  
*a heavy burden they have weighed grievously upon me: my* <sup>(4.)</sup>  
*wounds stank and were corrupt because*<sup>3</sup> *of my folly*<sup>4</sup>. He <sup>3</sup> *and*  
therefore that committeth sin hath no understanding. For <sup>4</sup> *every*  
<sup>one,</sup> he is drunken and is in darkness. Do not then say these <sup>"before</sup>  
things, neither add that other remark, "I care not at all <sup>the</sup> face."  
about it. *For every one shall bear his own burden*<sup>5</sup>." Nay, <sup>4 Ps. 38.</sup>  
against thyself also it grows up into a grievous accusation, <sup>5 Gal. 6.</sup>  
that seeing one in error thou didst not restore him. For if it <sup>5.</sup>  
was not right, according to the law of the Jews <sup>6</sup>, to slight the <sup>6 Exod.</sup>  
beast of one's enemy; he who despises not a beast of burthen, <sup>23. 4, 5.</sup>  
nor yet the soul of an enemy perishing, but that of a friend,  
what pardon shall he obtain?

Yea, neither is it enough for our excuse, that he hath  
understanding: since we too after our many and manifold  
exhortations have not been sufficient, nor proved useful, unto  
ourselves. Bear this in mind then in regard to him also that  
is in error; that it is natural he should receive the best counsel  
rather from thee than from himself.

And say not, "But what care I about these things?" Fear

<sup>c</sup> The Areopagus, and other courts resembling it, which allowed no appeal to  
the passions.

**Homil.** thou him who first spoke this word; for the saying, *Am I* **XLIV.** *my brother's keeper!*<sup>1</sup> tends to the same point as this. This <sup>1 Gen.</sup> **4. 9.** is the mother of all our evils, that we esteem the concerns of our own body as foreign to us. What sayest thou? Thou carest not for thy brother? Who then is to care for him? the unbeliever, who rejoices over and reproaches and insults him? or the devil, who urges him on and supplants him?

And whence comes this? "Because," saith he, "I do no good though I speak and advise what is right." But how is it clear that thou wilt do no good? Why, this again is extreme folly, while the end remains in obscurity, to incur the manifold blame of confessed indifference. And yet God, who foresees the future, often speaks and doth no good; yet doth He not even so give up; and that, knowing that He shall not persuade men. Now if He who knows beforehand that He shall win no advantage, ceases not from the work of correction, what excuse wilt thou have, who art completely ignorant of the future, and yet faintest and art benumbed? Yea, and many have succeeded by frequent attempts: and when they most of all despained, then did they most gain their point. And though thou shouldest gain no advantage, thou hast done thine own part.

Be not then inhuman, nor unmerciful, nor a despiser: for that these words come of cruelty and indifference, is plain from what follows: viz. What is the reason, that when one of the members of thy body is in pain, thou sayest not, "What care I?" Yet whence is it plain that if it be taken due care of it is restored? And yet thou leavest nothing undone, that even although thou profit not, thou mayest not have to blame thyself for the omission of any thing which ought to have been done. Hereupon I ask, are we to take such care for the members of our body, and to neglect those of Christ? Nay, how can such things deserve pardon?

For if I make no impression upon thee by saying, "Have a care of thine own member;" in order that thou mayest become better were it only through fear, I put thee in mind of the Body of Christ. For how can it be other than a matter of horror to see His flesh putrifying, and neglect it? And if thou hadst a slave or an ass afflicted with a mortifying sore, thou couldest not have the heart to neglect it: but seest thou

the Body of Christ full of leprosy<sup>1</sup>, and hurriest by? and thinkest not that such things deserve innumerable thunderbolts? For this cause all things are turned upside down, because of this our inhumanity, because of our indifference. Wherefore now, I beseech you, let this cruelty be cast out from among us.

[6.] Draw near to him whom I spoke of, as dwelling with the virgin, and speak some small praise of thy brother, making it up from the other excellencies which he hath. And foment him with thy commendations as it were with warm water, and so mitigate the tumour of his wound. Speak of thyself also as wretched; accuse the common race of mankind; point out that we all are in sins; ask for pardon, saying, that thou art undertaking things too great for thee, but charity persuades thee to dare all things. Then in giving thine advice, do it not imperiously, but in a brotherly way. And when by all these means thou hast reduced the swelling, and soothed the pain arising from the cutting reproof which is in store for him, and when thou hast again and again deprecated and besought him not to be angry: when thou hast bound him down with these things, then use the knife; neither pressing the matter too close, nor yet undoing it; that he may neither fly off on the one hand, nor on the other think little of it. For neither if thou strike not to the quick, hast thou done any good, and if thy blow be violent, thou makest him start away.

Wherefore, even after all this, being on the very point of thy reproof, mix up again commendation with thy censures. And seeing that this proceeding considered in itself cannot be matter of praise, (for it is not commendable to keep house with a damsel that is a virgin:) let the purpose of him who doth so be thy topic for effecting this; and say, "I know indeed that thou doest it for God's sake, and that the desolation and unprotected state of that poor woman met thine eye, and caused thee to stretch out thine hand to her." And although he may not be doing it with this intention, do thou speak so; and after this add what follows also; again excusing thyself, and saying, "These things I speak not to direct but to remind thee. Thou doest it for God's sake; I too know that. But let us see whether another

**HOMIL.** evil be not produced hereby. And if there be none, keep **XLIV.** her in thine house, and cling to this excellent purpose. There is no one to hinder thee. But if any mischief arise from hence exceeding the advantage, let us take care, I beseech you, lest while we are earnest to comfort one soul, we put a stumbling-block in the way of ten thousand." And do not add immediately the punishments due to those who give offence, but take his own testimony also, saying, "Thou hast no need to learn these things from me: thou thyself knowest, *if any one offend one of these little ones*, how great a penalty is threatened. And thus having sweetened thy speech, and smoothed down his wrath, apply the medicine of thy correction. And should he again urge her forlorn condition, do not thou even so expose his pretence, but say to him, "Let nothing of this sort make you afraid: thou wilt have an ample plea, the offence given to others: since not for indifference, but in care towards them, didst thou cease from this thy purpose."

(5.) And let the matter of thine advice be brief, for there is no need of much teaching; but let the parts on the other hand which express your fellow-feeling be many and close upon one another. And continually have thou recourse to the topic of charity; throwing into shade the painfulness of what thou sayest, and giving him his full power, and saying, "This is what I for my part advise and recommend; but about taking the advice, thou only art judge: for I do not compel and force thee, but submit the whole thing to thine own discretion."

If we so manage our reproof, we shall easily be able to correct those in error: even as what we now do, is surely more like the conduct of wild beasts or irrational creatures than of men. For if any persons now perceive any one committing errors of this kind, with the person himself they do not at all confer, but themselves, like silly old women who have drunk too much, whisper about one with another. And the saying, "Get love for nothing, but do not get hatred for nothing," hath not here any place in their opinion. Rather, when they have a fancy to speak evil, they mind not being "hated for nothing," rather I should say, "being punished;" since it is not hatred alone that is hereby produced, but also punishment. But when there is need of correction, they allege both this,

and innumerable other pretexts. Whereas then would be <sup>1 Cor.</sup> 16. 24. the time to think of these things, when thou speakest evil, when thou calumniatest ; I mean the saying, “ Be not hated for nothing,” and “ it is no care of mine.” But as things are, in the former case, thou art vehemently and idly curious, and carest not for hatred and ills innumerable ; but when thou shouldest be taking thought for the salvation of thy brother, then it is thy pleasure to be a sort of unofficious, inoffensive person. And yet from evil speaking arises hatred both on God’s part and on men’s ; and this is no great care to thee : but by giving advice privately, and reproofs of that kind, both he and God will be made thy friends. And even should he hate thee, God goes on loving thee the rather on this account. Nay, in fact, not even so will he hate thee, as when his hatred came from thine evil speaking : but in that case he will avoid thee as a foe and an enemy, whereas now he will consider thee more venerable than any father. And if he apparently take it ill, inwardly and privately he will feel much obliged to thee.

[7.] Bearing in mind these things therefore, let us have a care (6.) of our own members, and not sharpen the tongue against one another, nor speak words *which may do hurt*<sup>e</sup>, undermining the fame of our neighbour, and as in war and battle, giving and receiving blows. For what after all is the good of fasting or watching, when the tongue is drunken, and feasts itself at a table more unclean than of dog’s flesh ; when it is grown ravening after blood, and pours out filth, and makes the mouth a channel of a sewer, nay rather something more abominable than that ? For that which proceeds from thence pollutes the body : but what comes from the tongue often suffocates the soul.

These things I say, not in fruitless anxiety about those who have an ill report : for they are worthy even of crowns, when they bear what is said nobly ; but in anxiety for you that so speak. For him that is evil reported of falsely, the Scriptures pronounce “ blessed :” but the evil-speaker they

<sup>e</sup> *ἴδητε σατανόνεμού*. Ps. 52. 4. ap. LXX. 51. 4. “ Words of swallowing up in the sea ;” i. e. as St. Augustin on the place intimates, “ words so sinful that

they plunge the swimmer again in the deep, and complete his shipwreck, when by repentance he ought to lay hold of the Cross.”

**HOMIL.** expel from the holy mysteries, or rather from the very outer <sup>1 Ps.</sup> XLIV. precincts. For it is said<sup>1</sup>, *Him that privily speaketh against his neighbour, this man did I chase out.* And he saith too that such an one is unworthy to read the sacred books. For <sup>2 Ps. 50.</sup> *Why, saith He<sup>2</sup>, dost thou preach My righteous laws, and takest My covenant in thy mouth?* Then, annexing the <sup>3 v. 20.</sup> cause, He saith<sup>3</sup>, *Thou satest and spakest against thy brother.* And here indeed he doth not distinctly add, "whether they be things true or false which he speaks." But elsewhere this too makes part of His prohibition: He implying that even though thou speak truths, yet such things are not to be uttered by thee. For, *Judge not*, saith He, *that ye be not condemned*: since he too who spoke evil of the publican was <sup>4 S. Mat.</sup> <sup>7. 1.</sup> condemned, although it was true which he laid to his neighbour's charge.

"What then," you will say, "if any one be daring and polluted, must we not correct him? must we not expose him?" We must both expose and correct: but in the way which I mentioned before. But if thou do it upbraiding him, take heed, lest thine imitation of that Pharisee cause thee to fall into his state. For no advantage accrues from hence; none to thee who speakest, none to him who hears thee, none to the person so accused. But the latter, for his part, becomes more reckless: since as long as he is unobserved, he is sensible of shame; but as soon as he becomes manifest and notorious, he casts off the curb also, which that feeling imposed on him.

And the hearer will in his turn be yet more injured. For whether he be conscious to himself of good deeds, he becomes puffed and swoln up with the accusation brought against another; or of faults, he then becomes more eager for iniquity.

Thirdly, the speaker too himself will both incur the bad opinion of him that fears him, and will provoke God to more anger against himself.

Wherefore, I beseech you, let us cast from us every word that is unsavoury. If there be any thing good unto edification, this let us speak.

But hast thou a fancy to avenge thyself on the other person? Why then punish thyself instead of him? Nay,

do thou, who art so earnestly seeking redress from those <sup>1 Cor.</sup> who have annoyed thee, avenge thyself as Paul recommended <sup>16. 24.</sup> to take vengeance. *If thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink*<sup>1</sup>. But if thou do not so, but only plot<sup>1</sup> <sup>Rom.</sup> <sup>12. 20.</sup> against him, thou pointest the sword against thyself.

Wherefore if that other speak evil, answer him with praises and commendations. For so wilt thou be able both to take vengeance on him, and wilt deliver thyself from evil surmising. Since he that feels pain at hearing ill of himself, is thought to be so affected because of some consciousness of evil: but he that laughs what is said to scorn, exhibits a most unquestionable token of his not being conscious to himself of any evil thing.

Seeing then that thou profitest neither thine hearer, nor thyself, nor him that is accused, and dost but point thy sword at thine own self, even from such considerations do thou learn more soberness. For one ought indeed to be moved by the thought of the kingdom of heaven, and of what pleases God: but since thou art of grosser disposition, and bitest like a wild beast, hereby even be thou instructed; that these arguments having corrected thee, thou mayest be able to order thyself simply from consideration of what pleases God; and having come to be above every passion, mayest obtain the heavenly blessings:—which may God grant us all to obtain, through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and His mercy towards mankind; with Whom, to the Father, and the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, honour, now, and henceforth, and unto everlasting ages. Amen.



# INDEX OF TEXTS.

---

## GENESIS.

2, 5.	vii. 8.
7.	xli. 6.
23.	xvii. 4. xxvi. 3.
24.	xxxiii. 5. xxxiv. 5.
3, 4.	vii. 9.
16.	xix. 2. xxvi. 3. xxxvii. 1.
19.	xlii. 2.
4, 9.	xliv. 5.
12.	xxx. 8.
12. 14.	vii. 9.
11, 1.	xxxiv. 7.
12, 16.	xxxv. 10.
17.	i. 3.
13, 8.	i. 5. xxxv. 10.
9.	xxv. 4.
14, 8.	xxxv. 10.
21—24.	i. 5.
23.	xxxiv. 10.
18, 8.	xxxv. 10.
27.	i. 4.
19, 17.	xxv. 5.
2, 24.	xxxiii. 5.
23, 6.	xxxv. 10.
2, 24.	xxxv. 10.
25, 27.	xxxiii. 8.
27, 13, &c.	xxxiii. 2.
29, 20.	xxxiii. 2.
31, 38.	xxxiii. 8.
37, 14.	xxv. 4.
39, 8, &c.	xxxii. 13.
47, 9.	xxix. 7.

## EXODUS.

1, 2.	i. 4.
3, 2.	xxxviii. 4.
6.	xxix. 7.
16.	xxxvii. 1.
12, 4.	xv. 7.
16, 20.	xl. 5.
17, 4.	v. 9.
18, 24.	i. 4.
19, 10. 20.	ix. 1.
17.	xxv. 5.
23, 4. 5.	xliv. 5.
32, 32.	xxv. 4. xxxiii. 5. 8.

## LEVITICUS.

18, 6.	xxxiv. 6.
--------	-----------

## NUMBERS.

12, 3.	i. 4.
14, 10.	v. 9.
31, 8. 11. 15. 16.	xxiii. 4.

## DEUTERONOMY.

17, 7.	xvi. 3.
22, 5.	xxvi. 4.
9.	xxi. 5.
28, 23.	xxxix. 13.
32, 15.	xxxix. 17.
21.	xxiv. 6.

## JOSHUA.

7.	xi. 9.
----	--------

## 1 SAMUEL.

20, 30.	xxxiii. 2.
---------	------------

## 2 SAMUEL.

24, 17.	xxv. 4.
---------	---------

## 1 KINGS.

19, 10.	v. 9.
22, 23.	xxix. 1.

## 2 KINGS.

5, 26.	xv. 3.
6, 5—7.	iv. 5.
8, 13.	ix. 9.
22, 8.	vii. 6.

## 2 CHRONICLES.

34, 14.	vii. 6.
---------	---------

JOB.		ECCLESIASTES.	
1, 21.	x. 5. xxviii. 4. xli. 9.	1, 2.	xi. 2.
2, 6.	xv. 4.	12, 13.	xxix. 9.
10.	xxviii. 5. xxxiv. 10. xxxviii. 8.		
21.	xli. 19.		
5, 13.	x. 3.	CANTICLES.	
31, 31.	xxiv. 7.	8, 6.	xxxiii. 9.
32.	xxxiv. 10.		
PSALMS.		ISAIAH.	
2, 8.	xxxix. 11.	1, 17.	xxiii. 6.
6, 7.	xv. 10.	18.	viii. 8.
15, 4.	xxix. 9.	19.	xiv. 5.
16, 10.	xxxviii. 4.	26.	xli. 6.
18, 45.	xv. 10.	5, 4.	ii. 9.
19, 1.	ii. 9.	7, 14.	xli. 6.
5.	xxiv. 7.	22, 13. 14.	xl. 4.
22, 16.	xxxviii. 2.	40, 6.	xxix. 9.
27, 1.	xli. 9.	23.	iv. 4.
36, 6.	xxix. 7.	41, 22. 23.	xxxii. 3.
37, 1. 2.	xv. 12.	43, 26.	xi. 4. xxiii. 6.
20.	xxxix. 13.	44, 27.	xxxiv. 10.
38, 5.	xliv. 5.	46, 4.	xxxix. 8.
39, 7.	x. 6.	50, 4.	vii. 6.
43, 4.	ii. 2.	52, 7.	xiii. 6.
45, 8.	xx. 6.	15.	vii. 6. xxxviii. 3.
49, 16.	xxix. 9.	53, 8. 10. 11.	xxxviii. 4.
20.	ix. 10.	57, 17.	xxiii. 6.
50, 16. 20.	xliv. 7.	17. 18.	viii. 8.
21.	xvi. 8.	64, 4.	vii. 6.
51, 6.	xliv. 5.		
17.	i. 4.		
52, 4.	xliv. 7.	JEREMIAH.	
55, 23.	xvi. 11.	1, 6.	xxix. 2.
63, 1.	ii. 2.	6, 10.	xxiii. 6.
68, 5.	xli. 9.	7, 17. 18.	viii. 8.
71, 7.	xxxvi. 2.	8, 4.	xxiii. 6.
73, 27.	viii. 7.	10, 11.	xx. 5.
78, 24.	xxxiv. 10.	15, 19.	iii. 9.
86, 17.	xxxvi. 2.		
90, 2.	xxxix. 8.	EZEKIEL.	
94, 11.	x. 3.	3, 15.	xxix. 2.
101, 5.	xliv. 7.	9, 8.	xxxiii. 5.
102, 25.	iv. 4.	16, 4.	xxxix. 17.
27.	xxxix. 8.	21. 22.	xxvi. 5.
107, 27.	xliv. 5.	20, 25.	vii. 9.
110, 1.	xx. 6.		
2.	iv. 10.	DANIEL.	
111, 8.	xxi. 10.	2, 47.	xxxvi. 3.
119, 89.	xxxix. 8.	3, 17.	xviii. 6.
120, 5.	xxxiii. 5.	17. 18.	xx. 12.
137, 1.	xxxiii. 5.	28.	xviii. 5.
139, 12.	xi. 6.	4, 27.	xxiii. 6.
14.	x. 6.	7, 9.	xv. 10.
21.	xxxiii. 5.	14.	xxxix. 6.
144, 4.	xii. 9.		
PROVERBS.			
10, 3.	xvi. 11.		
11, 26.	xxxix. 13.		
14, 29. 31.	xxxiii. 1.		
19, 17.	xv. 15.		

	<b>HOSEA.</b>	5, 40. 46. 47. 6, 14. 23. 24. 25. 33. 7, 1. 3. 1. 6. 12. 22. 22, 23.	xvi. 9. xlii. 5. xxiii. 6. xxiii. 8. i. 2. xlii. 5. xv. 15. xi. 1. xliv. 7. xii. 2. vii. 3. <b>JOEL.</b> 2, 28. xxvi. 4.
	<b>JONAH.</b>	8, 20. 9, 5. 13. 16. 10, 9. 10. 16. 27. 38. 34. 39. 32.	xxiv. 8. xl. 2. xxxii. 9. xxxiii. 7. xxxiv. 10. xxi. 4. xxxvi. 1. vii. 2. vii. 16. <b>ZECHARIAH.</b> 12, 10. xxxviii. 3.
	<b>ECCLESIASTICUS.</b>	11, 13. 30. 12, 25. 29. 36. 38. 40. 42. 45. 13, 17. 15, 11. 16, 18. 17, 20. 18, 7. 15. 33. 19, 9. 21. 27. 29. 19, 9. 21. 27. 29. 33. 19, 9. 21. 27. 29. 20, 16. 23. 26. 26. 27. 22, 1. 29. 37. 39. 23, 2. 24, 14. 28. 25, 12. 21. 34. 41. 42. 46. 26, 13. 41. 27, 41. 42. 28, 18. 20.	xxxii. 2. xiv. 7. xxxi. 7. xxxix. 12. vii. 16. xxxiv. 10. xxviii. 4. xvi. 5. xlivi. 5. xxi. 2. xx. 1. vi. 6. vii. 18. xxix. 5. xxxii. 7. xxvii. 3. xliv. 5. ix. 10. xix. 4. xxxii. 8. xxxiv. 10. x. 5. vii. 18. xxxviii. 6. xxxii. 10. xxxii. 10. xii. 2. xv. 6. xvii. 4. xxxii. 11. xxi. 11. vi. 6. xxiv. 7. xxx. 9. xlili. 6. xxx. 9. xlili. 7. xvi. 5. x. 6. xxi. 11. ix. 1. vi. 6. xviii. 6. iv. 3. xxxix. 11. vi. 6.
	<b>SONG OF THE THREE CHILDREN.</b>	ver. 6. 10. xviii. 6.	
	<b>HISTORY OF SUSANNAH.</b>	ver. 52. xv. 10.	
	<b>BEL AND THE DRAGON.</b>	ver. 27. xxiv. 7. xxxviii. 4.	
	<b>ST. MATTHEW.</b>	2, 23. 3, 15. 5, 2. 16. 22. 24. 28. 25. 28. 32.	vii. 6, note xxxviii. 3. xlii. 5. vi. 8. xlii. 5. xix. 4. vii. 16. xlii. 5. xix. 4.

## INDEX OF TEXTS.

	<b>ST. MARK.</b>		
1, 24.	xxix. 3.	17, 19.	xxxviii. 3.
9, 44. 46. 48.	ix. 1.	18, 36.	vii. 17.
10, 11.	xix. 4.	19, 9.	vii. 5.
43.	xii. 2.	12.	v. 10.
16, 9.	xxxviii. 5.	21.	xli. 3.
		27.	x. 5.
		37.	xxxviii. 3.
		20, 5.	vii. 6.
		29.	vi. 5.
	<b>ST. LUKE.</b>	21, 14.	xxxviii. 5.
7, 37.	vi. 6.	15.	xxxii. 11.
9, 49.	viii. 2.	16.	xxxii. 10.
55.	xxxiii. 5.		
14, 11.	i. 5.		
23.	ii. 9.		
16, 18.	xix. 4.		
21.	x. 6.		
25.	xx. 12.	2, 13.	xxxvi. 3.
17, 5.	xxix. 5.	17.	xxvi. 4.
10.	xxii. 3.	24.	xxiv. 7.
22.	xxi. 2.	37.	xi. 9.
18, 13. 14.	viii. 8.	3, 6.	xv. 13.
22, 35.	iii. 8.	12.	x. 5. xxxv. 8.
23, 34.	vii. 5.	24.	vii. 6.
		4, 13.	iii. 8.
		32.	xv. 14. xxi. 11. xxiv. 4.
		32. 35.	vi. 8.
	<b>ST. JOHN.</b>	5, 15.	vi. 1.
1, 13.	v. 4. 30.	6, 1.	xxi. 11.
29.	xxxviii. 3. xxxix. 4.	2.	iii. 6.
2, 19.	xvii. 2. xli. 3.	8, 3.	xiii. 6.
3, 5.	xl. 1.	28.	xxxvi. 9.
8.	xxix. 6.	9, 26.	xxii. 6.
20.	viii. 4.	10, 34. 35.	viii. 4.
5, 17.	xxxix. 6.	12, 25.	iii. 6.
19.	xvii. 2.	13, 12.	v. 2.
21.	xxix. 6. xxxix. 10.	14, 13. 14.	xxxv. 8.
6, 31.	xxxiv. 10.	16, 14.	xv. 14.
46.	xxxiv. 4.	17.	xxix. 3.
53.	xl. 1.	30.	xi. 9.
7, 5.	xxi. 3.	17, 28.	x. 6.
28.	vii. 5.	31.	xxxiv. 10.
8, 19.	vii. 5.	34.	v. 2.
46.	xxxviii. 3. .	18, 10.	Arg. i.
56.	viii. 8.	24. 28.	iii. 7.
9, 6.	iv. 5.	19, 12.	v. 2.
39.	xxvii. 3.	19.	vi. 1.
10, 18.	xvii. 2.	20, 34.	Arg. i.
11, 16.	v. 7.	21, 9.	xx. 12. xl. 6.
42.	xxxix. 10.	26, 2.	xxvi. 4.
12, 24.	xli. 2.	28.	xxxiii. 7.
13, 19.	xxxii. 3.	28, 3. 5.	xiii. 6.
35.	xxxii. 10. 14.	20.	xxxiii. 3.
14, 21.	viii. 7.		
29.	xxxii. 3.		
30.	xxxviii. 3.		
15, 13.	xxxii. 8.		
15.	vii. 12.		
16.	xx. 3.	1, 8.	xxxvii. 2.
16, 4.	xxxii. 3.	26.	xxvi. 5.
5. 6.	v. 7.	2, 5.	xxxiv. 10.
11.	xxxviii. 3.	5, 10.	iii. 5.
12.	v. 7.	20.	xxvii. 3.
15.	xxxix. 10.	21.	ix. 6.

**ROMANS.**

1, 8.	xxxvii. 2.
26.	xxvi. 5.
2, 5.	xxxiv. 10.
5, 10.	iii. 5.
20.	xxvii. 3.
21.	ix. 6.

6, 4.	xl. 2.	4, 18. 21.	ii. 7.
7.	xi. 5. xxxix. 12.	19.	xliii. 5.
19.	xxiv. 1.	5, 1.	xxxvi. 1.
8, 8. 9.	xlii. 2.	2.	Arg. 2.
11.	xli. 6.	12.	xxv. 2.
24.	xxxiv. 5.	6, 2.	xi. 2.
27.	vii. 7. xi. 5.	7. 8.	xxvi. 1.
32.	iii. 5.	9.	ix. 1. xvi. 8.
38.	xxxii. 9.	9. 10.	xxxvii. 3.
39.	xxii. 6.	10.	xvi. 8.
9, 3.	xxv. 4. xxxiii. 2. 5.	13.	xiii. 6. xxiii. 2.
5.	xx. 6.	19. 20.	x. 6.
20.	xxix. 6.	20.	xxvi. 1.
10, 1.	xxxiii. 5.	25.	xvi. 9.
3.	i. 4.	7, 1.	Arg. 3.
11, 1. 2. 11.	vii. 5.	4.	xxxiii. 3.
13.	xxix. 4.	8.	xix. 3.
14.	xxxii. 7. xxxiii. 5.	9.	xix. 3.
29.	ii. 8.	11.	xix. 4.
12, 4—8.	xxix. 1.	23.	xvii. 1.
15.	xxxiii. 4.	28.	xix. 7.
20.	xliv. 7.	28. 32.	xxxvi. 3.
21.	xvii. 1.	8, 8.	xiii. 2. xxv. 2.
13, 3.	ix. 1.	13.	xiii. 6.
14.	xiii. 7.	9, 2.	Arg. 3.
14, 10.	xi. 3. xx. 1.	13.	xliii. 3.
12.	xxi. 11.	15.	xxxii. 14.
15.	xx. 10.	18.	xxxii. 14.
21.	xiii. 6.	24.	xxx. 1.
15, 3.	xxiv. 6.	27.	xiii. 7.
8.	viii. 5.	10, 12.	xxxvii. 8.
19.	vi. 8. xiii. 6.	15.	xxvi. 5.
21.	vii. 6.	24.	xxxiii. 3.
25.	xliii. 1.	32.	xxvi. 2.
16, 7.	xliv. 3.	33.	xxiv. 6.
<b>1 CORINTHIANS.</b>			
1, 3.	xvii. 2.	11, 4.	xii. 14.
11.	xv. 1. xxvii. 2.	7.	xxvi. 5.
30.	xx. 5.	14.	xxxvii. 1.
2, 3.	xxiv. 1.	14. 15.	xxx. 1.
11.	xxix. 6. xxxiv. 4.	16.	xxvi. 2. xxxvii. 3.
11. 12.	vii. 7.	22.	xxxvi. 9.
16.	vii. 6.	32.	xv. 4. xvi. 2.
3, 1.	Arg. 3. ii. 4.	33.	xxxvii. 3.
1. 2.	Arg. 3.	12, 4.	xx. 7.
5. 6.	x. 4.	7.	xxix. 1.
6.	v. 4.	27.	xviii. 1. xxvi. 2.
9.	x. 4.	13, 3.	xxv. 5.
10.	ix. 5.	9.	vii. 3.
11.	xxi. 3.	12.	xx. 8.
13.	xxx. 9.	14, 7.	xxxvi. 6.
18.	xxvi. 1.	26. 29.	ii. 4.
22.	viii. 2.	29.	xxxii. 2.
22. 23.	xxvi. 3.	33.	xxxvii. 2.
4, 3. 6.	Arg. 3.	15, 8.	xi. 2. xxii. 2.
4.	xxxix. 5.	10.	x. 5. xxxii. 14.
6.	v. 4. xxx. 3.	31.	x. 5.
7.	x. 5.	51.	vii. 2.
8.	Arg. 2.	16, 10. 11.	xiv. 1.
11.	vi. 8. xvi. 11. xxi. 3. 7.	15.	ii. 4.
17.	xxxvii. 2. xliv. 1.	<b>2 CORINTHIANS.</b>	
18.	xxvi. 1. xxviii. 3.	1, 11.	xli. 8.
		17.	xliii. 5.

## INDEX OF TEXTS.

2, 7.            xxxviii. 8.  
       8.            xv. 9.  
       11.          xxxviii. 1.  
       3, 10.        xxxiv. 3.  
       4, 3.          vii. 2.  
       5, 7.          vi. 5.  
       10.          xxxix. 4.  
       21.          v. 4. xxxviii. 3.  
       6, 10.        xv. 13.  
       9, 5. 15.      xlvi. 4.  
       10, 5.        ix. 6.  
       10.          xi. 2. xxxv. 11.  
 11, 8.          xxv. 3.  
       8, 9.          xxi. 7.  
       14, 15.       xxvii. 3.  
       15.          xvi. 5.  
       20.          xxi. 6.  
       24, 25.       xiii. 6.  
       27.          xv. 13.  
       29.          xxxii. 14.  
       30, 32.       vi. 2.  
 12, 9.          v. 2.  
       10.          vi. 2.  
 12, 13.        ii. 4.  
       12.          xxi. 2.  
       20.          xxi. 6.  
       21.          xi. 4.  
 13, 3.          ii. 7.  
       5.          xxviii. 1.  
       14.          xx. 7.

## GALATIANS.

1, 8.          xxvii. 3. xxxii. 9.  
 2, 6.          xxxix. 1.  
       8.          xxix. 4.  
       9.          xxxix. 1.  
 3, 13.        xxviii. 3.  
       28.        xii. 12. xl. 6.  
 4, 13, 14.     vi. 2.  
 5, 2.          xxvii. 3.  
       4.          xxvii. 3.  
       10.        xxviii. 2. xl. 4.  
 6, 5.          xliv. 5.  
       8.          xlvi. 2.

## EPHESIANS.

2, 8.          i. 1.  
       15.        xx. 5.  
 3, 8.          vii. 4.  
       10.        viii. 2.  
 4, 5.          ix. 5.  
       11, 12.     viii. 2.  
       14.        xxxviii. 1.  
       17.        xv. 1.  
 5, 1.          xiii. 5.  
       4.          vii. 16.  
       23.        xxvi. 3.  
       25, 33.      xix. 2.  
 6, 1—4.       xxvi. 6.  
       12.        xxxix. 6.

## PHILIPPIANS.

1, 29.        xxxiii. 7.  
 2, 6, 7, 8, 9.    xxxix. 7.  
       7.          iv. 2.  
       10.        xxxii. 6.  
       12.        xiv. 1. xxviii. 3.  
       15.        iv. 11.  
       18.        xiv. 1.  
       22.        xliv. 1.  
 3, 2.        xxvii. 3.  
       4—7.        xxxv. 7.  
       6.          viii. 4.  
       19.        xvii. 1. xxxiv. 10.  
       21.        xxxix. 9. xl. 2.  
 4, 4.        xv. 6.  
       6.          ii. 1.

## COLOSSIANS.

1, 6.        xxxvii. 2.  
       24.        xiv. 7.  
 2, 15.        xxiv. 7. xxxviii. 3.  
 3, 4.        vii. 19.  
       6, 7.        xv. 1.  
       10.        ix. 10.

## 1 THESSALONIANS.

1, 8.        xxxvii. 2.  
 2, 19.        xxxiii. 3.  
 4, 4, 5.        xv. 1.  
       18.        ix. 5.  
 5, 11.        ix. 5.  
       14.        xxxiii. 5.  
       20, 21.      xxix. 5.

## 2 THESSALONIANS.

1, 9.        ix. 1.  
 3, 14.        xvi. 2. xxxiii. 6.

## 1 TIMOTHY.

1, 9.        xvi. 9.  
       12, 13.      xxxviii. 7.  
       13, 16.      xxii. 6.  
 2, 1.        xxxix. 5.  
       6.          vi. 1.  
       9.          xxvi. 6.  
       14.        xxvi. 3.  
 3, 7.        xvi. 2.  
 4, 2.        xxvii. 3.  
       13, 14.      xxix. 5.  
       14.        xxxii. 2.  
 5, 6.        xxvii. 7. xxxix. 15, 17.  
       17.        iii. 6. xxix. 5. xxxii. 2.  
 6, 1, 2.      xix. 5.  
       8.          xiii. 7. xvii. 1. xxxv. 9.  
       9.          xiii. 7. xxxvi. 3.  
       10.        xxiii. 8. xxxi. 7. xl. 4.

## INDEX OF TEXTS.

637

2 TIMOTHY.

- |         |             |
|---------|-------------|
| 1, 3.   | viii. 4.    |
| 6.      | xxix. 4.    |
| 2, 4.   | xlii. 5.    |
| 9.      | xiii. 6.    |
| 10.     | xxxiii. 3.  |
| 12.     | ii. 8.      |
| 17.     | xxxviii. 1. |
| 24, 25. | xxxiii. 5.  |
| 4, 5.   | xxix. 4.    |

## HEBREWS.

- |         |             |
|---------|-------------|
| 1, 2.   | vii. 4.     |
| 4, 7.   | xxxviii. 8. |
| 12.     | xi. 6.      |
| 6, 1.   | viii. 1.    |
| 9.      | viii. 1.    |
| 8, 13.  | xv. 10.     |
| 10, 31. | ix. 3.      |
| 11, 1.  | xxxiv. 5.   |

- |            |             |
|------------|-------------|
| 11, 24—26. | i. 4.       |
| 26.        | xxv. 4.     |
| 12, 4.     | xxiv. 1.    |
| 12.        | xxxviii. 8. |
| 14.        | ix. 1.      |
| 13, 4.     | xii. 11.    |

JAMES.

- 4, 6. i. 4.

1 ST. PETER.

- 2, 11. x. 5.  
3, 15. iii. 8.

## REVELATIONS.

- 3, 20. xxvii. 7.



# INDEX.

---

## A

*Abraham*, his trial in Egypt, i. 3; his humility, i. 4; his unselfish character, xxv. 4; a pattern for husbands, xxvi. 7; his hospitality, xxxiv. 10; his overcoming vainglory, xxxv. 10.

*Abdalom*, a popular character, i. 3.

*Accommodation* falsely ascribed to the Apostles, Arg. 2. note.

*Actors*, debarred from the Sacraments, xii. 10, 159.

*Acclamations in churches*, iv. 11; xiii. 5.

*Adam*, rationalized, v. 3; inference from his punishment, ix. 2; no man eternally condemned for his sin, xvii. 4; why made the common head of mankind, xxxiv. 5.

*Africa*, its Church of Apostolic foundation, vi. 8.

*Ahab*, his greediness, xxxiv. 10.

*Alms-giving*, what it is, xxi. 10; scanty, reproved, ib. excuses for not giving answered, ib. alms of others will not save us, ib. a blessing to the givers more than the receivers, ib. xlivi. 3; sure to be repaid in due time, xv. 14; subject of, why introduced at the end of the Epistle, xlivi. 1; appropriate on Sundays, ib. 2; the duty to be enforced at all hazards, ib. 3; *alms* to be laid in proportion to our gains, ib. to be laid up in a chest at home, ib. 7; no man to give less than a tenth of his income, ib. practised by the Jews, ib.

*Amulets*, use of them blamed, iv. 11; xlivi. 7.

*Ananias* and *Sapphira*, by covetousness lost all, xv. 14.

- *Anatomy*, mysterious like Theology, iv. 2.

*Antioch*, these discourses preached at, xxi. 9, 290; Church of nourished many poor widows and strangers, xxi. 11.

*Anomeans*, their notions of divine knowledge, xxxiv. 4.

*Apollos*, older than Timothy, xliv. 1.

*The Apostles*, humanly speaking, insignificant persons, iii. 8; summary of the argument from the success of their preaching, iv. 10; credible from their representations of themselves, iv. 8; argument from their undertaking so great a work, v. 5; from their persisting after our Lord's death, ib. 6; from the change in their presence of mind before and after, 7; from their not preaching as of themselves, 8; from their lingering among the Jews, 9; from their dealings with the Romans, 10; patterns of good stewards, x. 5; difficulties with which they had to contend in preaching the Gospel, vii. 14—18; summary of the argument, ib. 19; received relief from their disciples, xxi. 2, 3; suspected unjustly, ib. 11; contrasted with the philosophers, xxxv. 8; all equal, xxxix. 1.

*Apostolate*, a perilous office, xxi. 4; xxii. 1.

*Aristippus*, sank all his goods in the sea, xxxv. 8.

*λεχὴ ἀριστίππου*, not spoken of the Son, xxxix. 9.

*Artizans*, should know the ordinary evidences of Christianity for the good of the heathen among whom they live, v. 11; analogy between their education and that of Christians, xiv. 6.

*Astrology*, among Christians, iv. 11.

*St. Augustine*, xv. 2, note; xiv. 4, note.

## B.

*Babylonish dragon*, death compared to, xxiv. 7; xxxviii. 5; furnace, xviii. 5; type of Satan's power, ib. three children in it a pattern to Christians, ib. 5, 6; and xx. 12.

*Balaam*, God wrought by him though a bad man, viii. 2; his evil counsel, xlivi. 4, 315.

**Baptism**, its necessity, iii. 6; its connection with the remission of sins, iii. 5, and note; vii. 19; xl. 2; and so a pledge of our resurrection, ib. great things spoken of it, vii. 2; the laver of regeneration, vii. 19; of no avail to us without good works, xxiii. 3.

**Baptized for the dead**, xxiii. 3; xl. 2.

**Beggars**, led to imposture by the inhumanity of others, xxi. 8.

**Bereavement**, how we may learn to bear it, x. 6; xli. 7. See Mourning.

- **Body**, its constitution not for evil, but good, xxii. 7; not evil in itself, xxiii. 2, 311; not the body, but the mind, the cause of sin, xxxix. 16; ruined by luxury, ib. like a walking sepulchre in such, ib. in what respect more spiritual in the next world, xli. 5; an example of the Church, xxx. 1; its members both one, and many, ib. 2—5.

**Body of Christ**, reverence due to It, xxiv. 7; Its mighty power, and victory over death, 8; honoured by the wise men, ib.

**Body and Blood of the Lord**, to be understood spiritually, not carnally, xxiii. 3, 312; see Bp. Taylor, vol. x. 86. we partake of in the Eucharist, xxiv. 3, 7.

**Brethren of the Lord**, freed from their first unbelief, yet attained not to the Apostles, xxi. 3.

**Burning bush**, variously interpreted by the Fathers without contradiction, xxxviii. 4, note.

### C.

**Cain**, a slave to envy, xix. 6.

**Catechumens**, not allowed to be present at the Communion, but to hear the Scriptures read, xxvi. 8, note.

**Catholic truth**, to be learned by universal consent, xxxvii. 2.

**Cerinthian heretics**, how they perverted the Scriptures, xl. 1, note.

**Celsus**, a witness to the Scriptures, vi. 6, 73.

**Charity**, the way of gifts, xxxii. 5; unites men when gifts divide them, ib. greater than all gifts, 6, 7; more than alms and martyrdom, 8; the way to perfection, 10; would remove all evils, if fully practised, ib. superior to other virtues in having no attendant evils, ib. the great sign of love to God, ib. turns all evil to good, 12; contrasted with sensual passion, ib. Joseph an example of,

13; Paul to be admired for rather than his miracles, 14; our Lord most perfect pattern of, ib. its various excellencies depicted with a painter's art, xxxiii. 1; centre in long-suffering, ib. the qualities of charity, ib. keeps all else in due proportion, ib. examples of in our Lord, Jonathan, Rebecca, ib. leads to the same result with true self-love, 3; prevents unkind thoughts, ib. makes men angels, ib. is felt towards heathens and wicked men, 5; more perfect under the Gospel, ib. more attractive than miracles, 6; S. Paul before Agrippa an example of, 7; its power to teach courage, moderation, chastity, and all virtues, 8, 9; S. Paul's delineation of suited to correct the Corinthians' errors, xxxiv. 1; more lasting than faith and hope, 3; many hindrances to the exercise of, 5; the final cause of the relation between the sexes, and of consanguinity, society, commerce, and language, 5, 6, 7; also of government, ib. *charity doth not behave herself unseemly*, explained, xxxiii. 2; exemplified, ib. See Alms-giving, and Love.

**Chanting**, used in churches, xxxvi. 9.

**Cheerfulness**, how to be nourished, xxxviii. 10.

**Chest for the poor**, xlivi. 7.

**Christ**, the centre of unity to the Church, i. 2; His Presence implied in the word Revelation, ii. 6; His glory enhanced by His sufferings, iv. 3; how made unto us wisdom and righteousness, v. 4; the bond of unity, viii. 7; the Christian's Foundation, ix. 4; "is God's," how to be understood, x. 4; His indwelling presence in S. Paul, xiii. 6; present in the sentence of excommunication, xv. 4; the head of Christians only, xxvi. 2; His inferiority to the Father asserted by heretics from 1 Cor. xi. 3. and refuted, ib. 2, 3; *ἰουσίας* with the Father, ib. 3; subject to the Father, but as a son, as God, ib. *ἴουσίας* and *εὐαγγελίας*, ib. how the head of the Church, ib. argument from the nature of the woman's subjection to the man to shew that Christ is of the same nature with the Father, ib. His condescension to Judas, xxvii. 4; our perfect pattern of charity, xxxii. 14; xxxiii. 2; His love to us, xxiv. 4; has the sum of knowledge, xxxiv. 3; left some things voluntary, xxi. 8.

**Christians**, to abide in their calling, xix. 5; cannot be slaves, 6; have almost all fallen from grace, xxxiii. 6.

*Church*, a stronger ground of union, than nations are of separation, i. 2; both one and many, xxx. 1; a manifold person, xli. 8; its unity in the Spirit, xxx. 2; wounded when its members transgress, xv. 1; its fallen state, xxxvi. 7; certain places used as churches in the Apostles' times, xxvii. 4, 375; not to be made a common place, ib. irreverent behaviour in them common, xxxvi. 8; motives for reverence, ib. irreverence contrasted with men's behaviour in the theatre, ib. parts of the building in which the poor were placed, xxx. 7, note; chanting used in, xxxvi. 9. See Unity.

*Church-allocation*, what, and to whom given, xxi. 11.

*Church-discipline*, to be preceded by mourning and prayer, xv. 2; towards Heathens impossible, xvi. 1; punishments in the Old Testament analogous to it, ib. 3.

*Clergy*, Right of Maintenance, proved by examples, xxi. 3; sanctioned by the Mosaic law, ib. 5; xxii. 1; enforced by the mystical meaning of Mosaical precepts, xxi. 5; by the value of spiritual things, ib. 6; by a comparison of the conduct of schismatics, ib. what kind of men the Clergy ought to be, xxi. 3; evil lives of, no excuse for disobeying their precepts, xxi. 11; often unjustly suspected, ib. must endeavour to save all, though all will not be saved, xxii. 5; must not be discouraged though hearers be disobedient, xxvii. 7. See Ministers.

*Chronology of the LXX*, how differing from the Hebrew, ix. 2.

*Comforts of life*, their ill effect, vi. 8. Community of God's gifts should teach generosity of spirit, x. 7.

*Commerce*, should teach public spirit, x. 7; selfishness incident to, xxxix. 15; contrary to God's intention, ib.

*Communion*, why so called, xxiv. 3.

*Conscience*, when it seems clear, does not therefore justify, xi. 3.

*Condescension* for a brother's sake no degradation, xxii. 6.

*Consolations* under loss of relatives, xli. 9. See Bereavement, Mourning.

*Conversion*, a greater charity than alms, iii. 9; of ordinary persons to the Gospel, a presumption of its truth, v. 1, 2; vi. 6; of the world might be effected without miracles if Christians led holy lives, vi. 8. See Propagation of the Gospel.

*Corinth*, why its inhabitants likely to be proud, Arg. 1; some of that Church

still very holy, ib. 3; ii. 4; the errors of some of them, Arg. ii. 2; their childishness, xiv. 2.

*Cornelius*, v. 11; blessed with knowledge because of his love, xx. 2.

*Counsels of perfection*, xxi. 8; xxi. 3; their use and reward, ib. 4.

*Covetousness*, its brutalizing effect, ix. 9; never rests, xi. 7; blinds men, ib. compared with contentedness, xiv. 8; compared to dropsy, 9; a present hell, ib. compared to leaven, xv. 11; answerable for the impositions of the poor, xxi. 8; its cruelty, ib. folly and evils attending it, xxiii. 8; antidote to it in the creation, ib. found among rich and poor, ib. 322; renders men worse than labourers in the mines, ib. 321; preys both on the living and the dead, xxxv. 12; how to be tamed, ib. is worse than a dream, xxxvi. 10; its unsatiableness, xxxvii. 4; worse than poverty, xxxix. 13; example of its cruelty in a corn-factor, ib. and in men in trade, 15; makes men poor, xl. 5.

*Creed* of the oriental Churches probably alluded to, iii. 5.

*Creation*, analogy between it and redemption, iv. 5; works of, why men told to study them, v. 3.

*Crimes*, some require a life of repentance, xv. 9.

The *Cross*, its glory above reason, iv. 3; seemed contrary to all signs, 5; type of it in time of Elisha, ib. the Cross, not amulets, the true protection of children, xii. 13, 14, and note.

*Cup of blessing*, why so called, xxiv. 3.

*Curiosity* and rash judgment, its inexcusableness, xi. 1.

*Custom*, its exceeding power, vii. 14, 15.

## D.

*David*, his love to his people, xxv. 4; to his rebel son, xxxiii. 4; things spoken of him in the Psalms not spoken of David's person, ib. 5; full of troubles, xxix. 7.

*Day* revealed by fire, the day of judgment, xxx. 9.

*Deacon's office* discharged by S. Paul, iii. 6; commanded silence in the churches, xxxvi. 8, note.

*Democracy*, its evils, xii. 8.

*Democritus* wasted his land out of vanity, xxxv. 8.

*Demons*, by what means supposed to be introduced into men, xxix. 2; why they confessed Christ, and were rebuked, ib. 3.

*Dependency* of man, its final cause, v. 3.

*Despair*, of improvement, never to be indulged in, iii. 9; xi. 9; S. Paul's example, xxii. 6; of forgiveness, viii. 9.

"*Destruction* of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved," what, xv. 4.

*Dice-playing*, not discouraged by the heathen, xii. 9.

*Diogenes*, the Cynic, why he lived in a cask, xxxv. 9.

*Dionysius*, his treatment of Plato, iv. 9.

*Diagoras*, the Atheist, iv. 9.

*Discerning the Lord's Body*, what, xxviii. 2.

*Discipline*, a token of love, xiv. 4.

*Discontent*, progress of, xxxviii. 9.

#### E.

*Elymas* the sorcerer, xiv. 4.

*Emulation*, contrasted with envy, xxxi. 7.

*Envy*, its evils, ib. examples of, ib.

*Ephesus*, mistaken for Corinth in Acts 18. Arg. 1.

*Esau*, rich though unrighteous, xxix. 7; his carnal and cruel disposition, xxxiii. 8.

*Eternal punishment*, doubted of by some, xxi. 9; shewn from history of the Israelites, xxiii. 4, 5; its fearful nature, xxiii. 8.

*Ethiopian Eunuch*, an example of diligent reading of Holy Scripture, xxvi. 9.

*Eucharist*, in it we partake of Christ's Body and Blood, xxiv. 3, 7; by partaking we are the Body of Christ, ib. 3; reverence due to Christ's Body, 6; unworthy partakers of it waste Christ's Blood, xxvii. 6; the Apostles patterns of devotion after receiving it, 7; drunkenness a horrible sin in those who have received, ib. what things inconsistent with a right reception, ib. xxviii. 1; not to be received at festivals only, ib. not to be performed in an unknown tongue, xxxv. 6. See Lord's Supper.

*Euphemism* and the contrary, examples of them in St. Paul, ix. 6.

*Evidences of the Gospel*, should be learned by Christians for the good of the Heathens, v. 10; made up always of signs from heaven, and testimonies from men, vi. 4; best evidence in one sense a good life, iii. 9. See Preparation of the Gospel.

*Evil* not made by God, xiii. 8; encouragement of it sometimes worse than the doing, xxi. 9.

*Excommunication*, xv. 3, 4.

*Expressions* used of God and of ourselves, not to be taken in the same sense, yet not wholly in a different sense, xxvi. 3.

*Extortioners* described, xiii. 7.

*Ezekiel* delayed his message, xxix. 2.

#### F.

*Faith*, best grounded on simplicity, iv. 4; prevails by what would seem arguments against it, 5; its trial excluded by overpowering miracles, vi. 5; *objective*, the same to all, ix. 5; insufficient without perseverance to the end, xxiii. 1, 2.

*Faithful*, do not require reasons, but are content with ordinances, xxvi. 2, 351.

*Fatality*, refuted by experience, ii. 11; xxii. 6, 7.

*Fasting*, commonly within men's power, ix. 3; needed for contention with bad spirits, xiv. 7; nothing without charity, xxv. 3, 342.

*Feasts of Charity*, the origin of the custom, xxviii. 1; abuse of, ib. a banquet after the solemn service of the Communion, ib. five faults in them, 4.

*Fellowship* of Christ relates particularly to his sufferings, ii. 8; *of salt*, what, xxiv. 5, and note.

*Festival*, what it is, xxviii. 1; our whole life festival-day, xv. 6.

*Following after charity*, what, xxxv. 1.

*Forgiveness*, possible to all, many ways of attaining it, xxiii. 6.

*Fornication*, its miserable effect upon the soul, xi. 6; not considered an evil by the heathen, xii. 9; in one sense worse than covetousness, xviii. 2.

*Free-will of man*, a part of God's plan of salvation, ii. 9; complaint of it on the part of Christians, answered, ib. 10; God's purpose in it, xiv. 5; instance of in S. Paul, xxii. 6, 7; things that must be consistent with it, xxvii. 3. See Fatalism.

"*From the dead*," why so often added to the word Resurrection, xxxix. 4.

#### G.

*Games*, heathen, an example to us, xxiii. 1, 2.

*Garments*, men and women not to be dressed in each other's, xxvi. 4, 5.

*Gentile converts*, their weakness, xx. 8.

*Gifts spiritual* of the Corinthians, reconciled with their being carnal, ii. 4; when first granted, xxix. 1; a cause of schism, ib. (comp. Rom. xii. 4;) all from one source, ib. 4; gifts, operations, administrations, all the same thing, ib. from the equality of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, 5; those that had the lesser gifts comforted, 4, 5; gifts of healing and working miracles, their difference, ib. application of the rule about gifts to rich and poor, 7; examples from the Old Testament, ib. why bestowed in various degrees, xxxii. 4; charity the greatest of all gifts, xxxiv. 1; S. Paul a pattern for the right use of, xxxv. 7; directions for using, and checks against the abuse of, xxxvi. 6.

*Gift of prophecy*, difference between it and soothsaying, xxix. 2, 3; its use voluntary, ib. how not for a sign, xxxvi. 2; compared with gift of tongues, ib. its superiority, ib. and 3; directions for the use of, 6.

*Gift of tongues*, its greatness, xxix. 5; why set last, xxxii. 1; why granted first, xxxv. 1; xxxvi. 2; compared with prophecy, but not disparaged, ib. requires an interpreter, xxxv. 4; both to be prayed for, ib. 5; gift of interpretation greatest of all, xxix. 5.

*Glass*, workers in, xvii. 3.

*Gluttony*, a slavish passion, xvii. 1; inconsistent with our being members of Christ, ib. and condemned by the doctrine of the Resurrection, 2; danger of, xxiii. 2; its effects described, especially on the female sex, xxxix. 17, 18.

*God* and *Lord*, applied both to the Father and the Son, xx. 6; God "all in all," what, xxxix. 11.

*Going to law*, a reproach to Christians, xvi. 4; such disputes to be settled within the Church, ib. 6; Christian privileges a reason for not taking legal proceedings, ib. 9; men led to do this by covetousness, ib. the conqueror in such matters is he who yields, ib. 10; reason from our Lord's example, 11.

*Gospel*, its precepts and doctrines unattractive, vii. 16, 17. See Propagation.

*Grace and peace*, how united, i. 3; Grace to whom given, 8; source of all blessings, ii. 3.

*Greek Nation*, its childishness, iv. 11.

## H.

*Hagar*, why taken by Abraham, xxxi.

7; her insulting treatment of her mistress, ib.

*Hearers*, apt to think of other men's duties, not their own, xxvi. 6; no excuse for their sins, ib.

*Heathen*, compassion for, iv. 1; how to be dealt with, ib. 11; xxxiii. 7; *heathen philosophy*, its ill effect on the Corinthians, Arg. 2; why the Apostles had it not, iii. 7; an obstacle to faith, vii. 6; not afterwards disallowed, ib. 8; its proper work, iv. 4; superseded by Faith, ib. this a predicted work of the Gospel, v. 1; vi. 1; in a certain sense a part of God's education of our race, v. 3.

*Hebrew Christians*, in a better state than the Corinthians, viii. 1.

*Helps, governments*, what, xxxii. 3.

*Hell-fire*, eternal, v. 11; ix. 1—3; this hinted in 1 Cor. 3. 15. doctrine of, how to be made use of, xi. 10. See Eternal Punishment.

*Hercules*, alluded to, vi. 3.

*Heresies*, what meant by the term, xxvii. 3; must needs be, ib. do not destroy free will, ib. worse than mere schism, ib.

*Heretical Teachers*, profess to teach more than the Church, Arg. 2. 2. and note.

*High birth* of Christians, v. 4; x. 1.

*Holiness* of the first Christians a kind of sign, vi. 7; the best argument against Infidels, vii. 13; (see Evidence, Propagation;) glorifies God more than his visible works, xviii. 4, 5.

*Horoscope*, in use among the Heathen, iv. 11.

*Human learning* and talent a check to belief, not a disqualification for it, v. 2; *human wisdom*, its weakness, vii. 9; curbed by the Law, ib.

*Humiliation*, must prepare a man for penitence, xi. 4.

*Humility*, its tokens and blessing, i. 4; its origin, ib. 6; exalts to heaven, xl. 6.

*Husbands*, not to beat their wives, xxvi. 6; how to treat them, 8; Abraham a pattern for, 7.

## I.

*Idol sacrifices* shew contempt of God and carelessness of others' good, xxiv. 6; St. Paul's caution respecting them, xxv. 1; idol feasts a way to idolatry, xx. 1.

*Idolatry*, began from Pride, v. 4; principle of argument against it, xx. 4; held by the wiser heathen in a different sense from the vulgar, ib.

*Ignatius*, why called Theophorus, xviii. 3, marg. note.

*Ignorance*, the cause of many sins, vii. 5.

*Image*, which Nebuchadnezzar set up supposed to correspond to what he saw in his dream, xviii. 5, note; of the heavenly, what, xlii. 2.

*Immortality of the soul*, vainly taught by Plato, iv. 6.

*Incest*, its foulness, xv. 2.

*Indians*, early date of their Church, vi. 8.

*Insufficiency of man* to supply his desires, v. 3.

"*I think I have the Spirit of God*," an express claim to inspiration, xix. 4.

### J.

*Jacob*, sought not his own, xxv. 4; poor and in bondage, xxix. 7; naturally timid, 8; his charity overcame shame and mockery, xxxiii. 2.

*James*, ordained by the Lord, and made Bishop of Jerusalem, xxxviii. 5.

*Jeremiah*, excused himself for not delivering his message, xxix. 2.

*Jewish types* of Christian sacraments, xxiii. 3; custom of searching for leaven, xv. 7, note.

*Jews*, pride the cause of their fall, i. 4; their conduct to the Prophets must have been a warning to the Apostles, v. 9; their punishments an earnest of ours, yet ours greater, xxiii. 4, 5; their sins types of ours, ib. 4; causes of their fall, 6; some things in their covenant not typical, but apply to Christ alone, xv. 7; their passover compared to ours, xxxiv. 3.

*Job*, his charity to the poor, xxxiv. 10; his great patience, xvi. 10; xxviii. 4; Satan's tempting of him, ib. 5; his wife's cruelty, ib. his example to mourners, ib.

*Jonathan*, pattern of charity, xxiii. 2.

*Jonah*, sought his own profit, xxv. 4; fled from his duty, xxix. 2.

*Joseph*, a disinterested character, xxv. 4; a slave yet free, xix. 5; his mistress rather a slave, ib. 6; a pattern of charity, xxii. 13.

*Judas*, his commission no plea for the sacrilegious and covetous, xxi. 11, 294.

*Judgment*, rash, of the Corinthians, xi. 1; of others' conduct allowable in respect of definite, but not of indefinite, duties, ib. 3; in respect of their general characters impossible, and

why, 5; false judgment of men in regard to the things of the world, xii. 8, 9.

*Justification*, by giving the Spirit, v. 4; means liberation from sin, xi. 5.

### K.

*Kingdom*, of Christ, how delivered up to the Father, xxxix. 6; twofold, ib. 11.

*Kiss* of peace used at the Holy Eucharist, xliv. 4.

*Knowledge*, is common property, xx. 1; nothing without Charity, 2; imperfect in the present state, 3; in what sense to be done away, xxxiv. 2; of God in the future state, ib. before and after the Gospel compared, ib. 3; impiety of our claiming perfect knowledge, 4; such knowledge possessed by the Spirit and the Son, ib.

### L.

*Law*, used by S. Paul for the Old Testament, xxxvi. 1; *old law* contrasted with the more perfect dispensation of the Gospel, xxii. 1; xxvi. 7; *law of Moses*, mystical meaning of, xxi. 5; *law of nature*, harmonizes with God's law, xxvi. 5; *under the law, without law*, what, xxiii. 5; *law* how the strength of sin, xlii. 4.

*Liberty*, what it is, xxv. 2.

*Life*, a good, preparation for faith, viii. 3; of primitive Christians, compared with those of later times, vi. 8.

*Lord's Supper*, preparation for, xxiv. 7, and note; partakers of, one body with Christ, 8; prepared us for the next world, ib. not to partake of is famine and death, ib. to partake of unworthy dangerous, ib. a common banquet not a private meal, xxvii. 4; the remembrance of it enough to move a heart of stone, ib. 6; a sacrifice of thanksgiving, ib. 5; the presence of Christ at it the highest motive for reverence, ib. 6; xxxvi. 8, and note: preceded the feast of Charity, xxvii. 1. See Eucharist.

*Lot*, his want of generosity and disinterestedness, xxv. 4; xxvi. 7.

*Love*, of Christ to us, xxiv. 4; of the primitive Church greater than ours, ib. love to Christ casts out all sin, xliv. 3.

*Luxury*, examples of, xxi. 10; xl. 5; how it unfits for Heaven, xlii. 5.

## M.

- Macedonian controversy*, alluded to by S. Chrysostom, xxix. 6, 405, note.  
*Magic*, the suspicion of it in miracles obviated, vi. 3; *magical verses* quoted, xxix. 2.  
*Magnanimity*, true and false, i. 5.  
*Man*, first and second, why those expressions used, xlvi. 1; *men*, made to depend on each other, xxv. 5; i. 7; how superior to women, xxvi. 5.  
*Manes*, his system, vii. 8, and note.  
*Marcionite way* of perverting the expression "baptized for the dead," xl. 1.  
*Marriage*, heathen ceremonies at, condemned, xii. 11, 12; *mixed*, rules for, xix. 4; reasons for continuance in, ib. *second marriages*, when unlawful, ib. 7; with kindred forbidden, ib. in order to lead us to charity, xxxiv. 6. See *Husbands and Wives*.  
*Mary*, the sister of Lazarus, vi. 1;  
*Mary*, the first who saw Christ, xxviii. 5.  
*Maranatha*, meaning of, xliv. 3; why used in this place, ib.  
*Manifestation of the Spirit*, what, xxix. 5.  
*Marcellas* of Ancyra, his heresy, xxxix. 6, note.  
*Martyrs*, compared with Socrates, iv. 7; their astonishing tortures, ib. *martyrdom*, a name appropriate to our Lord's death, vi. 1; nothing without love, xxv. 5, 347.  
*Matthew*, his immediate cure, xi. 9.  
*Materialists*, v. 4.  
*Mercy* of God no plea for our negligence, xxiii. 7; a cause why men should fear, ix. 2, 3.  
*Merchant*, portraiture of a generous one, x. 8; for the contrary, see *Commerce*.  
*Merit*, of human works altogether disclaimed, i. 1; ii. 3; this disclaimer involved in the doctrine of Baptismal Regeneration, ib.  
*Mind*, not the body, cause of sin, xvii. 5; xxxi. 2. See *Body*.  
*Miners*, their misery, xxiii. 8.  
*Ministers*, for the sake of the people, x. 4; not to grow weary of repeating plain truths, vi. 9; their unworthiness does not hinder the effect of the Sacraments, viii. 3; only stewards, and not to be puffed up by their stewardship, x. 5.  
*Miracles* visible, why they ceased, vi. 5; may be wrought by bad men, viii. 2; why inferior to prophecy and teaching, xxxii. 3.  
*Misquotation* of Scripture, danger of, xxxiv. 9.

*Mistaken way* of defending the Gospel, iii. 8, 31.

*Moses*, with Jethro, an example of humility, i. 4; also in joining his oppressed people, ib. was stoned by the Jews, v. 9; more famous for love to others than for miracles, xxv. 4.

*Mourners*, hired at funerals, xii. 14.

*Mourning* not to be excessive, ib. xxviii. 4, and note; for others' sins, xv. 2; *for the dead* if excessive, against analogy, Providence, and Scriptural examples, xli. 7. See *Consolations, Bereavements*.

*Monks*, an order of (perhaps) married, xxx. 7, note.

*Mutilation* of the body, punished even by the Heathen, xxxi. 2.

*Mysteries*, why the Gospel so called, vii. 2; and the Sacraments, ib. exclude human explanations, ib. how the preaching them consists with reserve, 3; how believers and unbelievers look upon them, ib. danger of making them too cheap, ib.

## N.

*Names of men*, a token of unsound doctrine, i. 1; *of apostles*, sectarian use of, iii. 3; *of Paul, Apollos, and Cephas* used by way of supposition for Teachers not named, iii. 4; *of Christ*, supersedes all human names, i. 1; why continually repeated, ii. 7; used schismatically, iii. 5; *names given to children*, ought to be those of the saints, xii. 13.

*Narthex*, what part of the Church, xxx. 7, note.

*Nature*, its corruption no excuse for sin, ii. 11; another name for God, xxvi. 4.

*Necessity*, God allows men to make a virtue of it, x. 5.

*Noah*, left in the deluge as a spark to rekindle a new race, xxxiv. 7.

*Nocturnal processions* at marriage, condemned, xii. 11.

"*Not I, but the Lord*," refers to an express word of Christ, xix. 4.

*Nurses*, their superstitious foolery, xii. 13, and note.

## O.

*O fool, that which thou sowest*, meaning of, xli. 1. and note.

*O God my God*, force of that expression in the Prophets, ii. 11.

*One God*, applied to the Father does not prevent the application of the expression to the Son, xx. 6.

*Obscurity* of Scriptures no reason for inattention, xxxvi. 9.  
*Economy* practised by S. Paul, ii. 5, 8; of the divine Persons, doctrine necessary to explain many parts of Holy Scripture, xxxix. 7.  
*Offence*, see Scandal.  
*Old leaven*, what, xv. 10.  
*Olympius* the Sophist, xx. 5, note.  
*Opposition to the truth*, sometimes an encouragement, xlivi. 5.  
*Orders*, distinction of in the ministry, typified in the old law, xxii. 1.

## P.

*Party spirit*, springs from the people, viii. 5.  
S. *Paul*, beaten at Corinth, Arg. 1; his modesty, i. 1; praises the Corinthians for what end, ii. 4; his use of the name of Christ, ib. 7; prudence in not committing his informants, iii. 3; prefers S. Peter to himself, 4; why he did not commonly baptize, 6; bolder on coming to quotations from Scripture, iv. 4; his later grace, a crown on his improvement of the former, v. 11; military cast of his character, vi. 1; not eloquent, ib. had a strong sense of fear, vi. 2; prepares skilfully for topics to come, ix. 4; puts cases in his own and S. Peter's name, x. 4; why he declines the judgment of men, xi. 2; his skillful mode of dealing with the Corinthians, xiii. 1; his tenderness towards them, ib. 3, 4; portraiture of the apostle in his imitation of Christ, 5, 6, 7; his policy in sending Timothy, xiv. 1; like a lion to the Corinthians, 2; tempered meekness with severity, 4, and note; cites the heathen as a reproach to Christians, xv. 1; his good sense, ib. 2; his energy, 3; exercising the power of the keys, 4; his reserve in declaring pardon to the fornicator, an imitation of Christ, ib. 9; his voluntary poverty, 13; how he possessed all, 14; method of speaking incidentally on other subjects, xvi. 4; xxviii. 1; xxxviii. 3; extraordinary and unexpected turns in his arguments, xvii. 1; mode of awakening sinners, xviii. 1; xx. 1; varies his discourse as the matter required, xix. 1; his rule on mixed marriages, 4; his doctrine of liberty and slavery, ib. 5; rules concerning

virginity, 7; care of avoiding scandal, xx. 11; xxi. 1; suffered poverty to avoid it, ib. 7; his modest assertion of his right to maintenance, ib. 2; the Apostle of the world, ib. his wisdom, xxi. 5; xxii. 1, 3, 5; his moderation, and condescension to all, ib. 5; why he circumcised others, ib. avoided display, ib. 3; his conversion, an argument against fatalism, ib. 6; mode of dealing with sins, xxiii. 4, 315; xxvi. 1; his fear for himself, a warning against presumption, ib. 2; his method of convincing, xxiv. 1, 2; xxvii. 3; his care for the common good, ib. 6; xxv. 3, 4; excelled all the old saints in charity, ib. 4; method of using common examples, xxx. 1; mode of praise and censure, xxvi. 2; appeals to high principles on ordinary topics, ib. his very presence a visitation, xxviii. 3; more to be admired for his charity than his miracles, xxxii. 14; paid rent for his house at Rome, xxxv. 9; how he overcame vainglory, xxxv. 11; his humility, xxxviii. 6; an example to us, 7; his delicacy in speaking of others, xliv. 3, 619.

*Peace*, given by the Bishop, xxxvi. 7.  
*Persecution*, not needed for our trial, xiii. 7; for Christ's sake, a token of God's favour, ib. 1.  
S. *Peter*, confounded with S. Paul, vi. 1; x. 5; was crucified, 6; the Coryphaeus, xxi. 3; why allowed to see Christ the first after the resurrection, xxviii. 5.  
S. *Philip's* daughters, prophetesses, xxvi. 4, 356; xxxii. 1; a fulfilment of Joel's prophecy, ib.  
*Philosophers*, let their hair and beard grow as a token of study, xxvi. 2, note.  
*Plato*, wrongly compared with S. Paul, iii. 8; persecuted by Dionysius, iv. 9, note; comparative uselessness of his speculations, ib. 6; unable to prevail against custom, vii. 15; his testimony respecting soothsayers, xxix. 2.  
*Plenary* effusion of the Spirit in Baptism, vii. 2, 79.  
*Pleasure*, of virtue and vice compared, xxii. 7, 8; of this world shortlived, xxx. 7; of beholding God in his works, xxiii. 7; of covetousness a poor one, ib. 8; of charity, xxxii. 12; of a right use of riches, xxxiv. 10; present pleasure of chastity more than uncleanness, xxxvii. 5; of gluttony only momentary, xxxix. 17. See *Luxury*, *Virtue*, *Vice*.

- Poor**, not to be despised, xx. 11; to be entertained, ib. 12; where placed in the Church to receive alms, xxx. 7, note; intercessors for the rich, ib. tokens of this world's frailty, ib. indignities offered to them, done against the Church, xxvii. 4, 375.
- Poverty**, brings with it a kind of asceticism, v. 11; when voluntary, rewarded in this life, xiii. 8; sought by S. Peter and S. Paul, xv. 13; true riches, ib. 14; excessive dread of, makes us poor, xxx. 8.
- Porphyry**, a witness to the Scriptures, vi. 6; his remarks on magical verses, xxix. 2, note.
- Portraiture of S. Paul** in his imitation of Christ, xiii. 5, 6, 7.
- Preaching**, compared with Baptism, iii. 6.
- Prepositions** implying agency, (*in*, *dia*, &c.) why used in speaking of God the Father, ii. 8.
- Prayer** in an unknown tongue inexpedient, xxxv. 6; *for the dead* why used, xli. 8; inconsistent with Purgatory, ib. note; in all the Ancient Liturgies, ib. offered up at the time of the Eucharist, ib.
- Pride, of knowledge**, its danger, xxiii. 5; of life, to be trodden under foot, xxiv. 8, 336.
- Profit**, our own how to be sought, xxv. 5; xxxiii. 3; *our neighbour's*, the canon of Christianity, xxv. 3; no high virtue without this, ib. 3; how men made by Providence to seek it, 5; xxxiii. 3; xxxiv. 7; examples of those who sought their own, but found it not, xxv. 4; and of those who sought others' and found their own, ib. excuses for selfishness answered, 5; even Martyrdom nothing without it, 4, 5.
- Prophecy**, fulfilled, a kind of miracle, vi. 6; double sense of, vii. 6, 83. See Gifts of Prophecy.
- Propagation** of the Gospel, a kind of sign, vi. 7; why now at a stand, 8; why attended with miracles, 4; why effected by the unlearned, v. 2; ib. 3; against the tyranny of ancient custom, vii. 14, 15; proof of the divine nature of the Gospel, iv. 8; ib. 10; v. 5; vii. 14—19; of the power of the cross, iv. 6. See Evidence.
- Punishments**, human, their analogy with the threats of Scripture, ix. 2, 3; Apostolical and miraculous, xiv. 4. See Eternal, Hell fire.
- Pythian Priestess**, her madness, xxix. 2.
- R.
- Rationalizing**, a source of early heresy, Arg. 2; foolishness of it in things human and divine, iv. 2; compared to a smith using the tongs with his hand, v. 2; exemplified in Adam, 3; excludes stability of doctrine, 4; compared to a pilot without a ship, vii. 1.
- Reading the Scriptures** in public a motive to reverence, xxxvi. 8, note.
- Reasoning** from analogy, proper for infidels, xli. 1.
- Rebecca**, her charity to Jacob, xxxviii. 2, note; her conduct why vindicated by the Fathers generally, ib.
- Repentance**, tokens of, viii. 8; produced by severe censure, xi. 4; never too late in this world, not to be obtained in the next, xxiii. 7. See Crimes.
- Regeneration**, in baptism, xxx. 2.
- Reserve** necessary in teaching, vii. 2; how consistent with full preaching, 3; S. Paul's practice of in declaring pardon to the incestuous person, xv. 9; necessary in speaking of the Sacraments, xl. 2.
- Reproof**, of a brother how to be practised, xliv. 5; example of, ib.
- Resurrection**, a work ascribed both to the Father and the Son, xvii. 2; its credibility proved by analogies from nature and art, 3; objections of rationalists not to be listened to, ib. an evil conscience the ground of men's unbelief of, ib. creation a type of, ib. its importance as a doctrine of Christianity, xxxviii. 1; two opposite errors concerning it, ib. design of Satan in attacking it, ib. course of S. Paul's argument for it, ib. 2, 3; Manichean notion of, confuted, ib. 3, 5; xxix. 4, and note; *reality of Christ's resurrection*, proved by his death, 3; and his burial, 4; and by eye-witnesses, 5; five-fold proof of it, 2; mutual relation between Christ's and our own, 2, 3; implied in the hope of salvation, 4; and in Christ's final triumph, 12; in our baptism, xl. 2, 3; and in the Apostle's sufferings, ib. 3; and in our death, xli. 2; how far the same body raised, ib. 3; heretical objection to the identity of the body refuted, ib. the doctrine does not hinder degrees of glory, ib. 4; how far the body changed, xlii. 3; our deliverance from sin and the law proves the doctrine, ib.
- Restitution**, required by the Heathen, xv. 11; if neglected, visited on pos-

- terity, ib. *Zaccheus* a notable example of, ib. certain in the last day, ib.
- Reverence*, more paid to men than God, xii. 7; xxxvi. 8. See *Church*.
- Reward*, not to be impatiently expected, xliii. 6; increased by our sufferings, ib.
- Rhetorical skill*, its worthlessness, xiv. 3.
- Riches*, abused make men poor, xiii. 8. not evil in themselves, ib. the evils which accompany them, befall men living and dead, xxxv. 12, 13; those that thirst after them like dreamers, xxxvi. 10; the unseemliness of this passion, xxxvii. 4; in what sense from God, in what not, xxix. 7; xxxiv. 9, 10; grow by distribution, xl. 5; manna a warning against hoarding them, ib. See *Covetousness*, *Wealth*.
- Rich men*, their contempt of the poor, xxvii. 1; their misery, xxix. 8; ignorant of the perishable nature of their riches, 9; need the poor as much as the poor need them, xxxiv. 8. See *Poor*.
- "*Rock that followed them*," xxxii. 3.
- Romans*, ix. 5. applied to Christ, xx. 6.
- Rulers* of this world, whom S. Paul calls such, vii. 1.
- S.
- Sabellianism*, S. Chrysostom's caution against it, v. 4.
- Saints*, how they will judge the world, xvi. 13; intercession of no avail for unholly persons, xlii. 5.
- Sanctification*, baptismal, i. 1.
- Sanctuaries*, of heaven, ἄνθεις, what, xxiv. 7, note.
- Sapphira*, xiv. 4.
- Sarah* a pattern for wives, xxvi. 7; her advice to Abraham to take Hagar then allowable, not so now, ib.
- Saul*, his reproached of Jonathan meekly borne, xxxiii. 2.
- "*Saved by fire*," what, ix. 5, 6.
- Scandal*, how given, xxi. 9, 10; sin of giving it, ib. St. Paul's care to avoid, ib. 1, 2.
- Schism*, its formal nature, iii. 1; may originate in mind or in judgment, ib. 2; Corinthians guilty of it, xxvii. 2.
- Schismatical teachers*, their rapacious and mercenary spirit, xxi. 6.
- Scylla*, a heathen image of sin, ix. 9.
- Seal* of the cross in Baptism, xii. 14, and note.
- Self-love*, if true, leads to the same conduct as charity, xxxiii. 3.
- Separation*, without mutual consent unlawful, xix. 3.
- Servants*, our care of their souls, xii. 12.
- Sexes*, their relation a bond of charity, xxiv. 6.
- Sign of the cross*, xxi. 2.
- Simon Magus*, an instance of vanity, xxxv. 8.
- Sin*, makes men in some respect worse than the devils, ix. 10; its effect in blinding the soul, xi. 6; *original*, destroyed in baptism, xxxix. 12; some punished in this world, some in the next, xxviii. 2; best checked in its beginning, xi. 8; danger of little sins, viii. 9.
- Slavery*, not degrading to a good man, xix. 5; what kind is degrading, ib. not possible for a good man to be a slave, ib. 6.
- Slander*, a common evil, xliv. 6; hurts the slanderer more than the slandered, ib. its three-fold evil, ib. 7; when we forgive it, a proof of our innocence, ib.
- Smatterers*, harder to learn than the simply ignorant, v. 2.
- Socrates*, whether his death was voluntary, iv. 7; compared with martyrs, ib. considered an innovator, vii. 15; and Xantippe, xxvi. 8, 367.
- Sodom*, a witness to future punishments, ix. 3.
- Soldiers*, irreligious, reproved by the case of Cornelius, v. 11.
- Sosthenes*, inferior to Apollos, i. 1.
- Solomon*, enjoyed peace and plenty, xxix. 7.
- The *Son*, how said to be subject to the Father, xxxix. 9, 10; his authority equal to the Father's, ib.
- Sorrow*, excessive, sinfulness of, xxxviii. 8. See *Mourning*.
- The *Spirit*, how He dwells within us, xviii. 3; of Christ, dwells within us, ib. illustrated by example of a king's son, ib. why sometimes not named, xx. 7; xxxix. 11; equal to the Father and the Son, xxix. 6; his personality, and divinity, ib. given to all baptized persons, xxx. 2; possesses all knowledge, xxxiv. 3; *spirit*, *soul*, and *body*, how distinguished, xli. 6, and note.
- Spiritual things* compared with spiritual, vii. 8; *spiritual man* judges others, yet is not judged of them, ib. 11; *spiritual body*, Spirit always present in, xli. 4.
- Statues*, of Theodosius overthrown at Antioch, xviii. 6, note.
- Stephanas*, his household, their praise, xliv. 3; with Fortunatus and Achaicus

- the persons who brought the account of the Corinthian Church to S. Paul, ib.
- Stewardship**, the thought of it, a lesson of humility and resignation, x. 5; ib. 6; and that nothing is exclusively our own, ib. 7.
- Suffering** for Christ a present reward, xl. 3.
- Subintroductio**, what, xliv. 5, note.
- Superstition**, men's tendency to, xii. 14.
- T.
- Temptations**, not to be endured without God's help, xxiv. 1.
- That**, *is* not always indicative of the cause, but simply of the event, xxvii. 3.
- Thanksgiving**, disclaims merit, ii. 1; always due, ib.
- Theodorus**, the atheist, iv. 9.
- Theodore**, (on 1 Cor. xv. 49.) xlvi. 2.
- Theudas**, a discouragement to the Apostles, v. 5.
- Theology**, a matter of testimony throughout, vi. 4.
- Theatrical entertainments**, their infamous character, xii. 10.
- S. Thomas** forced to go into Judæa, v. 7.
- Three children in the fire**, iv. 3.
- Timidity**, no reproach to any one, xxxiii. 8.
- S. Timothy**, S. Paul's commission to him, xiv. 1; a courageous and faithful character, xlvi. 1.
- Tradition** of the Church, excludes human inventions, vi. 4; supplies us with information not to be obtained from the letter of Scripture, vii. 6, and note.
- Treasury of the Church**, what, xlvi. 2, note.
- Trinity**, three Persons in, coequal, xxix. 4.
- U. V.
- Unbelief** caused by the bad lives of Christians, iii. 9; compared with insanity in its treatment of those who would remedy it, iv. 1.
- Uncleanness**, eminently a profane vice, ix. 7; its misery, xxxvii. 5; compared with chastity, ib.
- Unity** of the Church implied in its name, i. 1, 5, 6; xxx. 2; depending on communion with Christ, i. 2; viii. 7; *of the Spirit*, what, xxx. 2;
- of the members forbids envy, 3; reason for contentment, ib. 4; taught by the beauty of proportion, 6; applied to various classes in the Church, ib. *of the members of the body*, xxxi. 2, 3; an example to the greater to care for the less, ib. 4; summary of the argument derived from the body, xxxii. 4.
- Unleavened bread**, its typical meaning, xv. 7.
- Until**, spoken of God, does not signify that his kingdom shall come to an end, xxxix. 8.
- Unworthiness** of Ministers no bar to the grace of the Sacraments, viii. 2.
- "*Use it rather*," spoken of continuance in slavery, xix. 5.
- Utterance**, a special grace, ii. 3.
- Vain-glory**, on behalf of others, xii. 2; on account of gifts, compared to proud flesh, ib. reproved on the ground that all is of grace, ib. 3; and by an argument ad verecundiam, ib. 4; its manifold evils, xxxv. 8, 9; a remedy for it, ib. 10; examples of victory over it, ib.
- Vice and virtue**, the difference between them not subjective, xiv. 7; virtue in what sense easier than vice, xiv. 6, 7; xxii. 7; (see Pleasure;) vice, its misery, illustrated by an anecdote of a corn-dealer at Antioch, xxxix. 13.
- Virgins**, choir of, xxx. 7.
- Virginity**, commonly within men's power, ix. 3; a higher state than marriage in all, xix. 1; ib. 3; ib. 7; yet not compulsory on any, ib. 3; if once chosen solemnly, should not be given up, ib. 7; why a higher state, ib. Chrysostom's treatise on, referred to, ib. differs from continence, the last absolutely necessary to salvation, ib. 259.
- W.
- "*Weakness*," means persecution, vii. 2.
- Wealth**, its tendency in respect of Faith, v. 3; with what palliations the love of it may be abated, xi. 10. See *Riches*.
- "*Wheresoever the carcase is*," explained, xxiv. 7.
- Widows**, assemblies of, xxx. 7; *widow's mite* an encouragement to those who can do but a little good in the way of conversion, iii. 9.
- Will of God**, reason for contentment, xxx. 4.

*Wives*, led to immorality by bad customs, xii. 11 ; exhorted to obedience, xxvi. 6 ; by example of Sarah, ib. 7 ; not to be beaten, ib. not compelled by Heathen legislators to live with such husbands, ib. 8 ; bad wives how to be treated, ib. suitable wife to be chosen, ib. good wife better than house and lands, ib. conjugal peace a help in spiritual things, ib. an earnest of eternal peace, 368.

*Wisdom*, without goodness its utter degradation, ix. 8 ; how to be gained by becoming a fool, x. 2.

*Word* of wisdom and of knowledge, what, xxix. 5.

*Works*, good or bad, the Christian's building, ix. 4.

*Woman*, why subject to the man, xxvi. 3 ; before the fall not subject, ib.

why she ought to be covered, ib. women prophesied in S. Paul's time, ib. dishonoured by taking the man's honour, 4 ; those who wear short hair all one as if uncovered, ib. custom of wearing short hair abolished, ib. 5, 361 ; why they should not teach in public, xxxvii. 1.

*Wrong doers*, the real sufferers, xvi. 11 ; they who suffer wrong under God's discipline, ib.

"*With thy spirit*," a liturgical response, xxxvi. 7, and note.

## Z.

*Zaccheus* had an appointed time for repentance, xxxiv. 10. See *Restitution*.

# INDEX OF GREEK WORDS.

*ἀγαπητοί* μου om. xlii. 5.

*ἀγράμμαται* note, iii. 8.

*ἀειλφοί*. *ἀγαπητοί* rec. text, xxiv. 2.

*ἀετόσφιν* xxxix. 11.

\**Αἴδης* xxxviii. 4.

*αινήγμαται* (*τύ*) vii. 9. xxxiv. 2.

*αισθητὸν* (*πείλημον*) iv. 10.

*αιτιον* xxvi. 3.

*αιώνων* (*πρὸς τῶν*) vii. 4.

*ἀκούνται*, rec. text *ἀκούνται* vii. 2.

*ἀκριβολογούμενον* xxxiii. 2.

*ἄλλητος*, rec. text *ἄλλητος* viii. 4.

*ἄλλα μέρες* xxvii. 6.

*ἄνακρινται* vii. 11.

*ἄναλόγυμ* iv. 4.

*ἄναμοχλιουμένον* iv. 7.

*ἄναπτατηρύμιν* iv. 7.

*ἄναπολεπτίσθη* vi. 6.

*ἄνηγαγη* xx. 12.

*ἄνηθ* xiii. 6. xxiii. 7.

*ἄνθεψίσις*, rec. text *ἄνθεψίσις* x. 3, 4. xxiv. 1.

*ἄνοητος* Sept. ix. 10.

*τὰς ἄνοικας* *sens* not in rec. text, xvi. 8.

*ἄπαγόμενα* xxix. 2.

*ἄπανθίσσαν* vii. 18. xii. 1.

*ἄπαντερβαμένον πρὸς* xxix. 10.

*ἄπλαστος* xxix. 8.

*ἄπτεροσώντων* xliv. 5.

*ἄπτονάλυψη* ii. 6.

*ἄπτονιαληρμένης* v. 2.

*ἄπτοτηδόντων* ii. 8.

*ἄπτοφρήψη* xxix. 5.

*ἄπτοτηρφή σου* xix. 2.

*ἄπτοτηρούσι τὴν γῆν χρέοντος* xvii. 3.

*ἄραται* om. in rec. text, xviii. 3.

*ἄρεαχνίδης* *διαποτήτων* xl. 1.

*ἄργυρον* om. in rec. text, Arg. 1.

*ἄρχεδ* Sav. *ἄριστη* Bened. xxxiii. 1. = *ἄγιον*.  
*ητος* xxxix. 9.

*ἄρχομένος* x. 4.

*ἄστροῦ τὰ ἄνηθ* xxiii. 7.

*ἄστριδητον* xii. 5.

*ἄσφαλτζημα* xxxix. 10. xviii. 6.

*ἄτημα* xii. 10.

*ἄτονος* vii. 9.

*ἄνηγησιν* (*κατὰ*) iii. 4.

*ἄντοις* Sav. in margin. *ἄντη* Bened. xxix. 3.

*ἄφιεθησαν* Reg. *ἄνιστησαν* Bened. xxiv. 7.

*ἄφηνασμα* ii. 8.

*ἄψιδες* xxiv. 6, note.

## B.

*βαστίζεσθαι* viii. 8. xii. 11.

*βδελύγματα* xxvi. 5.

*βδελύσσομεν* i. 4.

*βιάζεσθαι* *χρόνη* vi. 6.

*βλαστία* xxiv. 7.

*βλίσσεις* note, v. 1.

## G.

*γαζοφυλακίον* note, xljii. 2.

*γίνεσται* *ἰαυτοῖς* *ἰατιτιχτίζεσθαι* iv. 11.

*γίνεται* ix. 8. Sav. xxv. 3.

*γυμηῆ ληπὸν τῇ κιφαλῇ βεβῆ* xxviii. 2.

*γυναικοτραφίς* xxxiii. 2.

## Δ.

*διδικαίωται* = *ἀπήλλακται* xi. 5.

*δινότητος* iii. 8.

*διόμιθα* fors. *διόμιθα* xii. 7.

*διαβατάζεσθαι* iv. 11.

*διακονίαν* iii. 6.

*διακόνους* *κάντειθεν δηλῶν* viii. 5.

*διαμαρτύρου* ix. 1.

*διανοία* xxv. 5.

*διάστηλαι* ix. 1.

*διαφορὰ* Sav. xxix. 5.

*διάφορον τοτὶ τὴν γῆν* xx. 5.

*διαχίον* iii. 2.

*δικαίως* xl. 4.

*διόνεται* xxix. 5.

*δοκιμάζονται*, *δοκιμᾶται* rec. text, xxix. 9.

*δέρση* (*τὸ δ. μᾶλλον εἰσι*) note, xviii. 5.

*δύνασται* (*αἷλλ οὐ καὶ*) xix. 5.

## E.

*ἴγνώσις* xxiv. 2.

*ἴδεται* xii. 11.

*ἴδουάτησι* xxiii. 5.

*ἴδον* *ὅτε* not in Sept. viii. 8.

*ἴδωλον* conj. Sav. for *ἴδωλον*, note,

xxv. 1.

*ἴδωλον* conj. Sav. xx. 1.

*ἴδε νίκος* i. e. *ἴδε τίλος* xljii. 4.

*ἴδε δ. λογί* *φ* xxx. 2.

*ἴδε σάρκα μίαν* xxiv. 5.

- ιστορικόναι x. 5.  
 ιδοεις xv. 3.  
 ιδίους γαρ αὐτές ιστι λατέρ xxxiii. 3.  
 ικαναίσθαις ποτέ vi. 2.  
 ικαλησία i. 1.  
 ικαπετίσθαις note vii. 2. ικαπετίσθαι  
     xi. 5.  
 ικαραγούσθαις xi. 5.  
 ιλλίχων vii. 11. xxxvi. 2.  
 ιλύσαμι xxx. 2.  
 ιμβάς note i. 5.  
 ιμφανῆς εἰς ἀνδρας x. 8.  
 ιν ἀπίστος καὶ πίστος xxxvi. 2.  
 ιν πολλῷ προσανθῇ note xli. 9.  
 ιν τρώσις xxxviii. 2.  
 ιν τῷ φυγῆι xxvii. 4.  
 ιν ψήν not in S. Chrys. x. I.  
 ιν φ̄ for δὲ οὐ ii. 3.  
 ιναυλή v. 5.  
 ινεργῶν xxix. 6. ib.  
 ινεύσθαι vii. 17.  
 ινεργωτικὴ ρήματα xii. 4.  
 ινεργοτή xiii. 3.  
 ιε ἡ μάλιστα τὰ στίγματα τῆς ἀναστά-  
     σιος ευρέθιμαι xliiv. 4.  
 ιεποκχύσαιas xvhii. 6.  
 ιεποκτίσιον xvii. 3.  
 ιεποκχύσαιas v. 4. xii. 10. xxxix. 17.  
 ιεποκχύσαιas ίπειδια διαστορίαis Arg. 2.  
 ιερὸν δρόστον xvii. 7.  
 ιερὸν ινεργών xix. 6.  
 ιεπατλῶν xxix. 4.  
 ιεπάνω xxxviii. 5.  
 ιεπιγάδεροιas xx. 3.  
 ιεπετίφιον xxix. 6.  
 ιεπετίδιμα vi. 4.  
 ιεπιτύχωμι Ms. Reg. ιεπιτύχωμι Edd.  
     xii. 5.  
 ιεπόπτεο xxxvi. 3.  
 ιερόν xxi. 4.  
 ιερόπτεο (δι') xxxiv. 2.  
 ιερέας conj. Sav. ιερέας Bened. xxxviii. 7.  
 ιειδίοις οφεδεῖς ιεπατλῆγες iii. 1.  
 ιειδίναιas xxxix. 17.  
 ιενόιαis rec. text. xix. 2.  
 ιεφημίαis τεύθην xxxviii. 6.  
 ιεχαριστία xxvii. 5.  
 ιεφέναι xxviii. 2.
- Z.
- ζάληση τὴν ταύτην xxvii. 7.  
 ζηλεῦσθαι xxxvii. 3.
- H.
- ή εὐερθίζεις om. xxxxv. 8.  
 ήδη xii. 14.  
 ήθικώτεροιas xxxiii. 1.  
 ήκου ήχη xxxviii. 3.
- Θ.
- ἡμίσας xi. 2.  
 ἡ τοῦ δίνεις for ἡ τοῦ δῖνες xi. 10.  
 θετημα xvi. 10.
- I.
- θαυμαστὸν xii. 9.  
 θιάζειν μίγα πάθηται xii. 7.  
 θύν (δὲ γάρ) ἀλλ' ιστι ἢ rec. text,) xxiiv. 5.
- L.
- ιαστέμαντις αὐτὸς Sept. viii. 8.  
 ιδιῶται vi. 4. iii. 8. note xxxv. 6.  
 ιησοῦς om. in rec. text, xiv. 1.  
 ιηρίους v. 8.  
 ιητα στυγάσῃ, ιητα τὴν ήμέραν viii. 8.  
     ιητα xxvii. 3.  
 ιηχόναιas Bened. xix. 4.  
 ιεπιμοτητης xxvi. 5.
- K.
- ιατθί ιαντὸν xxxvi. 5.  
 ιάνθις πάγη Χριστοῦ xiii. 5.  
 ιαὶ om. in rec. text, xiv. 1.  
 ιαὶ Πατερὸς om. in rec. text, xx. 7.  
 ιακὼν note, xxviii. 4.  
 ιεῦδη γὰρ παλίστισθαις ἀλλὰ κιτακαλίσ-  
     τησθαι xxvi. 4.  
 ιαμίνου (ἴτι τῆς) xviii. 5.  
 ιαρηταρίαis viii. 8.  
 ιαταγγίλλισθαι xxxvii. 2.  
 ιαταποίηραι, rec. text πίνεται xxxviii. 3.  
 ιαταπόψεις xiv. 8. ib.  
 ιαηρονομῆται xlii. 2.  
 ιαηρονομῆται xxxiii. 2.  
 Κίριον rec. text, viii. 5.  
 ιαμαδίας ἀτάσης vii. 16.
- Δ.
- ιαβᾶς Reg. βιαβᾶς Bened. iv. 10.  
 ιαλῶν xxxv. 7.  
 ιανοτλῆς xxv. 2.  
 ιαταυργία xlii. 4.  
 ιατογραφῶν vii. 1.  
 ιαντά inserted xv. 1.  
 ιάπτην conj. λάμπην xii. 12.
- M.
- μαργγανίαis note, xii. 10.  
 μαζῆς καὶ φιεάματος xlii. 2.  
 μασητῶν Bened. xxviii. 6.  
 μαρτύριον note, iv. 1.  
 μιθοδιαν xxxviii. 1.

*μιθύνται* Reg. MSS. xiv. 6.  
*μιρίζεται* τι πρός εε xx. 12. *μιρίζεσθαι*  
 πρός τὸν Θεόν οὐκ ἀλάτεσθαι; *μιρίζει*  
 xliii. 7.  
*μιρίζειν* δ. 5.  
*μιτάνειν* εἰς om. xxxiii. 5.  
*μιτάνεται* εἰς αφίσαι xxvii. 3.  
*μιτάνειν* xiii. 7.  
*μηδὲ δύνεται* Reg. MSS. μὴ δύνεται Bened.  
 iv. 6.  
*Μήλος* note, iv. 9.  
*μικροψύχιας* xix. 4. *μικροψύχεινται* xvi. 4.  
*μένειν* note, xxxi. 2.  
*μυσταγωγῶν* viii. 2. *μυσταγωγίας* xxvii. 5.  
*μυστήρια* (διὰ τῶν ἡμάτων, (διὰ τῶν ἔργων)  
 vii. 13.

## N.

*ναρκᾶται* ix. 1. vii. 16.  
 νῦν om. in rec. text, vi. 5.

## Ξ.

*ξένη καὶ ποιῆι* xiv. 9.

## O.

ἢ μετ' λαλῶν xxxv. 3.  
*οἰκίσται* for *οἰκίσται* xi. 10.  
*οἰκίσταις* xx. 5. xxix. 11.  
*οἰκίσταις* xxxiii. 8.  
*οἰκονομίας* vii. 18.  
*οἰκοδομῆν* conj. for *οἰκοδομῆν* note, xxv. 2.  
*οἰκονομικῆς* ii. 5. iii. 6.  
*οἰκονομία* xiv. 1. vii. 6. xii. 1. *ἀρίστη* xi.  
 2. xiv. 1.  
*δύναμαι τοῖς τοῖς φύσις* xiii. 4.  
*ὅραι* Reg. ὥραι Bened. iv. 9.  
*δέφανης* διατολας xiv. 6.  
*δέφανη* xiv. 6.  
 εὐ διλογεῖ Sav. conj. for εὐ διδλογεῖ  
 xxxiv. 2.  
*εὐδεῖς* Sept. εὐδεῖn xxxii. 13.  
*εὐδί* ἱματοῦ σύνδει xxxix. 5.  
 εὐ διετελεῖ ὑγοτὸν μόνον δύναι conj. note,  
 xxi. 7.  
*εὐσπάσιας* v. 4.  
*εὗται* MSS. Reg. εὗται rec. text, xiv. 2.

## Π.

*παγκράτιος* xxiii. 2. *παγκρατίστην* xxx. 8.  
*παθημέται* Sav. xxviii. 6.  
*πανηγυρίζεται* xxxv. 1.  
*πάτεται* Sav. πάτεται Bened. xii. 10. om.  
 xxiii. 3.  
*παραβύστη* (ιε) xxxix. 1.  
*παραδέσται* xxvi. 1. 2.

*παραπλασμόται* xxiv. 6. ib.  
*παραμβιδλημένος* ἢ πρὸς κινδύνους xliv. 1.  
*πινάσαι* conj. xiii. 7.  
*πιπίσαι* Rec. xix. 4.  
*πιχ* αὐτῆς τῶν πράγματος οἰκοτορίας vii. 6.  
*πιρίδισται* xxviii. 4.  
*πιρίστοτε* (ιε τοῦ πελλοῦ) v. 3.  
*πιρίσισται* φιλοσοφίας ii. 9. πελλὰ διληθίας  
 iv. 10. xxi. 1. μετὰ xlii. 5. πελλῆ  
 κέρχεται xxxix. 10.  
*πιλῆται* xliii. 2.  
*πιληρωτῆν* viii. 5.  
*ποῖαι* πράττους xl. 1. πιπίσαι θίλησις,  
 ιστίσιας rec. text, xv. 6.  
*πόλιμοι* αἰσθανται, iv. 10.  
*πολλῷ χίσαιν*. πελλῶν Bened. xiv. 5.  
*πολὺς* ἢ ἐχλεις xlii. 8.  
*πολὺν* μύρον xxii. 5. πλιάσαι xlii. 3.  
*πορνίας* rec. text, xxvi. 5.  
*πονεῖ τὸ πρᾶγμα πατάγεται* viii. 5.  
*πραγματίσται* xlii. 5.  
*πρὶς* ἢ διαβριγῆται xxxix. 8.  
*προσαπρεπέσται* xxii. 6.  
*προσίπται* xxxv. 8.  
*προπομπήν* ὡς τοῦτο μέται xvi. 6.  
*προσθεμάται* xxxiv. 10. πελλὴn xliii. 4.  
*προστίμια* viii. 2. note, xxvii. 7.  
*προστίπται* xvi. 10.  
*προστινοῦ* ii. 8.  
*προστινίται*. προστινίσθαι note, xxxiii. 1.  
*πρὸς ὑμᾶς* xlii. 1.  
*πρὸς τὴν στάρτην τὸν λίθον ἄγει* xxxv. 6.  
*προστίθεται* xxxix. 1.  
*προστηλῶθαι* v. 2.  
*προστητικὸν* εἶναι xxxii. 3.

## P.

*ρήματα πατατοτειμοῦ* xliv. 7.  
*ρῆσις* xl. 2.

## Σ.

*σιστεῖ* iv. 11.  
*σκάμπαται* note, ii. 10. μιζέσαι xli. 7.  
*σταταλῶν* xxxix. 17.  
*σταυρὸν* προσκυνεῖς xlii. 14.  
*στεφίνι* ἀνα και πάται viii. 1.  
 εὐ ἢ στέφεις xli. 1.  
*συγγενέμενος* xli. 8.  
*συγκατέβασις* iii. 5. xii. 1.  
*σύμβολα* xlii. 13.  
*συνέξεις* xxvii. 1.  
*συνδέμηται* (πατεῖ) vi. 5. xii. 4. xxi. 2. ib.  
*συνηρέτους* xiv. 1.  
*συνεπικαρπίαν* xl. 2.  
*συνίχων* xxxix. 13.  
*συνηγορεῖς* τὴν ἀρδ τῶν ἔργων xliii. 5.  
*σφραγίζειν* τὸ μίτωτον τῇ χωρὶ παιδεύεται  
 xii. 14. xxi. 2.

*εφεῦγις* note, xii. 14.

*εφεύγωντα* i. 5.

*εχίσματα* xxvii. 2.

*εώτης* xli. 9.

*ὑποτιμημένος* αὐτὸς τοῦτο xxxvi. 3.

*ὑποτιμάζοντας* xlii. 5.

Φ.

T.

τὰ τελεύμια viii. 2.

τὰς τῆς καινοτορίας ἀπαντά τῆς; ταρὰ φύσιν  
note, xxvi. 5.

τεταπικομίνη i. 3.

τεταρχισμὸν xxviii. 5.

τησσάμενας xliv. 5.

τὴν αὐτὴν φθόραν xli. 3.

τῆς ιαυτῶν. τὰς ιαυτῶν note, xii. 11.

τῆς εἰφάληη iv. 7.

τῆς ψυχῆς ἡ βωή. τούτου χωρὶς note, xli. 5.

τιθῇ for τιθῇ viii. 7.

τιμῆ (ταὶ) om. xv. 1. xix. 2.

τιμονικῶν xxxix. 13.

τὸν λόγον ὑπηγιλσάμενον ὅμιλον xxxviii. 1.

τὸν ἵκεντα ἵκεν xxvi. 5.

τὸν Θεόν om. xxii. 6.

τοῦ σώματος πεπάτα μίσος περιθουμίου iv. 7.

τοῦ Χριστοῦ om. xxv. 3.

τοῦτο αὐτὸν Sav. τούτῳ αὐτῷ Bened. v. 4.

τοῦτο conj. for τὸ xii. 2.

τοῦ Θεοῦ om. xxii. 6.

τοῦ σώματος πεπάτα μίσος περιθουμίου iv. 7.

τοῦ Χριστοῦ om. xxv. 3.

τοῦτο αὐτὸν Sav. τούτῳ αὐτῷ Bened. v. 4.

τοῦτο rec. text, xxiii. 5.

τρίφονται καὶ τριψόνται xxx. 7.

τροφῆς οὐ τρυφῆς xxxix. 16.

τύποι ημῶν xxiii. 4. rec. text, xxiii. 5.

τυπικῶς ib.

φθίση ix. 4.

φιλοσοφία ii. 11. iv. 11. vi. 6. 7. θέση v. 8.

φιλότεφες xi. 9. v. 1. φιλόθεος xviii. 6.

φιλοσοφοῦντα xi. 2. φιλοσοφοῦσι iv. 6. vii.

19. τοσαῦτα xlii. 14.

φιλοτιμία ἴκινα viii. 3. xxvii. 2.

φοεῖσμαν. φοεῖσμαν note, xlii. 2.

φορτικὸν x. 8. Sav. for φορτικόν.

φορτός τοῦ διαβόλου πόλεως) xlii. 11.

φοτερία xxx. 7.

φύτεια xli. 5.

φύλακες note, iv. 9.

X.

χαιρέτες xv. 6.

χαλᾶς τὸν τόνον, ἀδρός λίγων xxvii. 4.

χαλεπάτερος note, xxi. 9.

χάριν xlii. 4.

χαυποῦντα xxxiv. 2.

χαυρονία xxvi. 8.

χειρῶν iv. 4.

χερηγίαν vii. 2.

χερητούσιον xiv. 4.

χολινά Arg. 2.

Ψ.

ψηφισάμενος xxxi. 2.

ψεφοδίης xxv. 2.

ψωμίσια xxxii. 8.

ψύλες xlii. 5.

ὑπακογιάσποντας xxxvi. 9.

ὑπὲρ αὐτῶν xxxviii. 3.

ὑποδημάτος for ὑποδημάτων iii. 8.

ὑποπάτητος ὑπωτάξια rec. text, xlii. 7.

ὑπορήζεις viii. 5.

ὑπόστασις x. 6. τὰς συναλείφων xxix. 4.

Ω.

ώς ἵν τῷ σώματι ἴκεν ίνι xxxi. 3.

FINIS.







RETURN TO the circulation desk of any  
University of California Library  
or to the

NORTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY  
Bldg. 400, Richmond Field Station  
University of California  
Richmond, CA 94804-4698

ALL BOOKS MAY BE RECALLED AFTER 7 DAYS  
2-month loans may be renewed by calling  
(510) 642-6753  
1-year loans may be recharged by bringing books  
to NRLF  
Renewals and recharges may be made 4 days  
prior to due date

DUE AS STAMPED BELOW

MAR 08 1995

20,000 (4/94)

528928

BR 60  
L5  
Y.5

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

